

# HOW ALL RELIGIONS ARE FALSE AND HARMFUL



A SCIENTIFIC EXPLANATION  
OF 7 MAJOR RELIGIONS

(JUDAISM, CHRISTIANITY, ISLAM, HINDUISM,  
BUDDHISM, JAINISM AND SIKHISM)

EBA

**HOW ALL RELIGIONS ARE FALSE AND HARMFUL**

**A scientific explanation of 7 major religions**

**[Judaism, Christianity, Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, Jainism & Sikhism]**

**By**

**EBA**

**Copyright © 2016 Eba**

**All Rights Reserved**

**(However, limited number of passages may be quoted anywhere without permission)**

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### Introduction

#### 1. What is a religion?

#### 2. Judaism

##### An Introduction

##### 2A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Judaism

##### 2B – Political & Economic Implications of Judaism

##### 2C – Falsehood of Judaism

##### 2D – Contradictions in Judaism

##### 2E – Harmful effects of Judaism

##### 2F – Summary of Judaism

### 3. Christianity

##### An Introduction

##### 3A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity

##### 3B - Political & Economic Implications of Christianity

##### 3C – Falsehood of Christianity

##### 3D – Contradictions in Christianity

##### 3E – Harmful effects of Christianity

## 3F – Summary of Christianity

### 4. Islam An Introduction

-  **4A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Islam**
-  **4B - Political & Economic Implications of Islam**
-  **4C – Falsehood of Islam**
-  **4D – Contradictions in Islam**
-  **4E – Harmful effects of Islam**
-  **4F – Summary of Islam**

## 5. Hinduism

### An Introduction

**5A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism**

**5B - Political & Economic Implications of Hinduism**

**5C – Falsehood of Hinduism**

**5D – Contradictions in Hinduism**

**5E – Harmful effects of Hinduism**

**5F – Summary of Hinduism**

## 6. Buddhism

### An Introduction

## 6A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Buddhism

## 6B - Political & Economic Implications of Buddhism

## 6C – Falsehood of Buddhism

## 6D – Harmful effects of Buddhism

## 6E – Summary of Buddhism

### 7. Jainism

#### An Introduction

## 7A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Jainism

## 7B - Political & Economic Implications of Jainism

## 7C – Falsehood of Jainism

## 7D – Harmful effects of Jainism

## 7E – Summary of Jainism

### 8. Sikhism

#### An Introduction

## 8A – Scientific explanation of the origin of Sikhism

## 8B -- Political & Economic Implications of Sikhism

## 8C – Falsehood of Sikhism

## 8D – Harmful effects of Sikhism

## 8E – Summary of Sikhism

9. Have religions done no good?

10. Differences among religions are fundamental

11. Is peaceful co-existence of religions possible?

12. How to get rid of religions

13. An alternative to religions

14. Conclusion

Feedback

## Introduction

Religions have influenced our life most profoundly.

Consider the following facts:

- Why is it that out of 452 suicide terror attacks across the world in 2015, 450 of them were committed by Muslims? Why is it that out of 59 terrorist groups banned by State Department of the US between 1997 and 2015, 45 are Islamic? Why is it that there have been more than 27800 deadly Islamic terrorist attacks worldwide since 9/11 and still counting?
- Why is it that most Buddhists and Jains are non-violent and introvert?
- Why is it that a Christian society is likely to be more compassionate for the poor and it has maximum charity organizations?
- Why is it that countless Indians have abandoned the comfort of home and gone to forest/Ashrams to attain enlightenment even at the cost of living an austere and inconvenient life?
- Why is it that a follower of a religion is more likely to condemn wealth and sexual pleasure than say, a materialist?
- Why is it that India has maximum percentage of vegetarians and it has the lowest meat consumption per capita in the entire world?

These are some examples which show how powerful religions are in deciding the conduct of their followers.

At present, out of the total world population of about 7 billion, there are over 2 billion Christians, 1.6 billion Muslims, 1 billion Hindus, 480 million Buddhists, 24 million Sikhs, 14 million Jews and 4 million Jains in the world. There are several other minor religions spread across the world.

Why is it that religions are still such a dominant force in shaping the behavior of people and policies of countries? Why have they dominated the mind space for thousands of years?

To understand this, we have to understand what exactly religions are; how they originated and developed; what their core beliefs are and how their prescribed codes of conduct logically follow from their core beliefs.

In brief, we have to understand them as a whole.

Taking out a few statements from religions and analyzing them in abstraction is useless. Nothing less than a holistic, historical and scientific study of each religion separately would do.

But mere understanding of the content and origin of religious world-views is not enough. We must also evaluate the truth or falsehood of their world-views in the light of the latest scientific facts. We must also assess how beneficial or harmful these religions have been for their followers and others.

This book is an attempt to do this work.

This book deals with 7 major religions – Judaism, Christianity, Islam, Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism and Sikhism.

It describes their world-views and traces their origin and development in a scientific way.

Then, it examines their core beliefs in the light of scientific facts and exposes their falsehood.

This book further examines how harmful all these religions have been for their followers as well as for the whole world.

In fact, almost all the problems of the world, especially terrorism, overpopulation, poverty, sexual crime and unfair treatment of women can be traced back to religions. Yes, to the core of religions, not their so-called misinterpretations, distortions or aberrations, as apologists try to prove. This book explains how all these problems are logically linked to the fundamental beliefs of these religions.

Religions are not only false and harmful, they are also mutually incompatible. They cannot co-exist peacefully. Islam is especially violent and it would inevitably clash with others.

So, what is the solution?

The solution is very simple: **Get rid of all religions!**

This book tells how this can be done.

This book also explains in the end how religions can be replaced with an alternative world-view based on science and humanism.

The method that I have followed to write this book is this: I read all basic texts of all religions; researched to understand the historical and personal background which shaped the thoughts of the propounders of these religions; checked the truthfulness of the core beliefs of these religions in the light of the latest scientific findings; and finally analyzed how their false beliefs have proved to be harmful for the society.

It took 5 years (2011-2015) of reading, researching, thinking and writing to complete this book of about 550 pages.

At present, there is not even one book in the market which attempts to understand all the major religions – Abrahamic as well as Indian – analyzing how they originated, how they are false and how they have created misery in the world.

Ignorance lets evil thrive and wreak havoc on the society. In absence of any challenge, followers of

each religion continue to believe that their religion contains the final and eternal truth; and that they have the ultimate solution to all the problems of human life.

This book is written for laypersons as well as for intellectuals. I have not used any jargon or high sounding technical words in this book. To understand it, no prior knowledge of religions is necessary.

Each of the 7 major religions has been discussed in a separate chapter with its sub-chapters dealing with the scientific explanation of the core beliefs of each religion, its political & economic implications, its falsehood, its contradictions and its harmful effect.

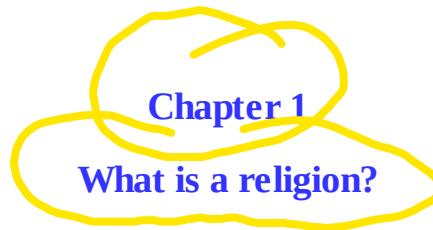
I have quoted only from the most fundamental texts of each religion. No secondary sources have been used. The scientific and historical facts used in this book are easily available online. Just google the relevant topic and you will get it.

I have deliberately not prefixed “the” before the names of the so-called holy books of Bible, Quran, Gita, Ramayana etc. These are simple man-made books giving a common sense world-view of their times, that too mixed with mythologies. They are certainly not the “direct revelations of God” or “absolute truths experienced during the state of enlightenment” as their Abrahamic/Indian followers claim. Hence, they do not deserve our special reverence by prefixing of word “the” before their names.

Hyperlinks have been provided wherever words are bolded and underlined including all topics of the Table of Content. All quotes are in *italics*.

Every chapter on a religion has the following sequence: introduction (founder, basic texts, core beliefs etc), scientific explanation of the origin of that religion, its falsehood, contradictions (if any) and harmful effects. A summary of all this description has also been made at the end of each chapter on each religion. This may however be skipped by readers who have already read the full chapter.

So, let us start the venture!



## Chapter 1

### What is a religion?

Before exploring the nature of religion, let me first clarify some basic concepts which I will be using throughout this book:

#### Sense experience

Our 5 senses provide raw sense data.

Sense data in itself does not constitute knowledge – it only provides the raw material which is converted into knowledge through the process of inference.

For example, I hear the sound of my door bell and then infer that somebody has come to meet me. Here, the sense of hearing (ears) provided raw data of a particular type of sound while I am at home. My past experience stored in my memory is that when the door bell is pressed, it makes a sound inside home; and that only when someone wants to meet me, he would press the bell. Hence, I infer by hearing the sound of the bell that somebody has come to meet me.

#### Internal experience

Internal experience is the direct awareness of an internal state of our consciousness.

For example, my knowledge that I am thirsty is direct awareness of an internal state. There is no sense data or inference involved in this knowledge. Knowledge of all internal states of consciousness is direct.

#### Inference

Inference is a belief about objects of the world by using sense data or internal experiences. It may also be made by drawing logical conclusions on the basis of previously formed beliefs.

Sense experience (such as color or size) and internal experience (such as feeling of hunger or pain) – these are the only 2 primary sources of raw data.

The process of inference uses these raw data to arrive at a judgement about external objects or internal states.

All statements made by religions, philosophies and sciences are derived only from these 2 primary sources of data and inference.

The inferred belief may be true or false.

For example, when I opened the door on hearing the bell, I found nobody there. However, I saw that

a child was running away in the corridor. So, now I know that he must have pressed the bell for fun. So, my inferred belief that someone had come to meet me was false.

Inference is the basis of all our knowledge including scientific knowledge. This is also called reasoning.

### Belief

A belief is a statement that something is the case without being 100% sure whether it is true or false, but with a high probability of its being true. For example, when my friend says: "I believe Empire Estate is in New York", what he wants to say is that he is not fully sure whether the Empire Estate is in New York, but he thinks it is most likely there.

So, a belief may be true or false.

Faith is an older word for belief. In modern languages, the word 'belief' is used much more than the word 'faith'. But the meaning of both is the same. For example, both the statements "I believe in God" and "I have faith in God" have the same meaning.

### Truth and Falsehood

We call a belief true, if the reality corresponds with what is declared to be the case.

We call a belief false, if the reality does not correspond with what is declared to be the case.

### Fact and Knowledge

When a belief is verified to be true, it is called a fact. Knowledge is a collection of facts.

### Hypothesis

A statement which seeks to explain a set of events, but has not yet been verified to be true, is called a hypothesis.

### Theory

A hypothesis becomes a theory only after it has been verified to be true in a large number of cases of observation and experiment or it has not been falsified yet.

'Law' is an older form of expression of 'theory' – recall Newton's law of gravitation vs. Einstein's theory of relativity.

'Principle' too is an older expression of 'theory', as for example, Archimedes' Principle.

### Doctrine

Doctrine is a belief about a natural event or some desirable action developed by special groups such as religions, political entities, governments, private organizations etc. It is believed to be true/good and has the full authority of the institutions that have developed it.

As for example, creationist doctrine; doctrine of karma; Monroe doctrine.

However, scientifically, a doctrine may be false. So, it is not equal to 'theory'. Tenet is another name for doctrine.

### Explanation or Understanding

To explain an event or a set of events is to show how it is an example of the application of a well-established theory or doctrine.

Explanation could be for a limited set of events or for all events of the universe.

Understanding is the same as explanation.

### Explanation of religions

Religions are complex mixtures of fundamental beliefs about the universe, mythologies, history, emotional expression of hope and fear, doctrines to make sense of local historical and economic events, spiritual experiences, wild speculation about unverifiable events, account of miracles, description of desirable moral and social code of conduct and outright lies.

To explain a religion is to find out its most fundamental beliefs in terms of which all else of that religion could be proved to logically follow.

### World-view

A world-view is an explanation of all events of the world by applying minimum number of theories or doctrines.

A theory is applicable only to a specific segment of the universe – it cannot explain events happening in other segments. Einstein theory of general relativity, for example, does not explain the origin of the universe, behavior of sub-atomic particles, evolution of species or emergence of human self-consciousness.

But we need to have a theory or a set of logically connected theories which can explain the origin and nature of all things of the world. We need to have a big picture of the universe. This is what is called a world-view.

Primitive/ancient people attempted to explain all the events of the world in terms of their doctrines which they believed to be true (which have now been proved to be false by science). This explanation was their world-view, which we now call religions.

### **So, how did religions originate?**

Now that these basic concepts have been clarified, let me explain the concept of a religion and its origin & development.

## **Development of religions -- Journey from being a hunter-gatherer to explanation-seeker**

According to anthropological and genetic research, modern humans evolved in the forest of eastern Africa about 200,000 years ago. In the course of their struggle for life, they kept on making new tools. They lived in groups and developed the skill to co-operate with the members of their group in order to fight against their rivals or dangerous wild animals.

Close social interaction necessitated emergence of languages. Then symbolic representation of natural objects in the form of art started emerging. Artefacts recovered in South Africa prove that symbolic thinking may have started as early as 164,000 years ago.

Modern humans started migrating from Africa to all over the world in search of better living conditions about 60,000 years ago, though some groups stayed back and dispersed in different parts of Africa itself. Cave art evolved in Europe 40,000 years ago. This was a more matured example of representational thinking whereby brain could conceive, copy and make pictures representing outside world.

Over a period of time, humans must have started thinking in terms of cause and effect. They must have started wondering -- what causes their success or failure in killing the prey; what causes their success or failure vis-à-vis their rivals; what causes lightning, thunder, storm, rain, flood, fruits, night, day, birth, death, old age, illness etc? These questions were not just itching curiosity while they were relaxing in the comfort of the cave by the side of fire. These were questions, on the answer of which depended their survival and well-being.

In search of an answer to such questions, they must have started observing the concerned events more closely. For example, they must have started noticing that when they attack a prey in a group with coordinated effort from all directions, their success rate was higher.

Take another example. They must have observed that day comes when the Sun rises and night comes when the Sun sets. So, they must have understood a cause and effect relationship between rise of the Sun and day / setting of the Sun and night. Since day brought security from dangerous animals, possibility of hunting the prey and gathering of fruits, Sun was considered very useful. So, they thought that Sun must have a spirit wanting to help them. So, Sun became worthy of their prayer and worship.

But there were some questions which could not have been answered merely by closer observation. For example, lightning and thunder.

They must have observed clouds, lightning and thunder several times, but could not have figured out how the two are interrelated. So, they must have stumbled upon an analogy. For example, they might have noticed that when a father or a tribal group leader gets angry at some child/member of the group for some misconduct, he starts shouting. So, they would have concluded that lightning and thunder are expressions of anger shown by some invisible spirit or god for some misconduct on their part.

This type of animist explanation of natural events is found worldwide among all primitive people. According to animism, every living and non-living objects as well as natural phenomena have spirits, which makes it act the way it is acting. Some spirits are good and some harmful for humans.

Animism was the first crude attempt of humans to understand the cause of events. Their explanation was simple: something happens because some spirit wants it. Since everything was believed to have a separate spirit, this sort of explanation had limited unifying principle. So, animism could not explain more events with less number of basic beliefs.

So, the next higher level of explanation came with belief in a single God who created everything and operated the world on the basis of a limited number of basic principles. This offered a better explanation of events than animism. With one unifying principle, it was easier to seek explanation and organize life around it.

This was the basic template of Abrahamic organized religions. On this template, they developed different formats as they developed in different parts of the world under different conditions.

The same template was also used by early Vedic Hinduism in India.

However, during the later Vedic period, some people claimed that they underwent some profound, blissful inner experiences which revealed them the real nature of self and the universe. So, henceforth, all Indian religions attempted to explain the nature of this exotic inner experience and its relationship with the world. This led to the development of Indian religions.

### **So, what is a religion?**

A religion is a world-view explaining the origin and nature of the world with a guide to attain what is believed to be the supreme well-being in this world and after death, and the guide consists of following a specific code of conduct, worship of a spiritual entity or/and meditation.

The supreme well-being in the present life may consist of prosperity, offspring, cure of diseases, success against enemies, longevity, attainment of liberation / Nirvana / Moksha and so on. The supreme well-being after death may consist of immortality of soul, proximity with God, super-comfortable and super-luxurious living in heaven or oneness with the ultimate reality.

The spiritual entity may be God, soul or spirit inhabiting objects. The way to connect the spiritual entity may be prayer, worship or meditation.

A world-view consists of a minimum number of logically connected beliefs aimed at understanding maximum events of the universe in terms of its most fundamental content. It gives the big picture of the universe.

The basic purpose behind developing such a world-view is to understand the world better so as to manipulate its rules of operation in order to fulfil the needs of survival and well-being for self and the

society.

A religious world-view too is based on sense experience, internal experience and inference. However, since at the time of development of religions, only their 5 senses were available for observation of events, they had access to very limited sense data. Hence, their explanations too were superficial. Unlike modern day science, religions did not have microscope, telescope or atom smashing machines. So, naturally, they could not have developed the kind of theories modern sciences have developed.

Of course, today, all religions look primitive and outdated in the light of our scientific knowledge. We may treat them as primitive science or primitive philosophy. But when they were developed, they were rage of their times. This is why most people in the past were highly religious. The knowledge of science is not very widely prevalent even today. Hence, religions are still very influential.

## Culture, Science and Philosophy -- how they are different from Religion

### Culture

Culture is the sum total of the intangibles of a society – its beliefs, values, knowledge, skills and so forth. Culture has always been there with *Homo sapiens*, as some knowledge and skills were always required for survival. Even animals have their own culture.

### Difference between religion and culture

Culture has been there in all human societies. Pre-religious culture was instinctive and focused only on survival issues, while religion is a conscious process focused not only on survival but also overall well-being. The tool of a religion is to understand the universe in terms of some spiritual entity.

So, a religion is a special type of culture centered on some spiritual entity. Religions came much later than culture. Once religions appeared in a culture, they could reject an already prevalent belief, endorse it or modify it. So, a religion had to take a stand on all pre-existing beliefs held by the culture it superceded.

A culture could also be superceded by a system of non-religious beliefs and values.

So, culture is a much wider term than religion. However, once a religion starts growing on the ground of a culture, it (religion) redefines all the beliefs of the culture in terms of its own fundamental doctrines. However, it may not succeed in doing so. Some elements of the culture may defy the religion and continue to remain on the outskirts of the religion.

For example, meat eating has been a trait of human culture since long, even before religions appeared. When religions came into existence, they endorsed, modified or rejected it. Abrahamic religions endorsed meat eating with their own small variations, while most of the Indian religions

rejected it. In either case, religions became the dominant social force giving a new meaning to pre-religious cultural beliefs.

## Science

Science is a set of logically connected theories to explain a particular segment of the universe.

Since the same scientist cannot study all segments of the universe which is too big, different branches of science focus on different segments of the universe – energy, basic forces, sub-atomic particles, elements, compounds, galaxies, stars, Earth, plants, animals, humans, society, consciousness, etc.

### Difference between religion and science

Science too attempts to understand the basic rules of nature within its field of study with minimum number of principles. But science is different from a religion in that science is a set of theories which work only within a limited area of nature and which have not yet been falsified by any known fact (though in future it may be falsified in principle).

Science does not give the big picture of the universe explaining everything. For example, there is no branch of science which is attempting to develop a unified theory of everything including the origin of the universe, origin of Big Bang, nature of all forces of the universe, dark matter, dark energy, matter, anti-matter, galaxies, stars, planets, origin & evolution of life, human history, mind, consciousness, creativity, love, and enlightenment.

A religion is a set of beliefs which attempt to explain everything in terms of some fundamental content(s) of the universe. Its aim is to understand the world as a whole so that we find out how we should live.

There are a number of myths prevalent today about the relationship between religion and science. Let me explode the main ones:

**Myth 1: religion and science are complementary; religion deals with matters of faith or spiritual realm, while science deals with matters of reason or physical realm. So, there is no conflict between the two.**

Faith is nothing but an unverified belief. An unverified belief may be true or false. Till I am not sure whether my belief is true or false, that belief is useless for me. I cannot use it for my well-being. So, the very nature of a belief is such that as soon as I come to know that it is unverified, I simply discard it like a trash.

For example, suppose I ask my doctor friend: Is chocolate good for health? He says: I believe it is. But I am not sure.

Now, this sort of advice is completely useless for me, as I am still not sure whether chocolate is good for health or not. The statement is still unverified to my knowledge. So, I cannot decide the issue one

way or the other.

But a religious statement is not like this. For example: ask a Muslim whether Allah chose Muhammad as His final messenger. He would immediately shout: “Of course! There is no doubt about it.” So, for him, it is not a matter of faith, but a 100% certainty that Muhammad was the real messenger of Allah.

So, it is false to say that religious statements are just matter of faith and they belong to the realm of unverified. For religious persons, they are not a matter of faith, but “facts beyond any doubt”. It is however another thing that he would not be able to give any proof of his beliefs to non-Muslims.

Secondly, the subject matter of science and religion is the same. The only difference is in their methodology. This is why religions too have given statements about the same universe, which are dealt with by sciences. For example, consider the following statements of Bible, Quran and Gita:

Rains come from above when God opens the gates of heaven.

The Earth is flat and covered by the dome of the heavens.

Man was just suddenly created by God someday. Man has not evolved from animals.

All living beings have been created in pairs by God.

You can get anything done if you just sincerely pray to God.

Universe is created and destroyed cyclically by God (Bhagwan).

Devil tempts humans to commit sin.

The above religious statements were primitive man’s explanation of various events of the universe. Science too gives its own explanation of these events.

So, the subject matter of both religions and science is the same – to understand the events of the universe. One does not deal with some “spiritual” realm and the other with “physical” realm. These are false distinctions. Both try to explain the same universe. The difference is that religions did it with speculative and unverified doctrines, while sciences do it with verified-to-be-true doctrines.

Hence, religions and science would always be in conflict. In fact, religions are continuously losing ground in this conflict, as all their beliefs have been proved to be false by science. Religions have now become so desperate for their survival that they are trying to prove that all their beliefs are in harmony with science! So, while science does not care whether its theories are endorsed by religions, religions are bending backward to prove that their beliefs are endorsed by science. This proves the uselessness of religious beliefs. Science has triumphed over religions because its theories are verified to be true and they work. This is why technology can be built on scientific theories, but not on religious doctrines.

**Myth 2: Religions deal with the purpose and values of life, while science deals with how the external world behaves. So, there is no conflict between the two.**

All statements on purpose and values of life are essentially factual statements on human behavior. Take the following religious statements:

 The purpose of life should be to attain liberation. 

 The purpose of life is to live in such a way that after death, one goes to heaven. 

 Stealing is bad. 

The first statement, declared by Indian religions, essentially means the following factual statements:

Liberation is a state of consciousness; it is very blissful; humans naturally seek bliss; hence if humans attain the state of liberation, they would be happy.

All these are factual statements and therefore they may be verified to be true or false. This is possible because by doing certain inner experiments (meditation etc), one can easily verify whether attainment of such a state is possible and whether that state is blissful. Psychologists can scientifically study this field and develop a science of 'altered states of consciousness' or what they call Parapsychology.

The second statement too is a factual statement in disguise. It essentially means: Heaven is a state of individual spiritual existence in which all human desires are instantly fulfilled under the loving care of God.

This kind of statement cannot be verified to be true or false, as nobody can experience this (after death) and can come back to Earth to report it. So, there could be no facts on the basis of which such factual statements could be made. So, why are such statements made?

This type of statements are actually emotive statements appearing in the guise of factual statements. They are just descriptions of one's wish: I wish I were in a state in which all my desires were instantly fulfilled so I could be happy all the time! The propounders of heaven and hell therefore are essentially describing their own wish-list and hoping (without any justified grounds) that God would fulfil it. This again is an explainable human behavior studied by psychology.

The third statement – stealing is bad – too is a factual statement about social rules. It essentially means: we humans have formed a society in which we have made the rule that stealing would be punishable so that everyone has the incentive to work, earn, own and consume his property rather than taking away someone else's property by deceit.

So, this sort of 'value statements' are not different types of statements, but merely factual statements about social rules studied by sociology.

The above discussion proves that statements of our values do not belong to some exotic, unverifiable, supernatural realm deserving a special type of methodology adopted by religions. Rather, these statements belong to normal life and can very well be studied by sciences studying human behavior such as psychology, sociology or biology.

To sum up, science and religions deal with the same subject matter. Science tries to understand different aspects of the universe in a piecemeal way, while religions also do the same things in addition to attempting to develop the big picture of the universe as well. Religions are nothing but very primitive, speculative and crude science of data/facts gathering. This is why as sciences have developed, religions have faded away. This is why no new religions are now coming up and all existing religions are on their way out.

### Philosophy

When we use all available scientific facts to construct a world-view – to have the big picture of the universe – it is philosophy. It is philosophy which attempts to unify all theories and facts to arrive at the most general view of the universe – the big picture. Wherever there is a gap of scientific knowledge in a particular area of study, philosophy tries to fill the gap with most probable hypothesis which could most suitably fit in logically with the remaining verified body of knowledge.

### Difference between religion and philosophy

Like a religion, philosophy too is an attempt to understand the world as a whole. So, religion is only a particular type of philosophy in which supernatural elements such as God or soul or spirit constitute the fundamental content (s) of the universe and worshipping/meditating on this entity coupled with a specified code of conduct is believed to bring supreme happiness in this life and after death.

Philosophy may be religious, materialistic or agnostic. So, philosophy is a more general term and religion is a special type of philosophy.

The same data may be used to construct a religious world-view or non-religious world-view, if there are sufficient gaps in knowledge. Both world-views would then be different types of philosophy.

### **How were religious doctrines developed?**

Several methods of knowledge were adopted by propounders of religions to develop their doctrines about God, world and self:

1. **Natural common sense method (sense data/inner experiences + inference)**
2. **Interpretation of dreams**
3. **Interpretation of thoughts**
4. **Analogy**

## 5. **Mystical experiences**

Let me discuss them one by one.

### **1. Natural common sense method (sense data/inner experiences & inference) -**

This is the most commonly followed method by humans to acquire knowledge. It has been used by religions as well as science. The method consists in co-relating two types of sense data/inner experiences with each other and then inferring one type on the basis of the observation of another type of sense data/inner experience.

For example, all religions believed that Sun orbits Earth. This was based on common sense observation of rising and setting of Sun every day.

The only difference between science and religions in using this method is that nowadays science uses much more advanced technology for observation such as telescopes, microscopes, atom smashing machines, computer modelling, mathematical equations etc. At the time of development of religions, humans did not have such tools. So, their knowledge of the world remained very limited.

### **2. Interpretation of dreams –**

Dreams have played a much more vital role in shaping religions than we think.

Primitive men could not understand dreams. Whatever they saw in dreams was interpreted as special messages sent by God, spirits or dead ancestors.

We now know that during a dream, the part of the brain which handles our emotions, gets more active than the part of the brain handling cognitive functions such as thinking. So, our unfulfilled desires and the associated emotions become prominent in our dreams.

Let me give an example how a dream could be wrongly interpreted as “the message of God”:

Place: A small settlement of thatched huts in a forest in West Asia

Time: 3000 years ago

Scene: The tribal head describing his experiences in the first person

Event 1 – Yesterday, I saw some strange people moving around our place in a suspicious manner. I am scared that my family and tribe are in danger of being attacked by enemies who want to plunder our wealth.

Event 2 – I wish some supernatural entity – God -- would protect us. I prayed to God for hours. I now go to sleep.

Event 3 – I just woke up in the morning. In the night, I saw a dream in which God was protecting us from enemies. He had killed some of them and the rest fled. This means God really wants to help us; this

is why He killed the enemies in my dream. I am very happy now. I thank God profusely.

Event 4 – I go out and tell every one of my family and tribe that God has decided to help all of us from enemies. Everyone is overjoyed. Everyone starts believing that the message of God has been communicated in my dream.

Event 5 – As I was suspecting, the enemy attacked today. We defended ourselves and fought back with full confidence that God was helping us. We succeeded in killing some of the enemy. The rest of them fled.

Event 6 – Our belief in God as a compassionate super father of our tribe has got established. Today, we pray and thank Him again. All the members of my tribe now strongly believe that God exists; that God is compassionate; that God helps if we have faith in Him and pray for help.

Event 7 – God has now become very dear to us. So, henceforth we will not allow any person to doubt His existence or criticize Him, lest He may become angry at us. We decide that in future, anyone of our tribe worshipping any other God or doubting His existence must be killed.

So, what is happening here?

The tribal head first desired that God should protect his tribe. His desire was so intense that his mind produced a dream in which God was helping him. So, he interpreted this dream to conclude that God really exists and helps those who sincerely pray to Him. Here, the desire to have super natural help finally became the belief that the super natural entity does help. This was done through the dream.

Today, we know that such wish fulfilment in a dream does not necessarily mean that this would happen in the real world too. But, in primitive times, people were so much hassled with daily survival issues that they loved to seize and nourish any ray of hope from anywhere. Thus, they ended up harboring a number of beliefs which were emotionally satisfying, but were false.

The claims of Jesus and Muhammad that they were messengers of God might have arisen from their experience of dreams in which they might have had somewhat similar dream experiences in which God was appointing them as their messengers through some angels.

When Muhammad claimed that he undertook an overnight journey from Makkah to Jerusalem on a winged horse and had visited Allah and past prophets in heaven, he might have developed the idea on the basis of some dream.

### 3. Interpretation of thoughts --

We have even today not understood how our brain functions and how thoughts, emotions and consciousness arise.

Propounders of religions, too, did not understand the source from which thoughts arose. They also

could not figure out why a particular thought came at a particular point of time. So, some of them came to the conclusion that it was God who must be sending all thoughts.

So, when a thought started creeping in the mind of a person that “he may have been chosen by God as His messenger”, he thought that this idea itself must have been sent by God in his mind. So, he concluded that God exists; all the thoughts of human minds are sent by God; God knows all thoughts of all persons and God has chosen him as His messenger!

This was emotionally very satisfying, but obviously it was false. If whatever we thought were true, every human would be super rich, super powerful and super happy!

The claims of Jesus and Muhammad that they were messengers of God might have arisen from this source as well.

#### **4. Analogy --**

Analogy is an inference about the property of an entity on the basis of its similarity of another entity.

For example, we have observed a number of living beings dying. On the basis of this experience, we conclude that we too would die. Here, even though we have not yet experienced our own death, we still know this to be a certainty on the basis of our experience of numerous living beings dying. This knowledge is by analogy. We observe similarity between other living beings and us (both types are born, grow, consume food, mate etc) and therefore we conclude that if others have died, we too would die.

Science uses analogy extensively. For example, scientists have observed several stars in different stages of dying. So, using analogy, they conclude that the present stars will also die someday.

Religions too have used this method. For example:

The propounders of religions observed that every house, cloth, furniture etc has been made by living beings like humans; so, they concluded that this universe too must have been made by a living being called God.

They observed that every human organization has a leader or a group of leaders; so they concluded that the universe too has a leader/ruler called God.

They observed that a father punishes his disobeying children; so they concluded that God too must be punishing disobedient persons by sending poverty, disease, and premature death to them in this life and to hell after death.

And so forth.

#### **5. Mystical experience –**

Mystical experience is an inner experience, beyond sense perception, of an elevated state of consciousness where one reportedly experiences one's self/ultimate reality directly without getting

distracted by thoughts and the state is said to be extremely blissful.

This experience is the basis of all the 4 Indian religions and is denied by all the three Abrahamic religions.

Mystical experience is stated to be so profound that the sole aim of all Indian religious thinkers is to understand it, relate it to the world and prescribe methods to achieve it. It is the foundation of all Indian religious world-views. The state of mystical experience has been called by different names such as liberation, Nirvana, Moksha, enlightenment, self-realization, oneness with God, Seeing Bhagwan and so forth.

### **Propagation of religious world-views by stories and poems**

On the basis of the above-mentioned 5 methods of knowledge, religious world-views were developed. These world-views were propagated to the masses by stories and poems – the only ways of mass communication in ancient times.

Stories and poems were easy to remember; hence they were passed on from generation to generation.

This is why Bible, Quran, Vedas, Smritis, Ramayana, Mahabharata, Puranas, Shree Guru Granth Sahib etc were written/compiled in the form of either stories or poems.

A group of stories containing some moral message or explaining some natural or social phenomena and having God, some super beings or heroes as characters is called mythology. Miracles reportedly performed by God, prophets, angels and “holy” men constitute the bulk of these mythologies.

### **Why religions are misleading and how to reach their core beliefs**

Primary texts of all religions are extremely confusing, because they have mixed up valid sources of knowledge with invalid sources. They have also mixed up facts and mythologies in a seamless narrative. So, it is extremely difficult to understand what the core beliefs of religions are and where they are separate from stories.

We must decode these mythologies and reach the core beliefs of each religion.

Then, the core beliefs could be examined scientifically in order to find out which of them are true and which false.

Once this is done, the harmful effects of the false beliefs could be worked out.

### **Are all religions false?**

Yes, absolutely.

I call all religions false because **all of their core beliefs have been proved to be false by science.**

Moreover, **there are hundreds of self- contradictions in all the primary religious texts books.** This internal

contradiction is yet another proof that they are false.

## **Are all religions harmful?**

Yes, absolutely.

Our world-view determines our goals and values. If the world-view is false, our goals and values too would be wrong. So, people following a religion are pursuing goals and values that would not match with the way the universe really operates.

Their goals would therefore not be desirable in the first place.

Secondly, it cannot be achieved, because it is totally out of sync with the reality. So, people would be wasting their whole life pursuing something which simply does not exist or is impossible to achieve or which even if achieved, may not give any joy of fulfilment. So, nothing could be more harmful than adoption of a false world-view.

When two or more false world-views come into contact, followers of the respective groups are bound to clash with each other. Thus a false world-view results in conflicts, violence and suffering.

Even if a false world-view comes in contact with a true world-view, clash will still happen because of their conflicting beliefs.

All these conflicts would prove harmful for the society because without peace, it is impossible to attain prosperity and growth.

Millions of people and hundreds of countries are victims of such false religious world-views. They are suffering and also creating misery for others.

On account of these religions, the whole world is in a mess. Almost all misery of the present-day world – terrorism, wars, conflicts, poverty, overpopulation, exploitation of women and children -- can be traced back to some religion. I will demonstrate this in the following chapters.

## **If religions are primitive, false and harmful, why are most people still following them?**

Since religions were the first serious attempt of humans (from 5000 years to 500 years ago) to understand the universe, they made a serious impact on human psyche. Just as the first impressions of a child lasts very long, in the same way, religions being the first human venture to understand the universe, influenced us the most.

Science developed its understanding of the universe only during the last 300 years. Most of the people of the world are still not aware of the latest scientific theories.

For example, even in the US, which is one of the most developed countries in science education, the total number of science graduates in 2011, accumulated since 1975, was about 10 million, which was just 3% of the total US population of about 311 million in 2011. Imagine the condition of science education in

less developed countries!

It is this lack of science education which is the culprit behind the grip of religions on people. As science education spreads, religions become less relevant in decision-making process at individual or national level.

According to some researches, out of about 7 billion world population, more than 80% people worldwide believe in some religion, while about 20% do not believe in any religion. Break-up of world population in terms of religion/non-religion is as follows:

Christianity – 31%; Islam – 23%; **non-religious – 20%**; Hinduism – 15%; Buddhism – 7%; Animists – 6%; Judaism + Jainism + Sikhism and some other small organized religions – 1%.

The number of people not believing in any religion thus constitutes the third largest group and is increasing faster than those of any other religious group.

As science education, prosperity and awareness of the falsehood of religions spread across the world, more and more people would be discarding their religions and start developing world-views based on humanism and scientific theories.

The following chapters will expose the primitive, scientifically false, self-contradictory and harmful nature of religions one by one.

## Chapter 2

### Judaism

#### An Introduction

##### **What is Judaism?**

Judaism is the religion propounded in a collection of 24 books, known as Tanakh or Hebrew Bible [called Old Testament by Christians with some changes in classifications etc].

Tanakh (or TaNaKh), a Hebrew word, is an acronym of 3 words – Torah (Teachings), Nevi’im (Prophets) and Ketuvim (Writings).

Torah consists of 5 books – Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. These 5 books are also known as Pentateuch. They are the foundation of Judaism and provide its basic tenets. It was believed in the past that these 5 books were composed by Moses, the founder Prophet of Judaism. However, now, with years of research, it has been established that Moses was not the author of these books. We will discuss this in some detail in a moment.

Nevi’im consists of 8 books believed to have been composed by next Prophets. These books are: Joshua, Judges, Samuel, Kings, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and the Twelve Minor Prophets (Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi).

Ketuvim consists of miscellaneous collection of 11 books dealing with rituals, history, end of the world, secular love etc. These books are: Psalms, Proverbs, Job, Song of Solomon, Ruth, Lamentations, Ecclesiastes, Esther, Daniel, Ezra-Nehemiah and Chronicles.

These 24 books describe historical-cum-mythological history of Jews and their world-view. They call God ‘Yahweh’, ‘Jehovah’ or ‘G-d’.

Talmud is another source book of Judaism. It gives detailed interpretations of Tanakh and fills up the gaps left in Tanakh on topics such as food, dress, sex, marriage, rituals, holidays etc.

So, Hebrew Bible is not one book, but a compilation of 24 books. This number differs from the Christian classification because Jews combine two or more books under one book in some cases.

According to Christian classification, Bible consists of 39 books of Old Testament, and 27 books of New Testament, thus making it a total of 66 books.

##### **Who wrote Bible?**

Bible, being such a huge collection of books, was written by a number of people over the course of

about 800 years. Some men wrote more than one book.

The people who wrote Bible were Israelites who lived in the ancient land of Canaan, which is roughly the area between the eastern shore of Mediterranean Sea and Jordan River. It included at that time geographical territories of modern Israel, West Bank, Gaza Strip and Lebanon. The geographical area of Canaan had however other ethnic groups also besides Israelites, such as Amorites, Philistines, Hivites, Jebusites etc.

Canaan was initially one kingdom according to early Biblical history; but later divided into two kingdoms – northern part known as kingdom of Israel and southern part known as kingdom of Judah.

Torah, which is the foundation of Judaism, was believed to have been written by Moses in 14<sup>th</sup> century BCE. After years of research, now it has been established that there were actually four sources of writing of Torah, identified as J, E, P and D sources. These 4 sources of authorship have been discovered scientifically by identifying variations in writing styles, themes, differences in language choice especially in reference to God, tones in writing, contradictory and repetitious segments, reference to Moses in third person and description of his death.

This hypothesis is called “*Documentary Hypothesis*”.

J source document refers God by “JHWH” as the unpronounceable name of God, though it is often translated as Jehovah. This source is found not only in Pentateuch, but also in other books of Hebrew Bible. The God of J is very anthropomorphic and frequently interacts with humans. He is very earthy and practical. His theme is centered on Judah. This is a major source of Bible and is believed to have been written in 10<sup>th</sup> century BCE.

E source document refers God by the name “Elohim”, who is impersonal and communicates with humans through messengers and dreams. There is a lot of emphasis on prophets. Its style is more of abstract nature. It focuses on events centered on the kingdom of Israel, rather than that of Judah. It is however quite fragmentary. This source is believed to have been written in 9<sup>th</sup> century BCE.

P source document refers to Priests. Its content is reflected in the Biblical Books of Numbers and Leviticus. It is mainly concerned with religious institutions, sacrifices, rituals, Sabbath, dietary restrictions, purity, impurity, holiness, covenants and genealogy. Its God is more remote and abstract than that of even J source.

D source document comes from its content only in Deuteronomy. Its theme is obedience to God's law.

There is also an editor or redactor who is called R. He combined all these sources into one continuous theme, deleting some portions of the original content and adding some of his own. The combination of J and E sources is believed to have taken place in 8<sup>th</sup> century BCE.

## **When was Bible written?**

After a series of defeats of Israelites by Assyrian Empire between 9<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> century BCE and by Babylonian Empire during 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE, a number of Jews were exiled and relocated within Assyrian-Babylonian empire during 8<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE. This is the time when most of the Books of Bible were conceived and composed. This is proved by the fact that Bible reflects striking similarities with the creation and flood myths of Assyrian-Babylonian culture.

When Babylon fell to Persian Empire in 539 BCE, Jews were permitted to return to their place under Ezra's leadership. This spawned further Biblical writings in 5<sup>th</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> century BCE and even up to 2<sup>nd</sup> century BCE such as Book of Ezra, Book of Nehemiah and Chronicles etc.

Scholars believe that the returning Israelites adopted an Aramaic script (also known as the Ashuri alphabet) which they brought back from Babylon; this is the current Hebrew script. Even the Hebrew Calendar closely resembles the Babylonian Calendar and probably dates from this period.

So, Hebrew Bible was most probably written over a period of 600 years by numerous authors between 8<sup>th</sup> century and 2<sup>nd</sup> century BCE with the most creative period being that of the Babylonian exile.

## **Judaic world-view from the point of view of Jews**

Hebrew Bible describes origin of the universe, shape of Earth, light of Sun and Moon, animals, plants, diseases, destiny of the universe, place of humans in the universe, history of Jews and their kings, cause of their defeat by Assyrians and Babylonians, ways to rebuild Israel after these humiliating defeats, coming back to Israel after exile in Babylon, rules of conduct, etc.

Jews, the followers of Judaism, believe that God directly chose some of their ancestors namely, Abraham, Moses, Isaac, Jacob and many others – to reveal His wisdom and message for all humans. These ancestors were called prophets. They believe that every line of Bible is literally true, as it is a real historical account of God's interaction with prophets.

According to Judaism, God created the world in 6 days in the following sequence – heavens, Earth, light, sky, fruit-bearing plants, Sun, Moon, stars, water animals, birds, land animals and humans. Man was created on the last day in God's image.

The first human couple, Adam and Eve, were living happily in heaven. God asked them to eat and enjoy whatever they wanted except that they should not eat fruits from one special tree – the tree of knowledge of good and evil. However, Adam and Eve got tempted by devil and they ate the fruit forbidden by God. This angered God and He expelled them from heaven and also made them subject to sin, disease, old age and death.

Even after casting off humans to Earth, God kept monitoring their conduct. Once He found that almost all humans had become very wicked. So, He arranged to kill all humans by a worldwide flood,

except Noah and some of his family members.

God, however, later found some Israelites worthy of receiving His messages for humanity on how to live life. He first selected Moses to communicate His core teachings, which have been written in Torah. Later, God chose some other Israelites to communicate His messages for humanity. These people were called prophets. Joshua, David and Solomon are some of the most important prophets.

God taught through these prophets that if humans worshipped only Him and no other God, and followed His commandments such as non-stealing, non-killing etc, they would get success against enemies, prosperity, multiplication of offspring, longevity, health, etc in this life and immortality, union with ancestors and heaven after death. God also assured them that He will send a Messiah to them sometime in future who would make their religion as the most powerful religion of the world and make Israel as the only super power of the world.

Here is a brief summary of each of the Books of Bible:

## **1. Genesis**

Genesis begins with the creation of the world by God – heavens, stars, Earth, plants, animals and the first human pair – Adam and Eve. Everything was fine, but when Adam and Eve disobeyed God's order not to eat fruits of a particular tree, God became angry and expelled them from heaven and sent them to Earth with a curse that henceforth they will have to toil hard for survival.

Later, when God saw that almost all creatures had become wicked, he decided to kill all of them by a global flood except Noah, his family members and one pair of each animal. After the flood was over, humans again started multiplying.

The rest of Genesis describes important events in the lives of 3 forefathers – Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Jacob was named Israel.

God chose Abraham because of his goodness and made a covenant with him that He would make his offspring the most sacred, most powerful and most prosperous people of the world and would grant them a homeland in Israel. God prescribed circumcision of all male children on Abrahamic line as a symbol of the covenant between Abraham and God. Isaac was the son of Abraham and Jacob the son of Isaac. The 12 sons of Jacob became 12 tribes of Israel. One of the sons was Joseph, whom Israel loved most. So, Joseph's brothers envied him and sold him off as a slave to someone who brought him to Egypt. But Joseph eventually became the second most powerful man of Egypt, next to the Pharaoh.

## **2. Exodus**

Exodus tells the subsequent events that followed in and out of Egypt.

According to the story, a new wicked Pharaoh of Egypt, scared of the increasing power of Israelites, enslaved them. God chose and empowered Moses to show miracles, impress the Pharaoh and

get Israelites freed from slavery of Pharaoh. God then guided His people out of Egypt and brought them to Sinai. At Mount Sinai, God appeared before Moses and gave him rules of conduct for all Israelites to live by.

### **3. Leviticus**

This book consists of detailed legal code given by God to Moses for making the nation of Israel.

### **4. Numbers**

According to this Book, God found that the faith of Israelites in His commandments was not very strong; so as a punishment, he made them wander in the desert of Sinai for 40 years till all the old adults except Joshua and Moses died. This forced wandering was God's way to prepare Israelites to be faithful enough to enter the holy land of Canaan.

### **5. Deuteronomy**

This Book is the repetition of the previous law given by God as the first generation had passed away and the new generation had to be made aware of the covenant. Moses now appointed Joshua to become the next leader of Israelites and passed away.

### **6. Joshua**

This Book chronicles 20 years of military campaigns of Joshua, under the guidance of God. As promised by God, Israelites defeated the local tribes and became owners of the Promised Land of Canaan under the guidance of God. The Land was distributed among them.

### **7. Judges**

This Book is an account of 480 years of the life of Israelites. After the death of Joshua, they forgot God and started worshipping false gods such as Baal and Ashtoreth. That made God very angry and He caused them to suffer lawlessness and defeat. Then Israelites repented and prayed to God who then forgave them and provided them good leaders called Judges who would lead them to righteous living. But after sometime, Israelites would again forget the real God and go back to idolatry triggering the same cycle again and again several times.

### **8. Samuel**

This book says that Samuel was a prophet and the last Judge, because now Israelites wanted to be led by kings, not judges. So, Samuel appointed Saul as the first king. Saul gained initial successes in war, as for example, he defeated Ammonites. But soon he started disobeying God's commands and lost divine favor.

Meanwhile, Samuel anointed a humble shepherd's son David as the next king. David became famous for killing Goliath of Philistines, who was challenging Israelites in the battle. The Book describes the ascendency of David as the king who united Israel and Judah to make it one kingdom and made Jerusalem

its capital.

## **9. Kings**

This Book begins with David's death. He was succeeded by his son Solomon, who was renowned for his great wisdom and building a magnificent Temple of God in Jerusalem. However, he had weakness for women. He had hundreds of foreign wives and concubines who did not believe in Yahweh and worshipped idols. So, under the influence of his foreign wives, Solomon too turned away from God, which made Him angry. So, God decided to divide Israel after his death -- Israel in the north and Judah in the south.

Meanwhile, another Prophet Elijah tried to teach people about the perils of worshipping pagan god Baal, but people would not listen. So, God became very angry and allowed Kingdom of Israel to be defeated by Assyrians in 722 BCE and Kingdom of Judah to be defeated by Babylonians in 586 BCE. The temple of Jerusalem was also destroyed by Babylonians. A large number of Israelites were made captive and exiled to Assyrian and Babylonian empires. God allowed all this so that Israelites could realize their misdeeds and repent.

## **10-13. Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and the Twelve Minor Prophets**

All these Books have been named after the Prophets who are their main characters. In all these Books, Prophets are shown as criticizing the people of Israel for violating the covenant and moral standards God expected from them. These Prophets are also depicted as predicting the impending doom of the country due to the misdeeds of Israelites.

## **14. Psalms**

This is a collection of 150 poems most of which are attributed to King David. These poems express emotion pertaining to spirituality – gratitude to God, despair, yearning for guidance from God and so on.

## **15. Proverbs**

This Book is attributed to King Solomon and it deals with various philosophical and moral issues.

## **16. Job**

This is also a philosophical book dealing with the question why good people suffer.

## **17. Song of Solomon (also known as Song of Songs)**

This Book too is attributed to King Solomon. It is a love poem depicting the beauty and sacredness of love between a man and a woman or between husband and wife.

## **18. Ruth**

This Book is the story of a Moabite girl who marries an Israelite in Moab. After death of her husband there, she insists on coming back to Israel because of her love for Israel. She marries again an

Israelite and gives birth of a son who was the grandfather of the famed Israelite king David.

## **19. Lamentations**

This Book is attributed to the Prophet Jeremiah. It is a harrowing poetic description of the destruction of Jerusalem by Babylonians in 586 BCE. The basic cause of this destruction is depicted as sin and idolatry on part of Israelites which angered God.

## **20. Ecclesiastes**

This Book is philosophical. It discusses human nature and its fragile predicament in this world. It concludes that worldly things cannot fulfil human life. Ultimately, it is God who gives meaning and fulfilment to life.

## **21. Esther**

This Book is the story of a Jewish orphan who rose to become the queen of Persian Empire and saved Israel from anti-Israeli conspiracy being hatched in the court of her husband-king.

## **22. Daniel**

This Book is attributed to Prophet Daniel who recounts his experience while serving in the court of Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar and his son Belshazzar. Daniel along with others had been deported to Babylon after the defeat of kingdom of Judah. Daniel, due to blessings of God, is able to save himself from the fury of these kings and make them accept the sovereignty of God.

## **23. Ezra-Nehemiah**

This Book describes the return of some exiles including Prophets Ezra and Nehemiah from Babylon to Israel after the Persian Empire allowed them to do so in 537 BCE. These Prophets try to build the temple in Jerusalem again in order to restore Israeli faith in the sovereignty of God and thus uplift their self-confidence.

## **24. Chronicles**

This Book gives list of Israeli kings and their genealogy. It recounts the history described in Samuel and Kings aiming at educating the new Israelites coming from exile about their royal heritage and how to worship God.

### **History of Israelites as narrated in Bible**

The history of Israelites as narrated by Bible is mainly mythological and has little to do with actual history.

Let me briefly summarize the history of Israelites as worked out by Biblical scholars:

In the beginning, God created heavens, Earth, plants, animals and a human couple - Adam and Eve.

Then came Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Jacob's son Joseph went to Egypt and rose to prominent position. Jews multiplied in Egypt.

After the period of slavery, Israelites managed to escape from Egypt in c 1445 BCE under the leadership of Moses. This is Exodus.

The Promised Land was conquered under the leadership of Joshua in c 1400 BCE.

1380-1050 BCE is the period of the Judges. This was the time when there was no central leadership. Israel was a loose confederation of tribes who were largely autonomous. In times of crisis, they used to consult some 'wise person', who was called a Judge. It was believed that he was being guided by God.

However, soon people started wanting central leadership in the form of kings, the way other nations had kings.

The first king was Saul (c. 1050-1010 BCE) who was followed by David (c. 1010 – 970 BCE). David is considered the best king in the entire history of Israel. He is believed to have defeated all the neighboring chieftains and made one unified kingdom for Israelites.

His son Solomon (c. 970-931 BCE) was the last king with unified kingdom. **It was he who got the first temple of Jerusalem made in c. 960 BCE.**

After Solomon, northern tribes revolted and the kingdom was divided into two – the northern kingdom known as Kingdom of Israel and southern kingdom known as Kingdom of Judah.

In the Kingdom of Israel, the first king was Jeroboam (c. 931-910 BCE) followed by several kings down the line.

In the Kingdom of Judah, the first king was Rehoboam (c. 931-914 BCE) followed by several kings down the line.

In 722 BCE, Kingdom of Israel was destroyed by Assyrians. A large number of Israelites were made captive and exiled to Assyrian empire.

In 605 BCE, the Babylonians defeated Kingdom of Judah.

**In 586 BCE, Jerusalem temple was destroyed by Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar II. A large number of Israelites were made captive and exiled to Babylonian empire.**

In 539 BCE, Babylon was defeated by Persian king Cyrus who gave freedom to Israelites to return home.

In 538 BCE, the people of Judah began returning from exile in Babylon.

**In 515 BCE, the temple of Jerusalem was rebuilt 2<sup>nd</sup> time.**

In 458 BCE, another group of exiles led by Ezra returned.

In 445 BCE, the last group of exiles returned under the leadership of Nehemiah. They rebuilt the wall of Jerusalem.

**[In 70 CE, the second temple was destroyed by the Roman Empire.]**

## **History of Jews**

Archaeological and historical records present story of Israelites, which is completely different from the Biblical account.

Jews never enjoyed self-rule (except for very brief periods) from beginning till 1948. They were ruled by several super empires in succession in the following order: Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian, Persian, Greek, Roman, Byzantine, Islamic, Christian crusaders, Ottoman and lastly the British. Since 1948, Israel has been an independent country ruled by Jews democratically.

Judaism has been interpreted and followed in different degrees throughout its history. Today, there are 3 main groups of Judaism – Orthodox, Conservative and Progressive (also known as Reform or Liberal). They are defined by the strictness with which they interpret and follow Torah and Talmud, with Orthodox Jews as one end of the spectrum with very strict observance and Progressive Jews on the other end, while Conservative Jews falling in between.

In 2014, Israel had the population of about 8 million, out of which 75% are Jews, 17% Muslims, 2% Christians and the rest other minority groups. The next highest population of Jews is in the USA with about 5 million followed by European Union with 1 million Jews. About 65% of Israeli Jews do not consider themselves as religious, according to a Gallup survey conducted in 2015.

## **Importance of Judaism**

Though there are only about 15 million Jews in the world today (less than 1% of world population), Judaism is one of the most important religions of the world. It was the first organized attempt of mankind in the west Asia to develop a world-view. So, it had a profound impact on the ways humans think about the world.

Judaism is also the source from which two other major religions – Christianity and Islam – evolved. Without understanding Judaism, we cannot understand Christianity and Islam. All these three religions are logically inter-connected.

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Judaism

I intend to give a scientific explanation of the origin of Judaism through the following successive arguments/episodes:

Why doctrine of divine origin of Judaism is unacceptable

But, if God is not responsible for the origin of Judaism, what is?

A brief history of Israelites

Interaction of exiled Israelites with Assyrian-Babylonian-Sumerian culture

Understanding the reason for composition of Bible

Imagined relationship of God with the world

Spreading the message by myths

Format of the myths

Some examples of the application of this Biblical explanation

Summing up the explanation of the origin of Judaism

Is Judaism still taken seriously?

Let me discuss each point one by one.

Why doctrine of divine origin of Judaism is unacceptable

Devout Jews still believe that their Bible is nothing but the true description of interaction between God and some of their ancestors such as Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, David and others, who were chosen by God for communicating His message for the good of humanity. In other words, Judaism is based on true words of God. Hence, there is not a single error or falsehood in their Bible, as it correctly describes the words and deeds of God Himself, the very creator of the universe.

But there is a problem in this doctrine.

If Bible is the true description of words and deeds of God, why are there so many falsehoods and contradictions in Bible, as science and archaeology have proved? I will discuss them in the sub-chapter 2C. There are hundreds of passages in Bible where God is saying something which is utterly false. How

can this be?

Judaism has no answer to this. Hence, its doctrine of the divine origin cannot be accepted.

### **But, if God is not responsible for the origin of Judaism, what is?**

To answer this question, we must look to the material and political conditions around the time Israelites started composing Bible. We must also study the influence of other neighboring religions on Judaism.

But to understand the times of Bible composers, we will have to understand the history of Israel itself.

Archaeological discoveries made during the last 100 years in and around Israel and other non-Biblical historical records would help us in understanding the history of Israel.

### **A brief history of Israelites**

Human habitation in the land of Canaan has been found right from Stone Age.

Farming was invented in Canaan about 10,000 years ago in Neolithic era. Farming enabled larger communities living together and gave rise to cities, such as Jericho, which is located near the Jordan River in West Bank, and is one of the oldest inhabited settlements in the world. With the rise of cities, trade flourished. Gradually, animal herding and ceramic pottery started.

Tribal chieftainship was the main political structure in copper-stone age.

Canaan was the economic link between two big civilizations – Mesopotamian and Egyptian. It supplied cedar tree wood, olive oil, wine and copper to neighboring empires.

Northern Canaan was the hub of cultural activities as migrants from Mesopotamia arrived there. It was mostly influenced by Mesopotamian culture.

Southern Canaan was relatively less populated and was mostly influenced by Egyptian culture.

### Canaanite Religion

Ancient Canaanites were polytheists. They believed in a hierarchy of gods. Their highest god was El. He was an elderly benevolent god. El was believed to have created the world in different ways under different myths. He created it by word of mouth (as in Genesis 1) or by molding clay (as in Genesis 2.7) or by sexual union with his consort goddess Asherah (also known as Athirat and Ashirta).

Baal was one of the sons of El. He had inherited all the authority of El. Baal was the god of rains, storm and fertility. Since Canaan lacked the rich supply of river water for irrigation (unlike Mesopotamia and Egypt), Baal became a very important god, as his rains were critical for farming.

According to a myth, Baal had been once defeated and killed by Mot, the god of death. However, Baal's sister and wife Anat, who was goddess of war, killed Mot upon which Baal resurrected. This is

perhaps the allegory for the agricultural season in which initially there may be drought (death of Baal) but rains eventually come in time and save crops (rain god Baal resurrects).

Astarte was the goddess of sexuality, fertility and war. She also was a female consort of Baal.

There were several other gods – Yerach - the Moon god, Shamash – the Sun god, Shahar – the god of dawn, Shalem – the god of dusk and so on.

Among the gods of minor rank were dead ancestors including kings and household heads.

All the deities were offered cattle sacrifices or other offerings. Temples, statues and other artifacts were dedicated to these deities.

Beliefs in these deities must have developed among Canaanites as tools to find help from supernatural forces in the time of adversities and uncertainties, as was common in all cultures across the world at that time.

As proved by archeological findings, polytheistic worship was quite common throughout Canaan at least till exile period. But once Israelites started returning from Babylonian exile from 538 BCE onwards, there is a sudden break. After this, no artifacts of different gods were found in archaeological excavations.

### Relation with neighboring empires

The middle of the 16<sup>th</sup> century BCE saw the emergence of three super political powers around Canaan – in the north, Anatolia (modern Turkey); in the north-east, Mesopotamia (modern Iraq) and in the south-west, Egypt. All these three powers wanted control of Canaan because of its economic and strategic value – northern Canaan provided cedar trees, southern Canaan provided olive oil and wine, while Negev's desert provided copper mines.

Strategically, Canaan was on the crossroad of all the three powers for movement of armies for aggression and defense. So, Canaan became the battleground for the superpowers of that time, as it lay on the crossroad of the Fertile Crescent: Nile-Jordan-Euphrates-Tigris River based fertile agricultural economies.

### Egyptians rule over Israel

As to Egyptian-Israeli relationship, we find that during most of the New Kingdom Egyptian Empire (1549-1069 BCE), the area known as Canaan was a part of or vassal of the Egyptian Empire. Let me briefly summarize the interaction between Egypt and Israel during New Kingdom period:

Ahmose (1550-1525 BCE) - The first king of the New Kingdom was Ahmose, the founder of Dynasty 18. He drove out Hyksos, believed to be originally from Canaan/Syria area, and who were ruling in northern Egypt for the last 200 years. Some Biblical scholars identify Hyksos as the rulers of Egypt (14<sup>th</sup> to 16<sup>th</sup> Dynasty) under whom Biblical character Joseph rose to prominence and Israelites prospered.

However, Egyptians always treated Hyksos as foreigners and never accepted them as their rulers. Recent archaeological excavations at Tel Habuwa confirm the conflict between Hyksos and Egyptians.

Thutmose II (1492-1479 BCE) - He put down revolts by Bedouins in Canaan/Sinai area.

Thutmose III (1479-1425 BCE) – He created the largest empire of Egypt extending from north Syria and Iraq to the northern half of Sudan. Called as ‘Napoleon of Egypt’, he captured 350 cities during his rule subjugating Palestinian, Canaanite, Phoenician, Assyrian, Babylonian and Hittite rulers. He even crossed Euphrates and subdued Mitanni.

Seti I (1294-1279 BCE) - He led campaigns from Gaza to Lebanon forcing tribute from local chieftains and reasserting Egyptian sovereignty.

Ramesses II (1275-1208 BCE) - He reasserted Egyptian suzerainty through his military prowess over Syria, Nubia and Canaan including Jerusalem, Jericho and Moab. The Biblical story of Exodus is believed to have happened during his period.

Exodus 1.11 says: *As a result, the Egyptians put foremen of forced work gangs over the Israelites to harass them with hard work. They had to build storage cities named Pithom and Rameses for Pharaoh.*

It is believed that Rameses was the name of a city named after Ramesses II.

Merneptah (1213-1203 BCE) - He is famous for making Merneptah Stele, which makes reference to the utter destruction of Israel in a campaign in Canaan. It says (among other things): "*Israel has been wiped out...its seed is no more.*" This is the first recognized ancient Egyptian record of the existence of Israel-- not as a country or city, but as a tribe or people.

Ramesses III (1184-1153 BCE) - He was the last pharaoh who managed to keep Egypt's borderlines intact. He defeated Sea Peoples (migrants from Asia Minor – modern Turkey - and Mediterranean islands) when they attacked Egypt's coastline at Nile's delta and Philistines. However, some of them managed to enter and settle down in Philistines and southern Canaan.

After his death, Egypt gradually lost control of Canaan and other Asian territories. Egypt was now on decline and Assyrians were on the rise.

Assyrians rule over Israel

After a couple of centuries of calm and relative freedom of Israel, Assyrians started their campaign to build up a vast empire encompassing Babylon, Syria, Turkey, Lebanon, Israel, Philistines and Jordan. Following regimes are relevant for the history of Canaan:

Shalmaneser III (859–824 BCE) - The tornado of Assyrian onslaught on Israelites started with Shalmaneser III who defeated Israeli king Jehu (c. 842-813 BCE) and exacted tribute from him, as per Black Obelisk of Shalmaneser III kept in British Museum. Jehu is probably the same Israeli king, who has

been referred to in Bible as successor of king Jehoram.

Adad-Nirari III (811–783 BCE) - He launched several military campaigns, one of which was directed against Aramaean Kingdom of Damascus, who at that time had suzerainty over Israel. His attack on Damascus was so crippling that Aramaeans' hold on Israel became loose and Israel got almost free. This was the time of Biblical king Jehoash (797-782 BCE) who, according to some sources, now paid tribute to the Assyrian empire.

Tiglath-Pileser III (745–727 BCE) - Through his massive military campaigns, Assyrian Empire reached its zenith extending from Iran in the east to Cyprus, Palestine, Judah, Israel, Lebanon and Syria in the west and from Armenia in the north to Egypt and Arabia in the south. He forcibly deported hundreds of thousands of Israelites from the periphery to internal parts of his empire to eliminate the possibility of any future revolt.

Shalmaneser V (727–722 BCE) - He reasserted the control of Assyria on Israel by laying siege of the city of Samaria for 3 years and defeating and destroying it once again in 722 BCE. He too deported thousands of Israelites.

Sargon II (722–705 BC) - Along with some other territories, he conquered Gaza in Philistia, destroyed Rafah and reasserted his control over Samaria.

Sennacherib (705–681 BC) - On hearing that king of Judah had revolted, Sennacherib attacked Judah, and plundered a number of towns and villages. Then he confined the king within Jerusalem upon which he was forced to pay tribute. He also carried with him a large number of Israelites and animals.

In addition to being subjugated by Egyptian and Assyrian Empires, kingdoms of Israel and Judah were also briefly defeated by Aram-Damascus kingdom based in Damascus, central Syria.

Tel Dan Stele found in 1993 during archaeological excavation in northern Israeli town of Tel Dan shows that king Hazael (c. 842-796 BCE) of Aram-Damascus kingdom had defeated king Jehoram of Israel and king Ahaziah of Judah and plundered their towns. The word “the House of David” has been used in this inscription to refer to Judah royalty.

### Babylonians rule over Israel

One year after the death of the last strong Assyrian ruler Assurbanipal in 627 BCE, the Assyrian empire spiraled into a series of brutal civil wars.

Nabopolassar, a tribal chieftain from Babylonia, made an alliance with neighboring kings and after a series of fighting for several years, he finally overpowered Assyrians in 605 BCE. So, now, the seat of power shifted from Assyrians to Babylonians after about 1000 years of the rule of the former.

Nebuchadnezzar II (605–562 BCE), the son and successor of Nabopolassar, re-conquered the major portion of Assyrian Empire including modern area of Syria, Lebanon, Arabia, Israel, Judah, Jerusalem

and Philistia. When Judah refused to pay tribute, he sacked Jerusalem, destroyed its temple, killed people and deported a large number of priests and other eminent Israelites to Babylon in 586 BCE. It is this exile period of Israelites which triggered conception and composition of Bible. We will discuss this in more details later.

It must be noted here that deportation of leaders of hostile people was a normal strategy of Assyrian and Babylonian rulers to prevent future revolts. Uprooting the elite – priests, royalty and merchants – and resettling them in or around the capital of the victorious kingdoms was more humane way to prevent revolt than outright slaughtering of the entire group of elites.

After Nebuchadnezzar II, successors could not keep the empire intact and gradually it started disintegrating paving the way for Persian take over. The Neo-Babylonian Empire (626-539 BCE) thus lasted for less than 100 years.

### Babylon Empire replaced by Persian Empire

In 539 BCE, Cyrus, the Persian king invaded and defeated Babylon. One of the first acts of Cyrus, after taking over Babylonian empire, was to allow the Jewish exiles to return to their homes, carrying with them their sacred temple vessels. This is the event with which Bible ends.

We have now examined the history of political subjugation of Israel by its neighboring rulers for the period from 16<sup>th</sup> century to 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE.

Now let us see some of the fundamental beliefs of neighboring cultures to which Israelites were exposed during the exile and which deeply influenced their beliefs about the world and got its expression in Bible.

### **Interaction of exiled Israelites with Assyrian-Babylonian-Sumerian culture**

The exiled Israelites must have come to know the beliefs of local cultures and absorbed some of its core elements. In fact, we find that Biblical stories of creation and Noah's flood have remarkable similarities with Babylonian stories of creation and the Epic of Gilgamesh respectively.

#### Babylonian creation story

This was written around 1120 BCE in the form of a poem known as *Enuma Elish* and discovered in 1875 CE.

According to this story, in the beginning there were two gods – one of fresh water (river water) symbolized by Apsu (male god) and the other of salty water (oceanic water), symbolized by Tiamat (female god). Everything was covered in darkness and chaos. They mated and produced several gods. But these gods made too much noise. So Apsu decided to kill them. But before he could do so, his plan was found out by one of his children god, and eventually they killed Apsu.

When Tiamat tried to take revenge of death of her husband, a younger god, Marduk, agreed to fight

with her on behalf of his brothers on the condition that they would make him their chief god, if he is victorious. All gods agreed. Marduk then killed Tiamat and made the world out of her dead body.

Half of her body was made heaven and the other half Earth. Heaven was created in the form of a solid dome covering Earth around its rim, while Earth was a flat round disk. Water was kept above heaven and below Earth. Tiamat's spittle made clouds and rain. Her head became mountains. Marduk pierced her two eyes, which resulted in the flow of the two rivers of Babylon – Euphrates and Tigris.

He placed gods in charge of stars, Sun, Moon, wind, water etc and they were responsible for their movements. But, now gods complained of too much work.

So, Marduk created Humans with the blood of a rebel god who had incited Tiamat to fight. Marduk also made humans slaves of gods to ease their work. So now humans had to slog for survival and also revere, worship and offer sacrifices to gods. This made gods happy and grateful to Marduk.

Cosmic and social rules were made by Marduk to prevent chaos from coming back. All gods and humans are supposed to worship Marduk alone.

Later Assyrians also accepted similar story while replacing the chief Babylonian god Marduk by their god Ashur.

### Babylonian flood story

Babylonian flood story known as *The Epic of Gilgamesh* was found written in some tablets known as *Chaldean Flood Tablets* believed to have been written around 650 BCE in Ur, a southern Iraqi town of antiquity. However, portions of the story were also found on tablets written around 2000 BCE. The study of the language of the tablets shows that the story must have originated much before they were put in writing.

According to this story, Babylonian god Enlil was annoyed by incessant noise humans were making and so he decided to exterminate all life through a flood. But his plan was secretly conveyed by one of the gods through a dream to a righteous man named Ut-Napishtim who was advised to build a big boat and save some humans and animals.

As decided by god Enlil, incessant heavy rains for 6 days caused a massive flood which covered all land and mountains, killing all life. But the multi-storied boat made by Ut-Napishtim floated and landed on a mountain top. When flood water started receding, he sent out birds to find out dry land. When a bird did not return, he along with other humans and animals landed on the land and made sacrifices to gods to thank them for their survival. Babylonian gods felt sorry to have killed so many life.

Later, Gilgamesh, a legendary ruler of Uruk, met Ut-Napishtim and came to know the story about the flood. Gilgamesh told the story to his people. Finally, someone wrote it down as *The Epic of Gilgamesh*.

With this historical-cultural background, I have now prepared the ground for understanding the

cause of the origin of Judaism or the composition of Bible. The central theme of this chapter is now to be unfolded.

### **Understanding the reason for composition of Bible**

The defeat and exile of Israelites at the hands of Assyrians and Babylonians between 8<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE must have triggered a volley of questions in the minds of the exiled priests and royalty.

Bible itself describes the deep miserable state of Israelites in exile, their anger and desire to revenge against Babylonians (Psalm 137.1, 8 and 9):

*Alongside Babylon's streams,  
there we sat down,  
crying because we remembered Zion.*

*Daughter Babylon, you destroyer,  
a blessing on the one who pays you back  
the very deed you did to us!*

*A blessing on the one who seizes your children  
and smashes them against the rock!*

However, this depressed and revengeful state of Israelites must have prompted serious thinking. Questions pertaining to the cause of their humiliation, suffering, purpose of their life, meaning of human life and the nature of this world itself must have started haunting them day and night. The questions tormenting them must be something like this:

*Why did we have to suffer so much humiliation at the hands of foreigners?*

*Why did our gods abandon us?*

*Why is there so much suffering and violence in this world?*

*How can humans live in peace and prosperity?*

*What is the meaning and purpose of life itself?*

*Who are we? Where have we come from?*

*How did this world itself come into existence? Who created it? Why?*

*What happens after death? How will the world end?*

Gradually they must have thought deeply about the possible answers to these philosophical questions. Eventually, it is these answers which would become the core of Judaism in the form of Biblical stories.

So, what were their answers to these questions?

The polytheistic Canaanite religion did give an answer to these questions, but it was no longer valid. El, who was believed to have created the world and patronized Israelites had failed, as he could not prevent the humiliation of Israelites at the hands of Assyrians and Babylonians. So, Israelites now completely junked the entire pantheon of Canaanite gods including El, Baal, Ashera, etc.

During exile, Israelites were exposed to Babylonian polytheism with Marduk as the highest ranking god. But they were so deeply disillusioned with Canaanite polytheism that they no longer wanted to believe in another set of polytheistic gods. So, the Babylonian religion too was rejected as worthless.

So, now Israelites had to find a more logical, hitherto unknown, answer to their questions.

Since the answer had to start with the creation of the world, Israelites must have looked around and observed natural events. They must have noticed a great harmony in nature – how days and nights come and go alternately; how seasons change regularly; how rivers support life; how rains make crops alive; how flowers bloom; how birds and animals find food, survive and multiply; how parents care for their children; and so on. They must have wondered about the cause of such a grand harmony and regularity in nature.

They must also have been struck by another observation: every effect has a cause; nothing comes into existence without somebody creating it. Children are produced by their parents; fruits are produced by trees; pottery is produced by potters; cloth is produced by weavers and so forth.

One day, they must have been struck with an idea: so long as there are multiple gods, there is bound to be a clash in their interests. So, harmony and peace of the universe is bound to be disturbed. But if there is only one all-knowing, all-powerful and superhuman God, the grand harmony observed in nature would be inevitable and easily explainable. But this harmony could come into existence only if the world is created by this God, just as everything else is created by somebody. So, God must have created this world.

This was a revolutionary idea!

Never before Israelites had ever come to such a startling, though obvious, conclusion. This was the beginning of monotheism – the idea of one God creating and controlling the whole universe, while remaining completely separate from its creation! This was the birth of Judaism. They called such a God by the name ‘Yahweh’.

Once they were convinced about the existence of this God, they worked out details of His relationship with the world as follows:

**Imagined relationship of God with the world**

How God created the world

As mentioned in previous paras, the exiled Israelites had been exposed to the creation story of

Babylonians according to which Marduk had created the world from the dead body of Tiamat and water. He had parted water above heaven and below Earth. Heaven was a solid dome around the edge of Earth which was flat and round as a disc. Sun, Moon and stars are made to orbit around Earth. Rains happen when gates of heaven are opened.

Israelites borrowed these beliefs about the structure of the world and fitted it in their monotheistic framework.

They stated in the first Book of Bible – Genesis – that God created the world in 6 days in the following order:

1<sup>st</sup> day – heavens, Earth and light

2<sup>nd</sup> day – sky

3<sup>rd</sup> day – separation of sea from dry land on Earth, plants on dry land

4<sup>th</sup> day – Sun and stars in the sky

5<sup>th</sup> day – all water animals and birds

6<sup>th</sup> day – all other animals on land; humans (in his image)

7<sup>th</sup> day – day of rest for God

Israelites had borrowed from the Babylonians the geocentric model of the universe in which Earth is the center of the universe. It is flat and stationary. Sun and Moon orbit around it. Earth is supported by columns whose upper portions are seen as mountains. Heaven was a solid dome around the edge of Earth which was flat and round as a disc. Rains happen when gates of heaven are opened by God.

They believed that only humans were created in the image of God. This implied that humans were considered closest to God, while all other creatures were created merely as means for feeding and entertaining humans.

Even among humans, men were believed to be the closest replica of God, while women were considered number 2 in the hierarchy of creatures. This is why in chapter 2 of Genesis, it was stated that the first woman was created from the rib of the first man.

While Israelites had banked upon Babylonians for their creation beliefs, they must also have made independent observations and satisfied themselves about matching their observational data with Babylonian beliefs. For example, they must have observed the dome like shape of the horizon; then the feeling of being in the center of the dome; Sun and Moon moving in the sky; rains coming from above; sea being below the level of land; animals and plants being used as food by humans; days and nights, seasons coming and going regularly and so on. So, the geocentric model of the world with a flat and disc like

Earth being in the center of the world was a quite natural conclusion arrived at by primitive men on the basis of common sense observation.

### Why God created the world

According to Judaism, God created the world to glorify Himself and share His glory with humans:

*Everyone who is called by my name, whom I created for my glory, whom I formed and made.  
(Isaiah 43:7)*

*If you will not hear, and if you will not take it to heart, to give glory to My name," says the Lord of hosts, "I will send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings. Yes, I have cursed them already, because you do not take it to heart. (Malachi 2:2)*

Bible writers must have observed that people earn great wealth, fight battles and become ruler and so on. All this is done to earn glory and name for oneself. So, they thought God too must have created the world to share His glory with humans. This kind of argument was a natural extension of anthropomorphic analogy.

### God does not believe in equality of man and woman

Bible writers must have observed that women were physically weaker than men; that women could not defend themselves against unwanted advances of men; that women do not have aptitude for warfare, politics, trade, hunting, farming, technology and adventure – activities crucial for establishing superiority of any tribe or nation; and that women do not challenge the religious or philosophical views of men or do not venture to form and put forth their own views.

These observations must have logically led them to conclude that God had made women inferior to men. [They did not notice that women were pregnant most of the time and cleaning + cooking + nurturing kids was a full time and difficult task – so women could not have participated in men's activities].

This belief in inferiority of women is reflected in Bible at several places. For example, in Genesis 3.16, God curses Eve:

*.. and he (man) shall rule over you (woman).*

Bible says that woman was created out of ribs of man and she was created to live as a helper to man! Genesis 2.18-22 says:

*The LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone. I will make a helper suitable for him". ...*

*But for Adam no suitable helper was found. So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man's ribs and then closed up the place with flesh. Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he*

*brought her to the man.”*

God nurtures His creatures, especially humans -- Israelites must have observed how all parents – human or animals – love and nurture their children. So, they must have concluded that God too must be caring and compassionate for his creatures and He must have arranged something for their survival and growth. This is why God has provided humans Earth, plants and animals for food, clothes and shelter. He has created Sun and Moon so that day and night is provided to humans for their work and sleep respectively. It was for humans to utilize these resources, they believed.

Adversities of human life must have been caused by God: Fall of man – Bible writers must have noticed how hard a person has to work just for bare survival. They must have been pained to realize that right food, cloth, house and mate were so difficult to get. Doing farming in vastly mountainous/desert terrain of Israel where there was not much river water available for irrigation must have been difficult. Cattle breeding too was hard work. On top of it, they were being attacked all the time by neighboring empires based in Egypt, Assyria and Babylon. Bible writers must have also wondered why the amount of adversities and suffering a man faces in life is much more than moments of happiness, if God is so compassionate.

In order to explain this puzzle, they came out with an extraordinary explanation: they thought that man must have angered God by disobeying Him; so God must have cursed man to have to work hard for survival and to have to live amidst adversities. This is the origin of the hypothesis of **fall of man from heaven**. Since a fruit is the only natural food ready to be eaten, they thought man must have become tempted to eat a particular fruit hanging on a tree, even if God would have forbidden him to taste it for its harmful effect.

This is how Genesis 3.17 describes an angry God cursing man:

*To Adam he said, “Because you listened to your wife and ate fruit from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat from it,’ “Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat food from it all the days of your life.*

It is this explanation which made Jews and Christians accept hard work to be an essential part of life -- a necessary evil. This is how they also explain human suffering – disease, old age, pre-mature death, poverty, loneliness and so on. All human suffering, according to Bible, is due to the first sin committed by Adam and Eve by disobeying God.

Today, in developed societies, people don't even have to think how their next meal would be coming. But in primitive times, life was really very, very hard. Naturally, they must have felt that their life is cursed. So, it was natural for them to interpret their life as if they have “fallen” from some original state of bliss. This is why Bible composers made this doctrine of fall of man. Later, Christianity and Islam fully adopted this doctrine and built their own additions on this foundation. (Even Indian religions believe in

the “fall” of man from the state of blissfulness to the state of ignorance and bondage.)

God commands humans to be ethical – Bible writers derived an ethical code of conduct for humans on the premises that God had created humans. They argued that since God had created all humans, He loves them all. So, God would naturally not like any person to kill any other innocent person, commit adultery, steal or covet someone else’s property [provided the other person does not worship any other god]. This was the foundation of ethics in Judaism. In order that people follow this ethical code, they prescribed death/heavy fine to the violators of this code.

Rules of worship, marriage, money lending, punishment for various crimes, treatment of slaves etc were also derived on the same principle in order to maintain an order in the society, but under the claim that they have been commanded by God.

Since Bible writers believed that God created the world in 6 days and rested on the 7<sup>th</sup> day, so they thought that God must be wanting humans too to rest on the 7<sup>th</sup> day after 6 days of toiling. It is for this reason they made strict rules for stopping all the work on the Sabbath day and prescribed death for violators.

This is the essence of the famous Ten Commandments of Judaism:

1. You shall have no other gods before Me.
2. You shall not make idols.
3. You shall not take the name of God frivolously.
4. Do not work on Sabbath day.
5. Honor your father and your mother.
6. You shall not murder.
7. You shall not commit adultery.
8. You shall not steal.
9. You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.
10. You shall not covet your neighbor’s property, wife, slaves, animals etc.

God approves sex only for procreation within marriage – Bible writers must have noticed man’s power to produce children through sexual act with a woman. They thought that God must have given the power to ejaculate semen only for procreation – so it should not be wasted in any way. So, they approved sexual intercourse only within marriage and that too only for procreation. Hence, sexual relationship was strictly banned outside marriage. For the same reason, homosexuality was also condemned.

God is most angry when humans worship other gods –

As noted earlier, exiled Israelites wanted to take revenge against Babylonians. Babylonians happened to be polytheists. Assyrians too were polytheists. So, Israelites wanted God to be most angry with polytheists so that God could destroy Babylonians and Assyrians. This is the reason their God is ever ready to kill polytheists as exemplified in Bible again and again.

In fact, this is the most central narrative of Bible. This centrality is easily explained if we understand that the primary factor which triggered composition of Bible was to revenge the humiliation felt by Israelites due to their defeat at the hands of Assyrians and Babylonians. So, naturally, the God of Bible writers had to be very harsh on polytheists. Only then, Israelites could have the emotional satisfaction of taking revenge against Babylonians with the help of God.

With this belief, Bible writers could also explain the defeat of Israelites at the hands of enemies. They thought Israelites must have forgotten God and reverted back to polytheistic gods such as Baal -- so it must have angered God who would then have sent Babylonians/Assyrians to defeat Israelites.

In fact, all the misfortunes of Israelites were explained in this way!

This Biblical belief was also an extension of human analogy. A guardian of a household would never like members of his family to seek favors from guardians of other households. He would be very angry at the family member who sought such favor. Israelites thought that God too, who is like our father, would not like humans to seek favor from any other gods.

Bible writers state their belief about this sort of behavior of God through the mouth of God Himself again and again:

Exodus, Chapter 20, Sections 1-17:

*The Ten Commandments -*

*Then God spoke all these words:*

*I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery. You shall not have other gods beside me. - You shall not make for yourself an idol or a likeness of anything in the heavens above or on the Earth below or in the waters beneath the Earth; you shall not bow down before them or serve them. For I, the LORD, your God, am a jealous God....*

...

So convinced were Bible writers of this belief that they prescribed death for all those who worshipped any other god.

See some of the Biblical passages where belief in any other god was punishable by death. This command is shown to have been issued by God Himself:

Leviticus 24.15-16

## *Assault and blasphemy*

*Tell the Israelites: Anyone who curses God will be liable to punishment. And anyone who blasphemes the LORD's name must be executed. The whole community will stone that person. Immigrant and citizen alike: whenever someone blasphemes the Lord's name, that person will be executed.*

Deuteronomy 13.1-5

## *False prophets and false gods*

*You must follow the LORD your God alone! ...Cling to him - no other! That prophet or dream interpreter must be executed because he encouraged you to turn away from the LORD your God who brought you out of Egypt....*

So, finally, Israelites in exile thought they had got the explanation of their exiled humiliation – it was due to worship of false gods like Baal, Asherah etc which had made God angry at them and made Him get Israelites defeated at the hands of foreigners!

This explanation is beautifully described by Bible itself (Nehemiah 9) in a poem addressed to God:

*33 You have been just in all that has happened to us;*

*you have acted faithfully, and we have done wrong.*

*34 Our kings, our officials, our priests, and our ancestors haven't kept your Instruction.*

*They haven't heeded your commandments and the warnings that you gave them.*

*35 Even in their own kingdom, surrounded by the great goodness that you gave to them, even in the wide and rich land that you gave them,*

*they didn't serve you or turn from their wicked works.*

*36 So now today we are slaves,*

*slaves in the land that you gave to our ancestors*

*to enjoy its fruit and its good gifts.*

*37 Its produce profits the kings whom you have placed over us because of our sins.*

*They have power over our bodies and do as they please with our livestock.*

*We are in great distress.*

It is this concept of an over-jealous and intolerant God of Judaism which was later enthusiastically adopted by Muhammad to justify his terrorism against other religions. He used the same Judaic argument – God hates and will punish humans worshipping any other god.

It is this seed of Judaism which has become the tree of global Islamic terrorism today.

Terrorism is any advocacy or activity that uses violence, sabotage or threat to generate social panic in order to further religious, political or other goals.

But while most modern Israelites are not following this aspect of their religion, most Muslims have been pursuing it with full force for the last 1400 years to this day.

### In future Israelite's God will rule the whole world

Once Bible writers were convinced of their explanation of the cause of the present misery of Israelites, they wanted to understand their final destiny as well. They were also curious to know how the existence of humans and the world will come to an end.

They derived this knowledge from two of their basic premises – 1. God is all-knowing and the most powerful and 2. God punishes severely those who worship any other god and rewards those who worship Him alone.

If these two premises are combined, it logically follows that ultimately all humans will have to abandon polytheism for fear of God's punishment and worship only Judaic God. Once that state is reached, God will naturally rule the whole world in accordance with the 'commandments He has already revealed to Israelites'.

Disappearance of rival gods and religions would mean that there would be no conflict among nations, tribes and individuals. So, the world will have finally peace, which would facilitate growth of prosperity. Everybody will naturally follow God's commandments. Violence and sin will disappear from the world. Even wild animals will stop preying and start eating grass

Expression of this aspirational vision of the future has been made in Isaiah 2:1-4; Zephaniah 3:9; Hosea 2:20-22; Amos 9:13-15; Isaiah 32:15-18, 60:15-18; Micah 4:1-4; Zechariah 8:23, 14:9; Jeremiah 31:33-34, etc.

Micah 4.4, for example, says:

*Nation will not take up sword against nation;*

*they will no longer learn how to make war.*

*All will sit underneath their own grapevines,*

*under their own fig trees.*

*There will be no one to terrify them;*

*for the mouth of the LORD of heavenly forces has spoken.*

This grand vision of future must have been very emotionally satisfying to Bible writers because it provided hope for exiled and defeated Israelites that one day their misery will end; their God and world-view would be accepted as true by the entire mankind and they would be finally able to live in their homeland in peace and prosperity.

But how will such a dream world come about? How will people of other nations follow this plan of God, unless some wise and charismatic person skillfully educates them?

This question led to the idea of prophets. Bible writers started imagining that God would choose, guide and prepare good Jews for the role of prophets. So, they started the idea that in future, several prophets will emerge who will lead mankind to the state of God's sovereign rule over the whole world. Belief in such a prophet (Messiah or savior) thus became an integral part of Judaism.

This idea was also extrapolated to the past. Bible thinkers made a hypothesis that all good things that happened with Israelites in the past must have been due to the leadership provided by prophets. This idea spawned writing of Biblical stories on the words and deeds of imaginary prophets of the past solving imaginary problems! For example, they must have heard some folklore that sometime in the distant past, some Israelites had been enslaved by some powerful Pharaoh of Egypt. So, they made stories that some prophet (Moses) had liberated them out of slavery under the guidance of God!

### What happens after death? How the world will end?

It is natural for humans to enquire about what happens after death. Bible writers too kept on guessing about it, since there was no way for them to know about it for certain.

They considered various possibilities and kept on writing about it in different places in Bible. Sometimes they believed that after death, the soul reunites with the souls of ancestors (Genesis 25.8, 25.17, 49.33; Deuteronomy 32.50 etc); sometimes they believed that souls return to dust from where they had been created (Genesis 3.19); sometimes they say that after death, souls go to a dark and silent place called Sheol (Psalm 88, Job 10.20-22, Ezekiel 31.14); sometimes they believed that the soul will return to God (Ecclesiastes 12.7); sometimes they thought that good souls will be given eternal life, while bad ones will be under eternal disgrace (Daniel 12.2, Isaiah 26.19).

The final version generally accepted is that good souls will be sent to heaven and bad souls will be sent to hell. Heaven is the place of eternal enjoyment, while hell is the place of eternal pain and misery.

This belief might have been taken from Zoroastrianism, the then religion of Persians, when Bible composers came into contact with them after Persian ruler Cyrus defeated Babylonians and released Israelites from the captivity in 539 BCE. Israelites must have felt grateful to Cyrus and Persians and hence might have studied Zoroastrianism favorably. They must have noticed that Zoroastrianism believed in monotheism, struggle between good and evil forces, choices before humans on moral issues and entry into heaven/hell by good/bad souls after death.

The concept of heaven and hell fitted very well in the Judaic world-view. If God gets happy/angry at good/bad conduct of humans, it is logical to think that good/bad deeds of this life would be rewarded/punished in the afterlife too. This belief must also be very emotionally satisfying for Bible writers because it gave them solace that Babylonians and Assyrians would ultimately be put into hell, while Israelites will enjoy heaven eternally – a good compensation of their unfair suffering at the hands of evil rulers of Assyria and Babylon.

## Spreading the message by myths

Once we develop ideas which can explain certain events, we want to share it with others. This is a natural desire embedded in us. Biblical thinkers also did the same.

To present their doctrine of God in an interesting way and to enable people to remember and transmit it to the next generation more easily, Bible authors decided to package their beliefs in the form of dramatic stories. This was not an unreasonable act in view of the fact that at that time, the principal method to educate people was through stories passed from one generation to the next orally.

Such stories are called myths, as discussed in the first chapter “What is a religion?” because unlike core beliefs, they are consciously fabricated stories expressed in the guise of facts just to illustrate certain core beliefs. It is presented as if it was a real historical event (to make people believe in it). But under the façade of factual appearance, it is just a story.

In order to drive home their newly found explanation, Bible writers had to give several examples of its ‘truthfulness’. It is like proving the validity of a scientific theory by presenting several facts as examples of the application of that theory.

So, they fabricated a history of Israelites and their ancestors in which God’s reward and punishment rule was exemplified several times in the past. By fabrication of several such examples of the past, it became easier for them to exemplify the real event of exile too as yet another example of God’s reward and punishment system. Such imaginary examples of the past also aimed at convincing Israelites that in future, obeying God’s command will liberate them from their current misery.

This is why the entire Biblical history of Israelites was written in the form of several stories in a seamless continuum -- the story of expulsion of Adam and Eve from heaven, story of Egyptian slavery and liberation, story of conquest of Canaan, story of Jewish kings, story of the golden era of the future, story of life after death.

Their aim was to convince people of the validity of their explanation for the present misfortune by citing several examples of the ‘validity’ of the same explanation through examples of the past ‘historical’ events. They also extrapolated the same explanation to the future to explain ‘the dawn of the golden age for Israelites’ and ‘in afterlife, heaven for believers and hell for unbelievers’.

Of course, they never mentioned anywhere in Bible that the application of their explanation in respect of ‘the past events’ were pure fabrications of their minds. That would have been suicidal, because then nobody would have believed in their explanation for the present misfortune of exile and homelessness!!

Such fabrications of histories to prove the ‘truthfulness’ of a presently held belief was rampant in all religions across the world till the dawn of scientific thinking. I will demonstrate this point when I

come to other religions.

### **Format of the myths**

In order to make the story entertaining and full of suspense, Bible writers invented good and bad characters, sometimes even good characters doing bad things angering God, unending conflicts between man and God and the fortune of Israelites continuously going up and down.

Good characters would be those who would obey God's commandments, and God would choose them as His spokespersons to deliver His messages. They were called prophets. They were made leaders of Israelites and all successes achieved by Israelites were ascribed to them. Judaism claims to have at least 55 prophets!

So, it was not that some real messenger of God or prophet was living among Israelites and preaching and doing miracles. All the stories of Abraham, Jacob, Isaac, Moses etc are completely false and fabricated.

The invention of prophethood was a logical necessity in the process of story making. Since Bible writers really believed in God's reward and punishment systems, and they wanted to prove it by giving apparently true examples; they had to invent prophets to exemplify the reward system of God, and bad characters such as Egyptian Pharaohs to explain the punishment system of God.

Many times, a scientist predicts the existence of an object just on the basis of a mathematical necessity without any observational basis. Later, such an object may or may not be found to exist.

Exactly in the same way, Bible writers, just to fill up the gaps in their stories, thought that prophets should have been there as true messengers of God. But they presented their stories as if they were describing some real events! They did this with the pious intention to make people believe in their doctrines, which they thought were absolutely true!!

After invention of these characters, dramatic events were fabricated and the good and bad characters were interwoven in those events.

Since they believed that God is all-powerful, it was easy for them to bring miracles at every turn of events on the mere wish of God. They attributed miracles to their prophets. This served two purposes – a) prophets could then claim to be representatives of God and people would believe in them and b) whatever prophets said would be considered by people true and good for the tribe.

In fact, miracles impress people so much that almost all religions recognized its importance and hence have fabricated and attributed them to their prophets or Gods.

The end message of Hebrew Bible is, however, simple and clear – all your failures are due to disobedience of God and all your successes are due to obedience of God.

### **Some examples of the application of this Biblical explanation**

The alternating episodes of obedience/disobedience of God's commandments on part of Israelites and consequential dispensing of rewards/punishments by God explains most of the content of Hebrew Bible.

For example:

First humans – Adam and Eve – were happily living in heaven under the loving care of God. But they disobeyed God's order of not eating a fruit from the tree of knowledge of good and evil. So, God punished them by expelling them from heaven; cursing them to have to work very hard for survival and made humans subject to old age, disease and death.

Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were loyal servants of God and the first 3 prophets. So, God rewarded them with long and prosperous life and blessed them with several children.

Moses was very obedient of God and hence was made the 4<sup>th</sup> prophet. God therefore chose him for the task of freeing Israelites from Egyptian slavery by empowering him to perform miracles. The historical fact of Egyptian subjugation of Israelites (as mentioned in the beginning of this chapter), which must be a part of Israeli folklore, came handy here – it was used to fabricate the story of Egyptians enslaving Israelites and Moses liberating them under the pro-active guidance of God

While on their way to their homeland Canaan, Israelites reached Sinai desert. But by the time they reached there, they became ungrateful to God and forgot Him. So, God became angry and made them wander in the Sinai desert for 40 years till all the old adults died.

When Israelites worshipped an idol of golden bull calf while Moses was talking to God in Sinai, God punished them by sending plagues and got 3000 idol worshippers killed.

When Israelites obeyed God's command, He guided Joshua to lead them to victory against all the pagan tribes of Canaan. Thus Israelites got their long-cherished homeland.

David was a strict follower of God's commands. So he was elevated as the most powerful and the best king of Israelites who further expanded his empire and made Jerusalem its capital.

Solomon, son of David, turned away from God under the influence of his foreign wives. So, God became angry and divided the kingdom in two after the death of Solomon.

Prophet Elijah tried to teach Israelites about the perils of worshipping pagan gods, but people would not listen. So, God became very angry and allowed Kingdom of Israel to be defeated by Assyrians in 722 BCE and Kingdom of Judah to be defeated by Babylonians in 586 BCE. The temple of Jerusalem was also allowed by God to be destroyed by Babylonians. A large number of Israelites were made captive and exiled to Assyrian and Babylonian empires. God allowed all this so that

Israelites realize their misdeeds and repent.

God's reward and punishment system will ultimately drive all humans to finally accept God as their only true God. This will end the conflict between nations, as everyone would be following the same one God and His commandments. So, a golden era of peace and prosperity would emerge in the whole world. This era will be ushered in by prophets.

God's reward and punishment system will also determine the fate of good/bad souls after death. Good souls will enjoy eternal heaven while bad souls will suffer eternal hell.

### **Summing up the explanation of the origin of Judaism**

Judaism started with the search for an explanation for the humiliation of Israelites at the hands of foreigners and ended up developing a world-view centered on one supreme God who takes full interest in human affairs. He rewards those who follow His commands and punishes those who ignore Him. Bible writers tried to explain the Israelite's liberation and humiliation in terms of this reward and punishment system of God. This is the main theme of the entire Bible and the essence of Judaism.

### **Is Judaism still taken seriously?**

Judaism is no longer taken seriously by majority of Jews. Hence, its metaphysical, political and economic ideas have now been discarded and substituted by science, humanism, democracy and capitalism.

About 65% of Israeli Jews do not consider themselves as religious, according to a Gallup survey conducted in 2015.

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2B

#### Political & Economic Implications of Judaism

Any belief system trying to explain the world in most fundamental terms would be logically implying certain values most desirable for humans. These values in turn would imply a particular type of political and economic system, which would be most suitable for the realization of those values. So, what political and economic system Judaism implies?

##### **Politically, Judaism implies theocratic monarchy**

Politics is the way common affairs of a group of people is managed. If the basic policy of the management is decided by God or a person, it is called theocracy or monarchy/autocracy. If the basic policy is decided by the majority of the people, it is called democracy.

According to Judaism, God is the supreme authority deciding all the affairs of humans, especially Israelites. It is God who makes and unmakes a king according to His judgement on the conduct of a person. So, Judaism propounds a theocratic political system:

Proverbs 8.15

*By me kings reign*

*And rulers issue decrees that are just;*

Roman 13.1, Deuteronomy 17.15 and Daniel 2.21 also emphasize the same authority of God.

Once appointed by God, the king has to follow all the commandments of God and act as a judge to punish the violators of those commandments.

A theocracy is incompatible with democracy because theocracy enforces the “commands of God” believed to have been revealed to certain persons, while democracy enforces the views of the majority.

##### **Economically, Judaism implies an economy based on mercy of God**

An economic system is the way natural resources are owned and used to produce wealth. To understand the nature of an economic system, we must ask 2 questions: who owns means of production and how does one earn.

If everything is owned by God, every person is God’s employee and one has to depend on God’s mercy for one’s earnings. In this system, the reward of all economic activities is dependent on the mercy of God. Even a person’s planning and hard work would not yield any earnings, if God is angry with him.

If almost everything is owned by state and one has to work as a state employee to earn wages fixed by a few top politicians, it is some sort of socialism. In this system, price of everything is fixed by the top politicians.

If most resources are owned privately and one has to earn by managing one's resources to earn profit or working as a private employee to earn wages, it is some sort of capitalism. In this system, price is decided by the market depending on the position of demand and supply of a particular good including labor.

Judaic God owns all natural resources. So, everybody is His employee. God can grant means of production (land, cattle, water-source etc) to anyone He likes or withdraw it from anyone He dislikes. Thus, God can make anyone rich or poor in no time.

If God finds someone worshipping only Him and following all His commandments, He is likely to make him rich. In case, the person violates any of the commandments, God would certainly take away all his wealth and give it to someone more deserving.

Judaism treats wealth as the gift of God and therefore it respects wealth.

If you google "wealth" in the Bible (<https://www.biblegateway.com>), you will get 106 results in Old Testament and only 20 in New Testament. Most of these references in Old Testament are appreciative of wealth and treat it as bounty of God. But the references in New Testament mostly condemn wealth.

However, Judaism believes that acquiring wealth depends not only on hard work but also and primarily on the mercy of God.

According to Judaism, toiling for livelihood was a curse upon man by God. It is a necessary evil, but if God is pleased, He may give wealth even without toiling for it.

Just see some Biblical verses on the link between God's mercy and wealth:

Proverbs 10.22

*The blessing of the LORD brings wealth, without painful toil for it.*

1 Samuel 2.7

*The LORD sends poverty and wealth; he humbles and he exalts.*

1Chronicles 29.12

*Wealth and honor come from you; you are the ruler of all things. In your hands are strength and power to exalt and give strength to all.*

Jeremiah 15.13

*Your wealth and your treasures I will give as plunder, without charge, because of all your sins throughout your country.*

Ecclesiastes 5.19

*Moreover, when God gives someone wealth and possessions, and the ability to enjoy them, to accept their lot and be happy in their toil -- this is a gift of God.*

Jeremiah 20.5

*I will deliver all the wealth of this city into the hands of their enemies —all its products, all its valuables and all the treasures of the kings of Judah. They will take it away as plunder and carry it off to Babylon.*

It is thus obvious that in Judaism, one's economic position is mainly dependent on God's benevolence or mercy, not on one's intelligence, right planning and hard work.

God also gave moral rules as His commandments. Therefore, no individual is allowed to steal or covet other's property (Exodus 20.15-17). This rule was necessary to honor the sanctity of the gift of wealth given by God to the rich.

But why did God not make everyone rich? Or at least, why did He not make the poor intelligent enough to become rich? After all, not all the poor are unbelievers of God or violators of His commandments. Judaism has no answer to this.

God perhaps realized this mistake and made provisions for helping the poor by the rich! There are several Biblical passages supporting assistance and fairness to the poor:

Exodus 23.11

*.... but during the seventh year let the land lie unploughed and unused. Then the poor among your people may get food from it, and the wild animals may eat what is left. Do the same with your vineyard and your olive grove.*

Leviticus 23.22

*When you reap the harvest of your land, do not reap to the very edges of your field or gather the gleanings of your harvest. Leave them for the poor and for the foreigner residing among you. I am the LORD your God.*

Deuteronomy 15.11

*There will always be poor people in the land. Therefore I command you to be open-handed toward your fellow Israelites who are poor and needy in your land.*

Deuteronomy 24.14

*Do not take advantage of a hired worker who is poor and needy, whether that worker is a fellow Israelite or a foreigner residing in one of your towns.*

Thus Judaism implies a theocratic political and economic system in which God decides who would be the ruler and who would be rich. It is not one's intelligence and hard work which elevates him to the higher level politically and economically, but it is his degree of following the commandments of God which pleases/angers God, which in turn determines his progress in life.

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2C

#### Falsehood of Judaism

There are hundreds of examples of scientifically false statements in Bible. Had it been revealed by God or His prophets, there would not have been a single false statement. So, this falsity is sufficient to prove that Bible is not a word of God revealed to prophets, but a man-made fabricated story expressing popular beliefs prevalent during its time of composition.

There are two kinds of evidences which prove the falsehood of Biblical beliefs – scientific evidence and archaeological evidence. I will discuss them one by one.

#### Scientific evidence:

Following are the main false statements mentioned in Bible:

1. God created the universe
2. God created the universe in 6 days in a particular sequence
3. Earth is stationary and on physical support
4. Earth is flat
5. Earth will be there forever
6. Sun and stars could fall on Earth
7. Snakes eat dust.
8. Noah's Ark saved him from the massive flood sent by God
9. Natural disasters are due to God's wrath
10. Believers would go to heaven and unbelievers would go to hell

Let me discuss each of these statements and show how they are false.

#### 1. God created the universe

Judaism, like other Abrahamic religions, holds that God created the universe, which consists of heaven and Earth. Heaven, in turn, was believed to consist of space, stars, Sun and Moon.

First of all, this view presumes that the universe is static and appears today exactly as it was created by God. This view implies that heaven and Earth are not evolving – they are all finished products.

They do not grow. They do not become better organized. This view was widely prevalent all over the world, because this is what normal sense experience shows. Even Einstein believed that the universe was static! Later he realized his mistake and termed it as ‘the greatest blunder of his life’.

According to the latest scientific research, the universe is not static, but expanding and growing. Edwin Hubble, an American astronomer, demonstrated in 1929 with the help of his telescope that there are billions of galaxies other than our Milky Way galaxy and all galaxies are flying away from each other with great speed. Later, it was also found that new galaxies and stars are continuously coming into existence; old galaxies and stars are dying; new planets and moons are getting born; old ones are disappearing; there are also black holes, supernovae, Quasars, and several other types of massive bodies in the “heaven”. The universe is becoming bigger every moment. In short, nothing is static in this universe.

So, the Biblical belief that the universe has been created by God as a finished and complete product and therefore no change or growth is possible in it has been proved to be false.

Secondly, since the universe is changing all the time ever since it was born with the Big Bang 13.8 billion years ago, it is meaningless to say that heaven was created in 2 days or 4 days by God. There is no fixed heaven; no fixed number of stars, planets and moons, as new ones are continuously coming into existence and old ones are continuously disappearing; so the question of fixing a time period for the creation of all heavenly objects is meaningless.

Suppose a seed is sown in the ground. It germinates and becomes a plant. After some years, it starts flowering. After some more time, it starts producing fruits. It goes on flowering and fruiting every year for several decades. Now someone asks: how much time did it take to create the plant? This question is meaningless, because a plant is not a finished and unchanging product. The plant has not been created, but grown and is still growing. Creation or production makes sense only in respect of mechanical or material things. The universe is not mechanical or material; it is expanding, growing and changing all the time due to its own internal dynamics. Since it is still growing, the question of ‘the time taken for its creation’ is meaningless.

Since the universe itself has now been found to be dynamic and the number of its content ever-changing, the belief in the creation of a fixed universe in a fixed time by God is rendered meaningless.

Thirdly, now that the Big Bang theory of the origin of the universe as well as expansion of the universe is widely accepted to be true, apologists of Judaism (and all Abrahamic religions) are shifting their stands. Now, they are claiming that God is the cause of the Big Bang.

But if God is believed to be the cause of the Big Bang, what happens to the Biblical statements according to which God created the universe in 6 days? If God started the Big Bang, He would have let the dynamics of the Big Bang determine the time taken in evolution of the universe. Then, He would not have said that He ‘created’ the universe in ‘6 days’, because Big Bang has taken 13.8 billion years to

evolve the present day universe and the process of evolution is not finished yet. It may further continue for billions of years. So, obviously, apologists of Judaism cannot have both Big Bang and God on their side.

Fourthly, the process of Big Bang which started the chain of events leading to our present universe is not a conscious process of a super conscious and super powerful entity called God. Though science has not yet understood the forces which triggered our Big Bang, it could be due to a simple cyclical automatic chain of events, e.g., Big Rip/Big Crunch itself triggering the next Big Bang.

To posit God as a conscious super empowered being creating the universe in a jiffy and then looking down upon it, controlling it or helping out a particular species called humans on listening to their prayers appears to be absurd for the following reasons:

**i)** The process of the evolution of the universe involves transformation of simple, undifferentiated matter into complex and more differentiated matter. For example, sub atomic particles combine to form atoms; atoms combine to form molecules; molecules of lighter elements combine to form molecules of heavier elements as in stars; certain organic compounds combine to form rudimentary life; simpler life forms become more complex life forms by integrating certain nutrients and so on. This journey from simpler to more complex life form is still going on.

If we posit God as the creator, we would have to assume that He could create energy, matter, plants, animals and humans in any sequence, as none of them would need to be causally related and therefore evolve from the lower/simpler to higher/more complex format. God could just create anything directly in a jiffy without bothering to wait for the slow process of evolution from one form to another. In fact, this is what is believed to be the case.

But this sort of quick, sequence-neutral, evolution-neutral creation is contrary to scientific findings, according to which right from the time of Big Bang, the universe has been evolving slowly giving rise to one form from another form as cause and effect. The process of evolution starts from dark energy/dark matter to normal energy to quarks/leptons/bosons to atoms to galaxies to stars to planets to simple life forms to plants to animals to humans. The sequence of evolution cannot be changed at all, as they are linked causally.

**ii)** If a superconscious God creates the universe, who creates such a God? If such a God creates Himself, why can't we suppose that the matter/energy itself is programmed by its very nature to cyclically come into existence and go out of existence on its own?

**iii)** If the creator is assumed to be omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, compassionate and just, it would become impossible to explain the presence of natural and moral evil in this world. Why do creatures of God suffer so much – premature death, disease, natural calamities, starvation, poverty, fear of predators, violence, getting killed or getting cheated and so forth? The list of misery is endless. How could such a creator allow living beings suffer so much for no fault of theirs?

It is thus unscientific to explain the origin of the universe in terms of a personal creator.

## **2. God created the universe in 6 days in a particular sequence**

Read the first chapter of the first book of Bible – Genesis.

It is full of scientific falsehoods.

The order of creation, according to this chapter, is as follows:

1<sup>st</sup> day – heavens, Earth and light [Genesis 1.1-5]

2<sup>nd</sup> day – sky [Genesis 1.6-8]

3<sup>rd</sup> day – separation of sea and land on Earth; fruit bearing plants on land [Genesis 1. 9-13]

4<sup>th</sup> day – Sun, Moon and stars [Genesis 1. 14-19]

5<sup>th</sup> day – all water animals and birds [Genesis 1. 20-23]

6<sup>th</sup> day – all other animals on land; humans (in God's image) [Genesis 1. 24-31]

7<sup>th</sup> day – day of rest [Genesis 2.1-2]

This sequence and description of creation has several problems:

a) It has been scientifically proved that Earth, along with other planets of our solar system, was formed out of the initial stages of Sun (protoplanetary system). So, Earth came into existence later than Sun in the order of creation. But Bible says that Earth was created on very 1<sup>st</sup> day, while Sun was created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day! So, no matter how the “day” is interpreted, factually or metaphorically, of duration of 24 hours or 1 billion years, the order of creation described here is false.

b) Day and night on Earth make sense only with reference to Sun. But Sun was created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day. So, all references to morning, evening, day and night before creation of Sun are meaningless.

c) Moon formed due to collision of a planet-like body with Earth. So, it came into existence soon after Earth. So, it is false to say that Moon was created along with Sun on the 4<sup>th</sup> day, while Earth had been created on the 1<sup>st</sup> day.

d) Land plants are claimed to be created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day, while Sun is said to be created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day. But vegetation cannot survive without sunlight. So, land plants created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day could not have survived in the absence of sunlight.

e) It has been scientifically proved that land plants with seeds and fruits evolved only 130 million years ago, birds evolved 150 million years ago and water animals evolved first -- billions of years ago. So, scientifically, water animals came first. Then, much later, birds evolved and after that, flowery and fruity plants evolved. But Bible says that fruity plants were created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day, while water animals and birds were created on the 5<sup>th</sup> day! So, again no matter how one interprets the meaning of “day”, the

sequence of creation described here is completely false.

f) Genesis 1.6 says that sky (or heaven) was made like a dome in such a way that there will be water above and below it. But no water has been found “above the sky”. Rain comes from clouds, which in turn are formed by evaporation of surface water of Earth. Clouds are within the atmosphere of Earth. So, rains do not come from “above the dome of sky”. Besides, sky cannot be considered like a dome, because dome can be only above the Earth, while sky is all around the Earth. There is nothing like ‘up’ and ‘down’ in this universe.

g) After the Big Bang which happened 13.8 billion years ago, everything – galaxies, stars, planets and life have evolved from one another as cause and effect. So, the belief in creation of Earth, stars, Sun, Moon, plants, animals, humans etc. in 6 days separately and directly without any internal causal connection between them is false.

h) Bible gives two contradictory accounts of creation of humans. In Genesis 1.27, God directly created a man and a woman:

*So God created mankind in his own image,  
in the image of God he created them;  
male and female he created them.*

But Genesis 2.7 says that God created only a man and that too from dust:

*Then the LORD God formed a man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being.*

Later, God realized that man was alone; so He created a woman from one of his ribs (Genesis 2.22):

*Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man.*

This contradictory account proves beyond any doubt that it was not God who created humans, but two separate men, unknown to each other, were writing Bible and developing their own doctrines about God. These two contradictory versions were combined by a third Bible writer or editor, who did not even care to make the story consistent.

i) Biblical statements that God created humans [Genesis 1.27, 2.7, 2.22] all of a sudden out of the blue are, refuted by scientific research. There are tons of evidence to show that modern man is the result of millions of years of evolution of the common ancestor of hominids and chimpanzees. The journey from that common ancestor to modern man has been through various major stages such as the stage of Australopithecus, Homo habilis, Homo erectus, Neanderthal and Homo sapiens.

So, the entire sequence of creation described in Bible is completely false.

### **3. Earth is stationary and on physical support**

Every school student knows that Earth spins on its axis and also orbits around the Sun. But Bible says that Earth is stationary, does not move and is standing still on a foundation or pillars or cornerstone!

Read the following verses in which description of Earth is totally unscientific --

1 Chronicles 16:30:

*Tremble before him, all the Earth!*

*Yes, he set the world firmly in place;  
it won't be shaken.*

Psalm 104:5:

*You established the Earth on its foundations  
so that it will never ever fall.*

1 Samuel 2.8:

*The pillars of the Earth belong to the LORD;  
he set the world on top of them!*

Job 38.4-6:

*Where were you when I laid the Earth's foundations?*

*Tell me if you know.*

*Who set its measurements? Surely you know.*

*Who stretched a measuring tape on it?*

*On what were its footings sunk;*

*who laid its cornerstone,*

#### **4. Earth is flat**

Bible reflects the then prevailing popular belief that Earth is flat. So, they believed that if you go sufficiently high in the sky, you could see the entire Earth. Now, today even a school student knows that this belief is false. See an example of “God’s knowledge about the shape of the Earth”:

Daniel 4:10-11:

*In my mind, as I lay in bed, I saw a vision:  
At the center of the Earth was a towering tree.  
The tree grew in size and strength;  
it was as high as the sky;  
it could be seen from every corner of the Earth.*

#### **5. Earth will be there forever**

Psalms 78.69:

*He built his shrine like the heavens  
like the Earth which he founded forever.*

Ecclesiastes 1.4:

*One generation departs and another generation comes,  
but the world forever stays.*

But science says that when the fuel (hydrogen) of our Sun is exhausted, it will collapse and ignite Helium as fuel, giving Sun a second lease of life. But this process will make the Sun expand so much that it would swallow Earth. Thus the Earth will have a fiery end.

Even if this does not happen, ultimately the entire universe will disappear either by collapsing into a single point (Big Crunch) or getting ripped apart down to sub atomic level (Big Rip). There is no question that Earth or any other planet, star or galaxy of this universe can live forever.

## **6. Sun and stars could fall on Earth**

Bible reflected the then prevailing popular belief that Sun and stars, like fruits of a tree, may fall on Earth. They did not know that all stars including our Sun are held in place due to balance of gravitational forces and their inertial force causing motion in a straight line. Even if they were to come near the Earth, the Earth would completely evaporate because of the heat of the stars.

See some examples of “God’s knowledge about stars”:

Revelation 12:4:

*His tail swept down a third of heaven’s stars and threw them to the Earth. The dragon stood in front of the woman who was about to give birth so that when she gave birth, he might devour her child.*

Daniel 8:10:

*It grew as high as the heavenly forces, until it finally threw some of them and some of the stars down to the Earth. Then it trampled on them.*

## **7. Snakes eat dust.**

Genesis 3.14 says:

*The LORD God said to the snake,*

*“Because you did this,  
you are the one cursed  
out of all the farm animals,  
out of all the wild animals.*

*On your belly you will crawl,  
and dust you will eat  
every day of your life.”*

But snakes do not eat dust. They eat rodents, insects, frogs etc. This so-called curse of God has not materialized at all. Some apologetics say that snakes smell dust in order to identify rodents, insects etc. So, in a way, they eat dust. But this argument is incorrect. Snakes smell their surroundings including dust, but they do not eat dust. Dust may be an unintended accompaniment of what goes inside their stomach, but dust is certainly not their desired diet.

## **8. Noah’s Ark saved him from the massive flood sent by God**

Bible describes a global flood sent by God because He wanted to kill all creatures except Noah and his immediate family members. God was angry because except Noah, he found that all creatures had become evil (what was the evil deeds of animals?). Anyway, God is said to have saved Noah, his immediate family members and one pair of all animals by advising Noah to make an ark (a large wooden ship) which would float on waters.

While describing this story, Genesis 6.13-15; 7.11, 12, 19 and 20 says:

*God said to Noah, “The end has come for all creatures, since they have filled the Earth with violence. I am now about to destroy them along with the Earth, so make a wooden ark. Make the ark with nesting places and cover it inside and out with tar. This is how you should make it: four hundred fifty feet long, seventy-five feet wide, and forty-five feet high....”*

*... on that day all the springs of the deep sea erupted, and the windows in the skies opened. It rained on the Earth forty days and forty nights....*

*The waters rose even higher over the Earth; they covered all of the highest mountains under the sky.*

But there are hundreds of problems in this story.

First of all, how can human children and animals be ‘evil’? Why did an omniscient God create these ‘evil’ creatures, if He knew He had to destroy them?

Secondly, it is impossible to trap, transport, accommodate, feed and keep alive 8 millions of species of animals and plants from across the world for about 2 months in a boat of just 450X75X45 cubic feet.

Thirdly, it has been calculated that the extra water required to make global flood up to the highest mountain is simply not available on, above or inside Earth.

So, this story is completely false.

## 9. Natural disasters are due to God's wrath

See the following passage of Bible (Nahum 1.2-8):

*The LORD is a jealous God, filled with vengeance and wrath. He takes revenge on all who oppose him and furiously destroys his enemies! The LORD is slow to get angry, but his power is great, and he never lets the guilty go unpunished. He displays his power in the whirlwind and the storm. The billowing clouds are the dust beneath his feet. At his command the oceans and rivers dry up, the lush pastures of Bashan and Carmel fade, and the green forests of Lebanon wilt. In his presence the mountains quake, and the hills melt away; the Earth trembles, and its people are destroyed.*

Such passages show the ignorance of Bible writers about the causes of natural events such as storm, drought, earthquake, flood, rain etc. They were trying to find a simple cause of all 'unpleasant' experiences – anger of God! Today, even a school student knows the cause of these natural events. So, no God is now needed to explain them. But gullible followers of Bible still continue to explain these natural events in terms of 'God wanting to punish humans for their misdeeds'!

## 10. Believers would go to heaven and unbelievers would go to hell

Belief in heaven and hell is common in all religions including Judaism. Heaven is believed to be a place where good souls of believers enjoy bliss after death. Hell is believed to be a place where souls of unbelievers suffer extreme pain after death. All Abrahamic religions believe that souls enjoy heaven or suffer hell forever. Indian religions believe that heaven and hell are temporary sojourns of good/bad souls and eventually all souls will have to be reborn in different species according to their karma.

But this belief in heaven and hell has several problems:

- Is heaven/hell physical or non-physical?

If they are believed to be physical, we will have to assume that the soul is also physical, because only physical things can inhabit physical places.

But scientists have not found any such physical soul anywhere in the human brain.

Secondly, even if such a soul does exist in the brain, how would it assume body in heaven or hell after death? Without body, a soul obviously cannot experience pleasure or pain.

Thirdly, such a soul will have to physically travel from Earth to heaven/hell. How would the soul navigate such vast distances in the space without having brain, some sort of space traveling machine and required space navigation knowledge? The nearest potentially habitable planet from Earth is 13 light years (or 9.5 trillion kilometers) away. But heaven/hell, if it exists at all, may be still farther!

Fourthly, scientists have not found any physical heaven or hell in any galaxy so far. In fact, they have not found any place which has even rudimentary form of life.

Fifthly, if it is argued that somehow God provides body to each soul and places them in some physical heaven or hell instantly by His power, the next question would be: what is the proof that such a God exists? It is impossible to prove the existence of such a God.

On the other hand, if it is presumed that heaven/hell are non-physical, it would imply that souls too are non-physical, i.e., are without bodies. But then how would souls enjoy/suffer heaven/hell without bodies?

For example, in order to enjoy eating and obtain nutrition, one must have mouth, teeth, tongue, digestive system, absorption of nutrition system, distribution of energy system etc. If a soul has none of these, it cannot even interact with food. It would simply cross the food without even touching it.

Similarly, such a soul cannot enjoy sex, because for enjoying sex, one needs a body with sex organs, sperms, sperm-production system, a body of the opposite sex and so on. A non-physical soul cannot interact with anybody – it would simply cross it without even touching it.

So, whether we assume heaven or hell to be physical or non-physical, either way it lands us in irreconcilable difficulties.

b) Apologists may argue that heaven or hell is like dream experience. Just as in a dream, we enjoy or suffer without having a physical body, in the same way, one can enjoy or suffer in heaven or hell without any body. But heaven or hell cannot be compared to a dream. My mind creates a dream to fulfil a desire or to vent out some emotion. So, for dreaming, a live brain is needed. Once, the body dies, the brain too dies. So, the soul cannot have a dream-like experience of heaven or hell.

Secondly, a dream is always private. The dream that I create is 100% my own. No one else can enter my dream. But heaven and hell are believed to be public places where souls come after death. So, heaven and hell cannot be like dreams.

c) Some apologists advance Near Death Experiences (NDE) as a proof of heaven/hell. They argue that several people, just before dying have experienced bright light, tunnel, calmness and euphoria; they felt being out-of-body; they have vision of prophets and God. All this proves that there is a soul, heaven and hell and God.

But latest scientific research gives a different picture. Now, scientists can very well explain NDE in terms of the processes of the brain. In fact, most of the NDE can now be artificially induced by drugs such as ketamine and PCP, which temporarily create conditions in the brain nearly similar to death.

Here are the scientific explanations of NDE:

Vision of light and tunnel -- This can be explained in terms of very high electrical activities of neurons during the initial moments of death process. Experiments on rats whose heart had stopped working have proved that during the first 30 seconds after the heart stopped, there was abnormally high electrical activity in their brains. The same is true for human brains too.

These frantic electrical firing by neurons would stimulate those parts of the brain also where vision is formed-- thus creating an experience of bright light. Light surrounded by darkness would give an illusion of a tunnel.

But why would be such high intensity neural electrical activities at the beginning of the death process? This may be brain's last-ditch effort to survive by squeezing neural electrical energy after the normal supply of energy stopped due to stopping of heart and blood circulation.

Calmness and euphoria – Death is a time of extreme traumatic stress. So, to cope this up, brain produces stress-reducing hormones such as endorphin. This hormone has the chemical property of inducing calmness and a dream-like euphoria. This is the reason people, just before death, do not experience any pain or stress.

Out-of-body experience -- Normally, brain maintains spatial unity between our sense of self and the body so we feel identical with the body. This is done by the part of the brain where temporal and parietal lobes meet. When brain gets starved of oxygen and energy during the process of death, its capacity to maintain the unity between self and body is considerably weakened. This results in breaking of this unity and the sense of self appears to be disjointed from the sense of the body. This gives the illusion that self ('soul' for the religious) has come out of the body!

Vision of prophets, heaven and God – As the process of death advances, the function of memory is considerably weakened. So, like a dream, all stored images of the memory get muddled. Due to this mixed-up, an image of a friend stored in the memory may get replaced by a prophet, say Jesus. This imaginary, dream-like friendly talk of Jesus would then be interpreted by the Christian as proof of his having the vision of Jesus!

This is why a Christian never has the vision of Buddha or Krishna in his NDE. A Hindu, on the other hand, would never have the vision of Jesus or Muhammad, but may see Krishna or Shiva! So, it is the pre-conditioning of the brain by religions which trigger the illusion of visions of prophets, heaven or God, when memory starts failing during the process of death.

All these scientific facts clearly prove that there is no need to assume the existence of soul or heaven-hell to explain NDE.

d) The belief in heaven or hell is logically inconsistent with the belief in a compassionate and just God. No compassionate and just father punishes his children disproportionate to their mistakes. Torturing people in hell for eternity is certainly disproportionate, no matter how grave their sins may be.

Hence, all arguments to prove the existence of heaven and hell are false.

### **Archaeological evidence:**

Apart from the scientific evidences, there are tons of archaeological evidences which prove that the key Biblical stories are completely false. These may be described under the following heads:

#### **No evidence of Egyptian slavery**

After a century of excavations, archaeologists have now concluded that there is no evidence that Israelites were ever in Egypt, were ever enslaved, ever wandered in Sinai desert for 40 years or ever conquered the land of Canaan under Joshua's leadership.

Had 600,000 men (amounting to millions of people including women and children) suddenly left Egypt, it would have devastated Egyptian economy and there would have been certainly some reference about it in Egyptian records. But no such record has been found. Bible mentions the name of Egypt hundreds of times, but in Egyptian records, the name of Israel comes only once in **Merneptah Stele**.

Merneptah Stele, a stone inscription produced during the Egyptian king Merneptah (1213-1203 BCE) and discovered in 1896, makes reference to the utter destruction of Israel in a campaign in Canaan. It says (among other things): "*Israel has been wiped out...its seed is no more.*" This is the first and only recognized ancient Egyptian record of the existence of Israel -- not as a country or city, but as a tribe or people.

Thus, Biblical description of Egypt cannot be relied upon.

Moreover, if these millions of people had wandered in Sinai desert for 40 long years, as mentioned in Bible, their footprints in terms of left over potteries, artifacts, tools, bones etc would have been certainly found by archaeologists. But nothing of this sort has been found there despite extensive digging.

## No evidence of Israelites' conquest of Canaan

The Biblical stories of destruction of cities by Israelites under the leadership of Joshua in search of the homeland assumed to have happened around 1400 BCE have also been proved false by archaeological evidences. Application of precision radiocarbon dating techniques of the remains of the city of Jericho, for example, proves that its destruction had happened thousands of years ago from the timings implied in Bible.

On the contrary, it has been found that the pottery, alphabets and gods of Israelites during the supposed period of invasion was the same as those of the local Canaanites. This conclusively proves that Israelites did not come from outside. Rather they evolved from among the Canaanites.

## On archaeological evidence of King David

The closest archaeological evidence somewhat matching Biblical story is related to King David. A stone inscription found in 1993 during archaeological excavation in northern Israeli town of Tel Dan shows that king Hazael (c. 842-796 BCE) of Aram-Damascus kingdom had defeated king Jehoram of Israel and king Ahaziah of Judah and plundered their towns.

In this stone inscription, which is dated to have been inscribed sometime in 8<sup>th</sup> century BCE, the victor king boasts of destroying “the House of David”. This is the first non-Biblical source referring to the House or dynasty of King David. But it does not prove that King David as described in Bible existed. It only proves that the dynasties of Israelite kings were known to the outside world as that of David, which in turn makes it probable that some local king named David might have ruled in that area sometime in the past.

## On archaeological evidence of King Solomon

In the year 2010, archaeologists discovered a 230 feet long and 20 feet high stone wall, a guard tower and some other structures in the old city of Jerusalem. Dating of these structures and artefacts found in and around the complex point to its construction in the 10<sup>th</sup> century BCE. This matches with the Biblical timings of the rule of King Solomon and hence it is presumed that he must have made this defensive wall, which confirms what Bible [1 Kings 3.1] says:

*Solomon became the son-in-law of Pharaoh, Egypt's king, when he married Pharaoh's daughter. He brought her to David's City until he finished building his royal palace, the LORD's temple, and the wall around Jerusalem.*

So, it is possible that King Solomon (and his father King David) are real historical persons. Actually, there is always some factual basis on which a story is built and myths are fabricated. The historicity of these two Kings however does not prove that whatever is written in Bible about them is true.

One historical fact may be the foundation on which a big structure of myths and lies can be constructed. For example, the historical reality of King David and Solomon does not prove that Moses could turn the water of Nile into blood or he could partition waters of Red Sea as mentioned in Bible. Bible may have 1% truth and 99% myths seamlessly woven in a wider narrative.

**To sum up:**

Scientific and archaeological evidences clearly prove that the core Biblical beliefs as well as events woven around them are false. There may be bits of historical truth here and there in Bible, but the overall narrative is completely false.

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2D

#### Contradictions in Judaism

Can an all-knowing God or His messengers make contradictory statements? No. So, the presence of even one contradiction would refute the claim that Bible is the word of God. But there are hundreds of contradictions in Bible!

Some of the contradictions are noted below:

##### **1. How was woman created?**

###### **Directly by God:**

Genesis 1.27 says that God created both men and women together -

*God created humanity in God's own image,  
in the divine image God created them,  
male and female God created them.*

###### **From the rib of man:**

But Genesis 2.21-22 says that God created woman from the rib of the man –

*So the LORD God put the human into a deep and heavy sleep, and took one of his ribs and closed up the flesh over it. With the rib taken from the human, the LORD God fashioned a woman and brought her to the human being.*

##### **2. How many pairs of animals were to be kept in Noah's Ark?**

###### **One pair from all living creatures:**

According to Genesis 6.19, God commanded Noah to keep one pair of all living creatures in his boat before the flood –

*From all living things -- from all creatures -- you are to bring a pair, male and female, into the ark with you to keep them alive.*

###### **7 pairs from clean animals and birds + 1 pair from unclean animals:**

But, according to Genesis 7.2-3, God commands differently –

*From every clean animal, take seven pairs, a male and his mate; and from every unclean animal, take one pair, a male and his mate; and from the birds in the sky as well, take seven pairs, male and female, so that their offspring will survive throughout the Earth.*

Hence, there is a clear contradiction in God's commands regarding the number of pairs of animals and birds to be kept in the boat. It is also not clear what is meant by 'clean' and 'unclean' animals.

### **3. How long the flood lasted?**

#### **40 days:**

According to Genesis 7.17, flood lasted for 40 days –

*The flood remained on the Earth for forty days.*

#### **150 days:**

But the same chapter of Genesis contradicts it. Genesis 7.24 says that flood lasted for 150 days!

*The waters rose over the Earth for one hundred fifty days.*

### **4. Does God tempt humans?**

#### **No:**

James 1.13 says that God does not tempt anyone:

*No one who is tested should say, "God is tempting me!" This is because God is not tempted by any form of evil, nor does he tempt anyone.*

#### **Yes:**

But, Genesis 22.1-2 describes God's plan to tempt Abraham to disobey Him for love of his son:

*After these events, God tested Abraham and said to him, "Abraham!"*

*Abraham answered, "I'm here."*

*God said, "Take your son, your only son whom you love, Isaac, and go to the land of Moriah.*

*Offer him up as an entirely burned offering there on one of the mountains that I will show you."*

### **5. Does God see everything all the time?**

#### **Yes:**

Proverbs 15.3 says that God is everywhere and sees all things all the time:

*The Lord's eyes are everywhere*

*keeping watch on evil and good people.*

#### **No:**

Genesis 11.5 says that God does not see everything all the time and He has to physically travel to see things:

*Then the Lord came down to see the city and the tower that the humans built.*

## 6. Does God want food offerings and sacrifices of animals?

**Yes:**

Exodus 29: 1, 11, 12, 16 says:

*Now this is what you should do to make them holy in order to serve me as priests. Take a young bull and two flawless rams....*

*Then slaughter the bull in the LORD's presence at the meeting tent's entrance. Take some of the bull's blood and smear it on the altar's horns with your finger...*

*Then slaughter the Ram. Take its blood and throw it against all the altar's sides. ....*

**No:**

Jeremiah 6:20 says that God is not appeased by sacrifices -

*What use to me is incense from Sheba  
or sweet cane from a faraway land?*

*Your entirely burned offerings won't buy your pardon;  
your sacrifices won't appease me.*

These are just a few examples. There are hundreds of such contradictions in Bible. I cannot discuss all of them here for lack of space.

**Explanation of the contradictions --**

As I have mentioned in the Introduction of this chapter, Bible was written over a period of hundreds of years by different authors. Bible is not one Book, but a collection of 24 Books. So, different authors inserted their own personal views in different Books creating contradictions.

As mentioned there, it has now been proved that there are at least 4 different lines of authors, known as JEPD. So, there are 4 narratives of Bible. Hence, contradictions are bound to happen.

This proves that Bible is not a collection of words of an all-knowing God, but a narration of certain beliefs and myths by some men with limited knowledge.

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2E

#### Harmful effects of Judaism

If a world-view is false, it means the reality is different from what is anticipated. So, it is bound to lead to failure for its followers, which in turn would lead to their misery.

Following is the list of harmful effects of Biblical beliefs:

**1. The central theme of Hebrew Bible – that Israelites suffered whenever they disobeyed God's commandments and rewarded whenever they followed Him – kept Israelites under slavery, poverty and intellectual stagnation for thousands of years**

**2. Biblical belief in an intolerant and unforgiving God contains the seed of terrorism**

**3. Compulsory social holiday on Sabbath is unpractical and harmful**

**4. Compulsory circumcision is an unhealthy practice**

**5. Biblical belief in inferior status of women promotes subjugation of and violence against women**

**6. Bible's belief about disciplining children supports violence against children by parents and teachers**

**7. Biblical belief that God has put animals under the dominion of man promotes killing of animals and cruelty against them**

**8. Bible justifies slavery**

Let us examine each one of these harmful effects one by one.

**1. The central theme of Hebrew Bible – that Israelites suffered whenever they disobeyed God's commandments and rewarded whenever they followed Him – kept Israelites under slavery, poverty and intellectual stagnation for thousands of years.**

As discussed in sub-chapter 2A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Judaism] , Bible writers blamed their past practice of polytheism for all their problems such as defeat at the hands of foreign rulers, exile, poverty, famine, disease, premature death, etc. So, they came out with one simple solution – worship only one God and follow 'His commandments'. They followed this belief sincerely after they returned to Canaan from Babylonian exile. This is proved by the fact that after the time of their return from exile, no idol or artefact of any lesser god such as Baal etc has been found in archaeological excavations

undertaken in Israel.

But worshipping only one God too did not work. Belief in God only prevented Israelites to be proactive, fight and defend their nation against the onslaught of foreign domination. They simply depended on God to defend their sovereignty. But God did nothing to help them.

After Egyptians, Assyrians and Babylonians, Israelites continued to be ruled by Greeks, Romans, Muslims and the British for the next 2000 years. Their aspiration for own sovereign homeland remained unfulfilled.

The writers of the Hebrew Bible have given several imaginary examples where God, pleased with the loyalty of a believer, grants him lots of goodies – land, cattle, plentiful harvest, longevity, beautiful wife, obedient children and so on, while he punishes unbelievers with poverty, disease, short life, no children, defeat at the hands of enemies and so on.

Deuteronomy (chapter 28) gives details:

*Indeed, if you diligently obey the LORD your God to carry out all his commands that I'm giving you today, then the LORD your God will set you high above all the nations of the Earth. Moreover, all these blessings will come upon you in abundance, if you obey the LORD your God:*

*Blessed will your children be, as well as the produce of your land, the offspring of your beasts and cattle, and the offspring of your flock.*

*Blessed will be your grain basket and your kneading bowl.*

*The LORD will make your enemies, who rise against you and attack from one direction, to flee from you in seven directions.*

*The LORD will open his rich treasury, the heavens, to release rain upon your land in season and bless everything you undertake so that you'll lend to many nations but won't borrow....*

*But if you don't obey the LORD your God and faithfully carry out all his commands and statutes that I'm giving you today, then all these curses will come upon you and overwhelm you:*

*Cursed will be your grain basket and your kneading bowl.*

*Cursed will your children be, as well as the produce of your land, the offspring of your beasts and cattle, and the offspring of your flock.*

God rewards Job, a staunch believer, too for his loyalty by granting him lots of livestock, children and long life. Job 42.12-17 says:

*The LORD blessed Job during the latter part of his life more than the former, since he owned 14,000 sheep, 6,000 camels, 1,000 teams of oxen and 1,000 female donkeys. He also had seven sons*

*and three daughters. No one could find more beautiful women in the whole land than Job's daughters. Their father gave them their inheritance along with their brothers. Job lived 140 years after this, and saw his children and grandchildren to the fourth generation. Then Job died at an old age, having lived a full life.*

Similarly, God blesses the loyal King Solomon with riches (1 Kings 3.13):

*I'm also giving you what you haven't requested: both riches and honor, so that no other king will be comparable to you during your lifetime.*

God also rewarded His other servants such as Abraham (Genesis 17-20), Joseph (Genesis 41) and Jehoshaphat (2 Chronicles 17.5) richly.

All these examples clearly prove that Judaism falsely holds that just belief in God and following His commandments are enough to get wealth, health, children etc; that there is no need to pro-actively plan and work for these desirable goals. This is an extremely harmful belief. A person harboring such a belief would never be able to believe in human capability and intelligence to attain these goals.

This has also a direct bearing on the number of children one has today. If a Jew believes that children are gifts of God, he would never approve contraceptives or abortion to reduce the number of children. This would result in overpopulation.

It is also obvious that there is no causal link between belief in God/following His commandments and worldly success. Similarly, there is no causal link between not believing in God/not following His commandments and worldly failure. It was just God's whim to artificially link these two logically separate sets of events. Our actual living experience abundantly proves the falsehood of this belief and hence its harmful effect.

Hence this Biblical belief is totally against the development of a scientific attitude. Science develops only when we start the process of understanding the cause of an event by careful observation of preceding events. Only through observation – hypothesis – experiment/observation model, a scientific theory about an event or set of events can be arrived at. But once we blindly start believing that God is the cause of everything, we would never attempt to adopt this scientific model.

During the last 300 years, man has been able to create an unprecedented progress in creating wealth and eliminating diseases only by developing science and technology, not by the grace of God. It has been proved beyond doubt now that by proper management of the world affairs and application of appropriate technology, anything can be achieved. There is no need to beg before some imaginary God for solving day to day problems of life.

It took Israelites 2000 years to realize that it is not God, but the appropriate warfare strategy and technology which decides defeat or victory in wars.

It is the scientific, technological, economic and military aggressiveness of the new nation – Israel – born in 1948, which has kept it as one sovereign nation, democratic and prosperous. Israelites have mostly abandoned the false religion of Judaism and marched ahead with new ideas. A Gallup survey conducted in 2015 showed that 65% of Israeli Jews consider themselves as non-religious. This proves a paradigmatic shift of Jews towards humanist-scientific world-view away from the old Judaic world-view. It is this shift which has made Israel one of the most powerful countries of the world.

## **2. Biblical belief in an intolerant and unforgiving God contains the seed of terrorism**

Judaism believes that God is very intolerant of other gods. He gets extremely angry if His followers worship any other god. To recapitulate, this is what Hebrew Bible says:

Exodus 20.1-5:

*Then God spoke all these words:*

*I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slavery. You shall not have other gods beside me. You shall not make for yourself an idol or a likeness of anything in the heavens above or on the Earth below or in the waters beneath the Earth; you shall not bow down before them or serve them. For I, the LORD, your God, am a jealous God, inflicting punishment for their ancestors' wickedness on the children of those who hate me, down to the third and fourth generation; ....*

The Golden Calf incident [Exodus 32: 1-35] shows that God became jealous just because Israelites treated a gold-made calf as god. But the people just wanted to take the help of this “god” to find out the whereabouts of Moses, who had not returned from the mountain even after several hours. But even this was not tolerated by God, who felt so jealous with this “god” that he wanted to burn down all the people who worshipped that “god”. But Moses pleaded God to forgive them. As punishment, however, Moses destroyed the golden calf and asked all the people there to go and kill their brothers, friends and neighbors! But God was still angry. He struck with plagues to the remaining people!

The same succession of events happened when some of Israelites were tempted to worship the rival god Baal [Numbers 25.1-5]. God ordered Moses to kill all of them!

It is this extreme jealousy on part of God which makes Him sanction killing of anyone who dares to worship any other god, even if he is a lesser god [Deuteronomy 13:12-16; 13:6-11].

This is what Judaic God says in Leviticus 24.15-16:

*Tell the Israelites: Anyone who curses his God will be liable to punishment. And anyone who blasphemes the LORD's name must be executed. The whole community will stone him. Immigrant and citizen alike: whenever someone blasphemes the Lord's name, they will be executed.*

With belief in this kind of violent and intolerant God, it is logical to expect stories of massacre of

non-Israelites by Israelites in the Hebrew Bible. This is exactly what we find there. See some of the passages depicting massacre of people and destruction of cities by Israelites:

#### Deuteronomy 7.1-6

*When the LORD your God brings you into the land that you are entering to possess, he will drive out many nations before you: the Hittites, Gergashites, Amorites, Canaanites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites— seven nations who are more numerous and stronger than you. So when the LORD your God delivers them to you and you have defeated them, then utterly destroy them. You are not to make any covenant with them nor be gracious to them. You are not to intermarry with them. You are not to give your daughters to their sons nor take their daughters for your sons, because they will turn your children from me to serve other gods so that the LORD's anger blazes against you and swiftly destroys you by fire. This is what you are to do to them: tear down their altars, break their pillars, cut down their ritual pillars, and burn their carved idols in fire, because you are a holy people to the LORD your God. The LORD your God chose you to be his people, his treasured possession from all the nations on the face of the Earth.*

#### Joshua 6.21

*And they utterly destroyed all that was in the city (of Jericho), both man and woman, young and old, and ox and sheep and ass, with the edge of the sword.*

#### Joshua 10.29-30, 32

*Then Joshua passed from Makkedah, and all Israel with him, unto Libnah, and fought against Libnah.*

*And the LORD delivered it also, and the king thereof, into the hand of Israel. And he smote it with the edge of the sword and all the souls who were therein. He let none remain in it, but did unto the king thereof as he did unto the king of Jericho.*

*And the LORD delivered Lachish into the hand of Israel, which took it on the second day, and smote it with the edge of the sword and all the souls who were therein, according to all that he had done to Libnah.*

Even Talmud, the Jewish law, which applies Biblical beliefs in day-to-day life, openly sanctions discrimination against non-Jews [who are called Cuthean, Gentiles, Heathen or Canaanites in Talmud]. See some of the passages:

#### Sanhedrin 57a

*For murder, whether of a Cuthean by a Cuthean, or of an Israelite by a Cuthean, punishment is incurred; but of a Cuthean by an Israelite, there is no death penalty.*

[Here, Israelites are not to be punished with death, if they murder a non-Jew, but not *vice versa*!]

Baba Kamma 37b

*Where an ox belonging to an Israelite has gored an ox belonging to a Canaanite, there is no liability, whereas where an ox belonging to a Canaanite gores an ox belonging to an Israelite, the compensation is to be made in full.*

[If an Israelite's ox has hurt the ox of a non-Jew, no punishment to the Israelite, but not *vice versa*!]

Baba Kamma 113a

*Where a suit arises between an Israelite and a heathen, if you can justify the former according to the laws of Israel, justify him and say: 'This is our law'; so also if you can justify him by the laws of the heathens justify him and say [to the other party:] 'This is your law'; but if this cannot be done, we use subterfuges to circumvent him.*

[Israelites are permitted to deceive non-Jews!]

Muhammad had come into contact with Jews very intimately – so he must have borrowed this idea of intolerance from them and made violent jihad the central theme of Islam. On the line of Judaic ethics, where there are different norms for Jews and non-Jews, Muhammad too developed different ethical norms for Muslims and non-Muslims.

So, the teaching of terrorism started with Judaism. Islam adopted it with full zeal and ferocity. Today's global terrorism is the direct fruit of the seed of terrorism sown by Judaism.

Though modern Israelites have abandoned this Biblical belief today, Muslim jihadists are still following it.

But in principle, terrorism and discrimination against the followers of other religions are supported by Judaism as well as Islam.

### **3. Compulsory social holiday on Sabbath is unpractical and harmful**

According to Judaism, just as God worked for 6 days and rested on the 7<sup>th</sup> day; humans too must rest on one day of the week. They called it Sabbath. On Sabbath, Jews must stop all works.

Jewish law prohibits 39 categories of activities on Sabbath. They include all activities related to farming, cooking, producing raw material for any clothing, processing cloth, constructing or repairing building etc.

Observing Sabbath in modern times would imply no shopping, pursuing one's hobbies, cooking, doing household chores, driving, traveling, and so on [Exodus 20.10; Leviticus 23.3; Jeremiah 17.21-22]. The official punishment for violating this instruction is death [Numbers 15.32-35; Exodus 31.14-15; Exodus 35.2]!

This entire concept is not only unpractical and inconvenient, but positively harmful. A person, tired of hard work on weekdays, would love to go out on short week-end vacation, but he cannot do it under this rule. Someone, wanting to get medical advice on some nagging health issues on the only holiday he has got -- Sabbath, cannot do so. Going out to meet up a friend is also not possible. Women who spend their week days in doing household chores cannot go out for recreational activities even on the weekend because of this rule. A person may have some important work to finish for his employer, but he cannot do it. And so on.

This rule thus creates only misery without enhancing any well-being. It has no intrinsic merit. It promotes only blind allegiance to the belief that man must take rest, just because God rested on the 7<sup>th</sup> day after 6 days of work.

This explains why overwhelming majority of Jews do not observe Sabbath.

#### **4. Compulsory circumcision is an unhealthy practice**

Medical research has shown that male circumcision has very harmful long-term effects.

First of all, newly born infants experience extreme pain, terror, trauma and helplessness during genital skin cutting operation. This results in post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD). Such children may develop excessive fear of doctors and nurses, total withdrawal, much stronger reaction to future pain than normal etc.

Secondly, circumcision removes more than 50% of the normal skin and mucosa from the penis. This skin and mucosa was provided by nature to allow the expansion of the penis during erection. Circumcision therefore frequently results in painful erection or tearing at the scar sight.

Thirdly, the foreskin, supposed to be removed during the operation, has been found to be highly sensitive and pleasure enhancing if touched. Its removal produces a deficit in sensory input into the central nervous system, often resulting in erectile dysfunctions. It has been observed that circumcision makes penis less sensitive to sexual stimulation.

Fourthly, circumcised males have been found to experience difficulty in achieving even orgasm and ejaculation.

Fifthly, the presence of foreskin reduces the problem of vaginal dryness. It has been found that women are more likely to have orgasm with a normal penis than circumcised penis.

Thus, circumcision produces no medical benefits, but lots of sexual problems.

#### **5. Biblical belief in inferior status of women promotes subjugation of and violence against women**

Women are considered inferior to men in Bible. Here are the proofs:

### **a) God Himself curses Eve**

Genesis 3.16 says:

*.. and he (man) shall rule over you (woman)*

### **b) Women were created from the rib of man**

Women were considered so inferior by Bible writers that they were not even considered worthy of getting created along with men, according to one of the doctrines of Bible. According to this doctrine, a woman was created from ribs of man by God and she was created to help and entertain the man! Genesis 2.18-22 says:

*The LORD God said, “It is not good for the man to be alone. I will make a helper suitable for him.*

*Now the LORD God had formed out of the ground all the wild animals and all the birds in the sky. He brought them to the man to see what he would name them; and whatever the man called each living creature, that was its name. .....*

*But for Adam no suitable helper was found. So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man’s ribs and then closed up the place with flesh. Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man.”*

This means that a woman was not supposed to exist for her own intrinsic value. She was, in God’s plan, to be just a helper of a man. She owed her existence to man and supposed to live according to the dictates of a man. How disrespectful to women!

### **c) Women are used as property of men**

For example, Lot, the nephew of Abraham, in order to save his two angel guests from the attack of local marauders in the town of Sodom, offers his two daughters to them. He says to them [Genesis 19.8]:

*I have two daughters who have never had sexual relations with men. Let me bring them out to you, and you may do to them as you please. But do not do anything to these men, for they have come under the shelter of my roof.*

This incident shows that women were treated as property, which could be dispensed with to save life of guests. Women were not supposed to have any intrinsic value. Men were not supposed to fight other men to protect the life and honor of women. Rather they are supposed to sacrifice women to protect the honor of some guests!

### **d) Giving birth of a female child makes a mother more unclean than giving birth of a male child!**

Leviticus 12.2-5 says:

*The LORD said to Moses: Say to the Israelites: If a woman conceives a child and gives birth to a son, she will be unclean for seven days. ...*

*But if the woman gives birth to a daughter, she will be unclean for two weeks....*

Thus, Bible is full of passages denouncing women and making her feel inferior for no fault of hers!

Naturally, such a world-view would support and promote subjugation of women.

Since Christianity also believes in these Biblical stories, women are treated as inferior in the entire Christian world as well.

This is proved by the fact that even in the year 1776, when the USA became independent, only white males were given voting rights. It was not till 1918 that all adult women in USA could get right to vote. Switzerland granted the right to vote to women as late as 1990!

Every 90 seconds, somewhere in the US, someone is sexually assaulted (*Calculation based on 2012 National Crime Victimization Survey. Bureau of Justice Statistics, U.S. Department of Justice*).

One out of every five American women has been the victims of an attempted or completed rape in their lifetime (*The National Intimate Partner and Sexual Violence Survey 2010*).

According to a recent UN report on women, 14 of the 25 countries with the worst femicide rates are in Latin America, which has mostly Christian population.

Across the 28 States of the European Union, one in five women has experienced physical and/or sexual violence from a partner (European Union Agency for Fundamental Rights, 2014).

Thus, in the final analysis, it is this Biblical belief, which is the root cause for harassment of women in Judeo-Christian world.

## **6. Bible's belief about disciplining children was responsible for violence against children by parents and teachers**

According to Judaism, God disciplines only those whom He loves. Disciplining is through some “divine punishment” on deviation from the path laid down by God. Extending the same logic, Jews believe that parents, who are like God to their children, should also discipline their deviant children by spanking or slapping them.

The rampant use of violence against children at home and in schools in Judeo-Christian world in the past was a direct outcome of this Biblical teaching.

See the following passages of Bible justifying physical punishment to children:

Proverbs 13:24:

*Those who withhold the rod hate their children,*

*but the one who loves them applies discipline.*

Proverbs 22:15:

*Folly is bound up in a child's heart;*

*the rod of discipline removes it.*

Proverbs 29:15:

*The rod and correction lead to wisdom,*

*but children out of control shame their mothers.*

Psalm 94:12:

*The people you discipline, LORD, are truly happy*

*the ones you teach from your instruction.*

It is this sort of belief system of Judaism which motivates parents and teachers to discipline children by using physical violence.

According to the UNICEF 2010 report, as many as 80 to 98 per cent of children suffer physical punishment in their homes, with a third or more experiencing severe physical punishment resulting from the use of implements; and at least 89 countries have not prohibited corporal punishment in schools.

The Biblical belief in disciplining children by violence is one of the fundamental causes of such violence.

## **7. Biblical belief that God has put animals under the dominion of man supports killing of animals and cruelty against them**

Bible (Genesis 1.26) says:

*Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the heavens and over the livestock and over all the Earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the Earth."*

The very idea of dominance of man over animals is ugly and violent. As our scientific understanding of life on Earth has matured, we now know that life on Earth is an intricate web of interdependence, checks and balances. Nobody is superior or inferior in this web of life.

If, for example, all bacteria on Earth die, humans too will have to die, because without bacteria, dead animals and plants cannot be recycled or food in human intestines cannot be digested. Planktons, a drifting microscopic soup of algae, archaea and bacteria found in oceans and fresh water bodies are responsible for producing half of world's oxygen, so necessary for human survival. If bees, flies, moths, birds, beetles and butterflies are killed, farming plants and cotton cannot be pollinated which would make

human life impossible. Animal's dung becomes fertilizer for plants. Plants give us oxygen, seeds and fruits.

These are just a few examples to show how humans are dependent on animals and plants, which in turn are dependent on each other. So, plants and animals deserve our love, respect and gratitude, rather than subjugation. Bible, by declaring that God wanted humans to subjugate them, implies that humans may use them in whatever way they like – hunt, kill, starve, drug, cage, exploit or experiment for food, clothes, knowledge, pleasure etc. This is insensitivity and brutality. This is unacceptable to our modern moral sentiments.

Bible clearly sanctions killing and eating certain animals:

Leviticus 11.3:

*Any animal that has hoofs you may eat, provided it is cloven-footed and chews the cud.*

Leviticus 11.9:

*Of the various creatures that live in water, you may eat the following: whatever in the seas or in river waters that has both fins and scales.*

Leviticus 11.22:

*.... you may eat the following: the various kinds of locusts, bald locusts, crickets and grasshoppers.*

To slaughter an animal because 'God has made them for human consumption' is like a group of powerful superhuman aliens, having descended on Earth, saying that their God has sanctioned eating human flesh. Would we like our children being killed for food by the aliens?

But exactly the same treatment is being given to animals by Bible.

Have we asked animals whether they feel happy when they are slaughtered? According to Bible, they should be happy because God has made them only for human consumption and God is 'just and compassionate' for his created beings! But the pain and cry of animals before and during slaughter does not provide any evidence for this.

Killing animals for food pulls us down to the level of predatory animals who have no other option to survive except killing their prey. Can we humans not be a little more intelligent, a little more considerate, a little more loving towards our ancestors – animals?

Killing animals for food is not only cruel, ugly and insensitive, but also unnecessary. Vegetarian food has all the nutrients required by humans. Vegetarian food is also eco-friendly. It causes less diseases. The increasing incidence of obesity, diseases, global warming, and wastage of energy – is all partly caused by meat eating.

It has been calculated that producing one calorie from animal protein requires 11 times as much fossil fuel input - releasing 11 times as much carbon dioxide - as does producing a calorie from plant protein. Feeding massive amounts of grain and water to farmed animals and then killing them and processing, transporting, and storing their flesh is extremely energy-intensive. Besides, animal manure also releases large quantities of carbon dioxide.

According to calculations, production of one ton of beef requires over 16000 cubic meter of water, while production of the same amount of wheat requires only about 1400 cubic meter water on average (Wikipedia: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Environmental\\_impact\\_of\\_meat\\_production](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Environmental_impact_of_meat_production)).

A UN's Food and Agriculture Organization report of the year 2006 found that current production levels of meat contribute between 14 and 22 percent of "CO2-equivalent" greenhouse gases the world produces every year.

It may be argued that even vegetarian food involves killing of plants/seeds. That is true. But plants have much less sensitivity for pain compared to animals. The choice for humans in this world is not between violence and non-violence, but between violence causing more pain and violence causing less pain.

Bible has played a big role in creating cruelty against animals. Hundreds of billions of animals are killed every year in the world for food and other uses. Unless people stop believing in these archaic religious world-views, it would be impossible to stop this legalized murder of helpless animals.

## **8. Bible justifies slavery**

There are hundreds of passages in Bible justifying slavery. Slaves were treated as property of their masters and they could be bought and sold like animals, beaten, starved, sexually abused or made to work all the time at their master's sweet will. Masters could beat their slaves as much as they want so long as the slave does not die.

See some of the passages of Bible justifying slavery

Exodus 21.20-21:

*When a slave owner hits a male or female slave with a rod and the slave dies immediately, the owner should be punished. But if the slave gets up after a day or two, the slave owner shouldn't be punished because the slave is the owner's property.*

Leviticus 25.44:

*Regarding male or female slaves that you are allowed to have: You can buy a male or a female slave from the nations that are around you.*

All these passages show the moral insensitivity of the people writing Bible. These justifications of

slavery created a mind-set among the powerful and the rich in Judeo-Christian world which resulted in inhuman treatment of African and other slaves in Europe and America. The bias against African people has toned down today but has not vanished completely.

**Thus, Judaism has proved to be extremely harmful for the world.**

## Chapter 2 -- Judaism

### Sub-Chapter 2F

#### Summary of Judaism

Judaism was not initiated, guided or inspired by God. There were no real persons called prophets who received “messages from God” and “communicated with God”. Hundreds of scientific falsehoods, archaeological evidences and mutually contradictory statements of Hebrew Bible conclusively prove that their God or prophets were figments of imagination.

Judaic world-view was the product of historical circumstances. Israelites were defeated again and again by its powerful neighboring empires. Egyptian, Assyrian and Babylonian rulers kept on subjugating Israelites from 16<sup>th</sup> century BCE to 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE. A substantial number of Israelites were made captive and exiled by Assyrian and Babylonian rulers. This humiliation triggered thinking on part of some Israelites on the nature of the world, man’s place in it and the cause of suffering of humans, particularly Israelites.

This thinking resulted in composition of the Hebrew Bible between 8<sup>th</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> century BCE by several authors. Different authorship resulted in contradictory views. Their ideas were based on common sense observation and logical reasoning. Their world-view was also influenced by Babylonian religion. A burning passion to revenge the humiliation suffered by Israelites at the hands of Babylonians was in the back of the mind of Bible writers.

So, against the polytheistic world-view of Babylonians, Bible writers developed a monotheistic world-view in which they hypothesized a God who creates the world and humans, is ever ready to kill anyone who does not believe in His sovereignty over the world and always willing to help anyone who believes and worships Him alone.

So, Bible writers thought that if they started believing in and worshipping such a God, He would be very pleased and help them out from their current tragic situation. With the help of such an omnipotent and helpful God, they could hope to go back to their own homeland from the Babylonian exile, establish their sovereignty in Canaan, defeat all opposing regimes and establish a Judaic world empire in which their God becomes the God of the whole world ushering in an era of peace and prosperity in this world and heaven in after life.

This electrifying idea filled them with hope and zest. They therefore wanted to prove it true at any cost. So, they fabricated a past (or perhaps persuaded themselves to believe in such a past on the basis of some distantly related folklores) where such a God chose to guide and help ancestors of Israelites, freed

them from the slavery of Egyptian pharaohs and facilitated their victory over the land of Canaan. All this was done by God because Israelites alone believed and worshipped such a God. They also projected a golden era of future where Israelites, under the leadership of God, would become the sole super power and rule the whole world.

These stories of the past and future were fabricated just to exemplify their central doctrine that it is God who elevates believers and destroys unbelievers. It is this central narrative which is the backbone of the entire Biblical mythology.

But a false world-view, however much emotionally appealing it may be, does not work and cannot work. So, Judaism was and will always be a dysfunctional world-view. It neither enabled Israelites to get their homeland in Canaan, nor did it make their God accepted by all nations.

It was not God who facilitated their return from Babylonian exile, but the benevolence of a Persian ruler Cyrus who defeated Babylonian ruler in 539 BCE and allowed Israelites to return to their homeland.

On their return from exile in 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE, they sincerely believed in their imagined God and worshipped Him alone. However, their God could not prevent their further subjugation by Greeks, Romans, Muslims and finally the British for the next 2000 years.

It took Israelites 2000 years of subjugation to realize that it is not God who makes or unmakes a nation, but it is political will, appropriate political and economic policies, warfare strategy and use of science and technology that make or break a nation. Only with the help of these tools of knowledge, they could carve out their homeland as Israel in 1948. Today, more than half of Israelites do not believe in Judaic God and only 22% seriously do so.

## **Chapter 3**

### **Christianity**

#### **An Introduction**

Christianity is a religion based on the words and deeds of Jesus and his immediate followers as described in the Books of Bible's New Testament.

Jesus was born in a Jew family at Bethlehem, Israel and he lived from circa 6 BCE to circa 30 CE. New Testament, which is a collection of 27 Books, was written during the latter half of the 1<sup>st</sup> century CE by the followers of Jesus.

#### **Summary of the Books of New Testament:**

These Books describe the life, words and deeds of Jesus and his followers.

The 27 Books of New Testament are broadly divided into 5 sections:

#### **Gospels – 4:**

They are named Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. They give accounts of the birth, life, deeds, teachings, death and resurrection of Jesus.

#### **Acts – 1:**

This Book, written by Luke, is an account of the deeds of some followers, mainly Peter and Paul, to spread Christianity. It describes the beginning of the Church and its growth during the 1<sup>st</sup> century CE.

#### **Pauline Epistles – 13:**

These Books are named Romans, 1 Corinthians, 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1 Thessalonians, 2 Thessalonians, 1 Timothy, 2 Timothy, Titus and Philemon. These are letters written by Saint Paul or his followers to various churches teaching official Christian doctrines.

Out of 13 Books associated with Paul, 7 Books are clearly attributed to him. These 7 Books are – Romans, 1 Corinthians, 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Philippians, 1 Thessalonians and Philemon. The other 6 Books were written by Paul's followers in his name on the basis of some of Paul's letters which are no more available.

#### **General Epistles – 8:**

They are named Hebrews, James, 1 Peter, 2 Peter, 1 John, 2 John, 3 John and Jude. They are letters written by other Christian evangelists such as Peter and John with additional teachings. It is the same John

who wrote the Gospel John.

## **Apocalypse – 1:**

It is called Revelation written by the same author John. This Book prophesies the events that will occur in the end times.

## **Who wrote the Books of New Testament and when?**

There is still dispute about who wrote the Books of New Testament and when.

It is a historical fact that the Roman Empire destroyed the Jewish temple in 70 CE. Destruction of the temple was such a big tragic event in the Jewish life that it serves as a benchmark to date the books of New Testament.

This event does not find any mention in Paul's letters. Paul also does not quote any of the Gospels. So, Paul's (and his follower's) Letters, most probably written in 50's and early 60's of the 1<sup>st</sup> century CE, were among the first books of New Testament. Dates of composition of Pauline letters are based on other historical evidences also such as accession or death of kings of Roman Empire.

All the gospels, except John, mention the destruction of the Jewish temple. This proves that they were written after the event. But gospels cunningly mention the destruction of the temple in future tense by way of the "prophecy" made by Jesus. Thus, gospels must have been written in 70's.

Research has now proved that the four authors of gospels were not the first followers of Jesus, as previously believed; but rather unknown persons writing under these fake names to gain acceptability.

It is now also generally agreed that Mark was written first; Matthew and Luke were written next, as they quote profusely from Mark and another hypothetical Q document; and John was written last using a completely different set of testimonies.

Thus, according to the latest research, these Books were written by the authors in the chronological order noted below:

James – by James, Jesus' half-brother – in mid-40s CE

1 Thessalonians – by Paul – in 50-51 CE

2 Thessalonians – by a follower of Paul – in 50-51 CE

Galatians – by Paul – in 55 CE

1 Corinthians – by Paul – in 55 CE

2 Corinthians – by Paul – in 56 CE

Romans – by Paul – in 56 CE

Philemon -- by Paul – in 61-62 CE

Colossians --	by a follower of Paul – in 61-62 CE
Ephesians --	by a follower of Paul – in 61-62 CE
Acts --	by Luke – in 62 CE
Philippians --	by Paul – in 62 CE
1 Timothy --	by a follower of Paul – in 63-64 CE
Titus --	by a follower of Paul – in 63-64 CE
1 Peter --	by Peter – in 63-64 CE
2 Peter --	by Peter – in 65 CE
2 Timothy --	by a follower of Paul -- in 65 CE
Hebrews –	by an unknown author – in 68 CE
Jude –	by Jude, Jesus' half-brother – in late 60s-early 70s CE
<b>Mark --</b>	<b>by John Mark – in early 70s CE</b>
<b>Matthew --</b>	<b>by Matthew – in late 70s CE</b>
<b>Luke --</b>	<b>by Luke – in late 70s CE</b>
<b>John –</b>	<b>by John – in late 80s-early 90s CE</b>
1 John --	by John – in late 80s-early 90s CE
2 John --	by John – in late 80s-early 90s CE
3 John --	by John – in late 80s-early 90s CE
Revelation --	by John – in late 80s-early 90s CE

### **World-view of Christianity from the point of view of a devout Christian:**

Both Jews and Christians believe in the same God, same sequence of creation of the world; geocentric model of the universe; disobedience by Adam and Eve of God's command of not eating any fruit from the tree of knowledge of good and evil in heaven; expulsion of Adam and Eve from heaven by an angry God and humans thereafter becoming vulnerable to sin, disease, old age and death.

The divergence of beliefs between Christianity and Judaism happens when Christianity says that God loved humans and therefore did not want them to suffer indefinitely. So, He sent a part of Himself as Jesus on Earth to repent for the first sin (disobedience of God by Adam and Eve) on behalf of entire humanity. As a proof of this repentance, Jesus got himself crucified. Since Jesus was nothing but God in flesh, he resurrected after death and ascended back to heaven.

God has now therefore forgiven mankind, provided they acknowledge the sacrifice of Jesus as the

right act and repent for the sins they have committed. God also wants that humans should love each other in the same way God loves all humans.

As an expression of genuine repentance and love for all humans, a Christian must willingly live a life of self-denial renouncing all pleasures, luxuries, comforts, conveniences and selfishness. They should live a simple life. If they have anything – money, time, energy, knowledge – which is more than what is necessary to satisfy their bare needs, they should help the poor, weak, sick, ignorant or handicapped. That would be the expression of their love for humanity.

Once humans believe in the sacrifice of Jesus, repent, live a simple life, and help the poor, God would lovingly take them back into heaven, where they can once again enjoy His gracious proximity. Those who refuse to do so would however be condemned to eternal pain in hell.

### **A brief history of Christianity:**

In the beginning, Jesus had only a few followers. He however asked them to spread his teachings to the whole world. Christianity started spreading from the mid-first century CE in the neighboring areas.

During the life time of Jesus, almost the entire coastal area surrounding the Mediterranean Sea including Israel was under the Roman Empire under its first emperor Augustus, who was the adopted son and heir of Julius Caesar. Augustus reigned from 27 BCE to 14 CE. The next emperor during the life time of Jesus was Tiberius who ruled from 14 to 37 CE.

Early Christians suffered sporadic persecution within the Roman Empire due to their refusal to worship and sacrifice for Roman gods and the emperor.

It is said that, Constantine who ruled the Roman Empire from 307 to 337 CE, commanded his troops, before a decisive battle, to adorn their shields with the Christian symbol in accordance with a vision that he had had the night before. Luckily, he won the battle. This impressed him so much that he converted to Christianity. In 313, he issued the Edict of Milan, which officially legalized Christian worship in Roman Empire.

The conversion of Constantine to Christianity was a turning point for Christianity. After his victory, Constantine supported the Church financially, built various basilicas, granted exemption from certain taxes to clergy, promoted Christians to some high-ranking offices, and returned property confiscated during their persecution.

In 325, Constantine summoned the Council of Nicaea to settle the differences of Christianity. The Council approved that Jesus was an integral part of God without any beginning and disapproved the opposite view (called Arianism) which stated that Jesus was created by God out of nothing and thus had a beginning. The Council also decided when to celebrate Easter. The Council set a precedent to settle theological issues through such assemblies.

In 380 CE, Christianity became the official religion of Roman Empire during the reign of Theodosius I.

As Christianity became stronger with state support, it started punishing anyone holding a different view of Christian theology. This was called Inquisition. This was carried between 12th and 19th century. Millions of people, who refused to follow the official beliefs of Christianity, were jailed, tortured, burnt and put to death by church authorities with the royal support. Harassment and killing of witches was also a part of this process, as church authorities believed and propagated the view that bad weather, premature death, epidemics, bad crops etc were caused by witches, who are instigated by Satan.

Christianity split into **Roman Catholic** and **Eastern Orthodoxy** in 1054.

According to Roman Catholic, Salvation is through grace and sacraments; Holy Spirit proceeds from both God the Father and Jesus the Son; Pope is the head of church on Earth and infallible; and priests must be celibate.

According to Eastern Orthodoxy, Salvation is through faith and love; Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father alone; Pope is just like any other bishop and not infallible; priests may marry before ordination but not after.

Roman Catholic Church initiated expeditions against the enemies of Christianity, especially Muslims, between 11th and 16th centuries. These wars are known as Crusades. The aim of the Crusades was to take back Christian land, people and property, which Islamic imperialism had come to control. So, Crusaders tried to take back Jerusalem and Spain from Muslim rule. Crusades were also launched against pagans and heretics. All Crusades were aimed at establishing a world-wide Christian political regime under the direction of the Pope. Crusades in southern Spain, southern Italy, and Sicily eventually led to the end of Islamic rule in Europe. Christianity also expanded in Eastern Europe by subjugating Pagans.

As a result of the Islamic Ottoman conquest of the Christian Byzantine Empire in 1453, Christians of Turkey and the Middle East suffered a big setback. Christians were treated as second class citizens under Ottoman rule. Christian missionary work among Muslims was declared illegal and dangerous, whereas conversion to Islam was entirely legal. Converts to Islam who returned to Orthodoxy were put to death as apostates. No new churches could be built and even the ringing of church bells was prohibited. The Hagia Sophia and the Parthenon, which had been Christian churches for nearly a millennium, were converted into mosques. Violent persecutions of Christians were common, and reached their climax in the Armenian, Assyrian and Greek genocides.

A new European movement which challenged the supreme authority of the Roman Catholic Church started in 16th century under the leadership of Martin Luther, John Calvin, Ulrich Zwingli, John Knox and others. This became famous as **Protestant Reformation** or simply **Reformation**.

Protestants believed that Scripture (Bible) alone is authoritative, not the Pope; and only God's

grace received through faith in Christ can save humans from the bondage of sins, not any works. As a logical corollary, Protestants condemned Pope's assurance of reduction of punishments in this life or in purgatory in lieu of donations to the Church (called 'Indulgences'). Besides, contrary to the view of the Roman Catholic Church, Protestants believed that Pope is not infallible.

The three most important streams to emerge directly from the Protestant Reformation were the Lutheran, Reformed (Calvinist, Presbyterian etc.) and Anglican traditions.

However, the ultimate challenge to Christianity came from the European movement of 18th century, which is called **Enlightenment**. This movement was led by thinkers such as Voltaire, Rousseau, Montesquieu, Kant, Adam Smith, David Hume, Bentham etc.

Enlightenment repudiated the view of religions that knowledge of the world can be attained through direct revelation by God to certain selected individuals. These thinkers believed that knowledge is not given by God, but comes only from experience and observation guided by reason. Human aspirations, they believed, should not be centered on the next life, but rather on the means of improving this very life. Worldly happiness was placed before religious salvation. Enlightenment thus gave rise to humanism, democracy, science, technology and above all, the possibility of progress with human efforts.

The ideas of Enlightenment was facilitated by scientific advancements and discovery of contradictions within religions. Though science as a discipline was at first meant to be a study of God's Creation within Christian framework, eventually man's confidence began to overtake his need for assuming the existence of a God to explain natural events or morality. Now, science started criticizing Bible itself for its falsehoods, contradictions, immoralities and harmful effects. With the authority of God questioned, all the beliefs dependent on God – such as the supremacy of Papacy, monarchy, sin, miracles, resurrection of Jesus, sacraments etc started crumbling.

### **Christian population**

In 2012, the number of Christians were around 2.2 billion, constituting 32% of world population. Out of this, around 1 billion were Catholics, 800 million were Protestants and 260 million were Orthodox.

## Chapter 3 -- Christianity

### Sub-chapter 3A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity

##### Why doctrine of divine origin of Christianity is unacceptable

Devout Christians believe that the New Testament is nothing but the true description of the words and deeds of Jesus and his followers and that Jesus was the real Son of God sent to Earth by God Himself. They believe that God did this so that Jesus atones mankind's sin by martyring himself on their behalf. Since Jesus was the Son of God, whatever he said was absolutely true and whatever he did was absolutely good.

But there is a problem in this doctrine.

If New Testament is the true description of words of the Son of God, why are there so many falsehoods and contradictions there, as science has proved? I will discuss them in the **sub-chapter 3C** [Falsehood of Christianity]. There are several passages in New Testament where Jesus is saying something which is completely false.

How can this be?

Christianity has no answer to this. Hence, their doctrine of the divine origin of their religion is false.

But, if God is not behind the words and deeds of Jesus, what is?

To answer this question, we must understand the historical and religious background in which Jesus was born and lived, the problems which Jesus and his nation confronted and the solutions offered by him. This can be done by a critical and logical analysis of the content of New Testament as well as by relating it with regional politics affecting Jews during the times of Jesus.

##### Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity

In sub-chapter 2A [Scientific explanation of Judaism], we had seen how beliefs of Judaism had been deeply influenced by historical events affecting Israelites. The Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian and Persian rules over Israelites had played a critical role in shaping the fundamental beliefs of Judaism.

Jesus was born in a poor Jew family around 6 BCE. He died on cross in around 30 CE. His immediate followers were also Jews. It is they who first interpreted the teachings of Jesus and wrote the Books of the New Testament during the latter half of the 1<sup>st</sup> century CE.

So, we must examine historical events affecting pre-Jesus, Jesus and post-Jesus Israel. While examining this, we must identify those historical events which led to the birth of fundamental Christian ideas.

Fundamental ideas of Christianity can be broadly divided into 2 groups:

### **Group A**

**Ideas developed by Jesus himself**

### **Group B**

**Ideas developed by the followers of Jesus**

Let us discuss these two Groups of ideas one by one.

### **Group A**

**Ideas developed by Jesus himself**

This may be discussed under the following sub-heads:

**Political condition of Israelites between the Persian rule and crucifixion of Jesus**

**Dilemma before Jesus**

**How did Jesus resolve this dilemma?**

**1<sup>st</sup> doctrine of Jesus – the Kingdom of God is imminent**

**2<sup>nd</sup> doctrine of Jesus – he is the Messiah**

**3<sup>rd</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Universal unconditional love and repentance would bring the Kingdom of God on Earth**

**4<sup>th</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Only the poor can enter the Kingdom of God, not the rich**

**5<sup>th</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Do not resist evil**

**6<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Sexual pleasure is sinful**

**7<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Personal relationship should be sacrificed, if necessary, for the sake of better humanity**

**8<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Spread the message across the world without fear of persecution**

**The dreams of Jesus was shattered by his sudden execution**

Let me discuss these sub-heads one by one.

## **Political condition of Israelites between the Persian rule and crucifixion of Jesus**

### Greek Rule (331 – 110 BCE):

After the defeat of Persians by Alexander in 331 BCE, Israelites came under the Greek Rule. The Greeks desecrated the Jerusalem temple during the rule of Antiochus IV (215-164 BCE) causing the revolt of the Maccabees.

### Brief Judean autonomous period (110 BCE – 63 BCE):

On disintegration of Seleucid Empire, Hasmonian dynasty rulers of Judea became independent from 110 BC onwards. After Hasmonian dynasty, Herodian dynasty took over.

### Roman Rule (63 BCE – 364 CE):

Antipater I was the founder of the Herodian Dynasty. During his times, the Roman general Pompey conquered Judea in 63 BCE on behalf of Roman Republic. This was the time when Rome was ruled by Julius Caesar (100 BCE-44 BCE). Antipater I died in 43 BCE.

Herod (74-4 BCE), son of Antipater I, became the Roman client king of Judea in circa 40 BCE.

Herod spent lavish sums on his various building projects and generous gifts to other kingdoms, including Rome. Herod was responsible for the massive enlargement of the Jewish temple, a portion of which remains today as the Western Wall.

Herod was a ruthless king and he suppressed all opposition by brutal force.

### Jesus was born during Herod's time.

After Herod's death, his kingdom was divided among three of his sons by the Roman Emperor Augustus, as was called for by Herod's will. The Romans made Herod's son, Archelaus, ruler of Judea, Samaria and Idumea (biblical Edom) from 4 BCE to 6 CE. Archelaus was however judged incompetent by Augustus, the Roman Emperor. He therefore assigned Archelaus' territory to the then Roman Governor of Judea.

Judea was made a proper Roman province in 6 CE. List of the first 5 Roman Governors of Judea is as follows:

Coponius (6–9 CE), Marcus Ambivulus (9–12 CE), Annius Rufus (12–15 CE), Valerius Gratus (15–26 CE) and Pontius Pilate (26–36 CE).

They worked under the following Roman Emperors: Augustus (27 BCE – 14 CE) and Tiberius (14 CE – 37 CE).

### Jesus grew under these 5 Roman governors/2 Roman Emperors

Pontius Pilate, who was the fifth Roman Governor of Judaea, had served under Emperor Tiberius, and is best known from the biblical account for his orders of the trial and crucifixion of Jesus.

Jesus was crucified in circa 30 CE during the governorship of Pontius Pilate.

## **Dilemma before Jesus**

Jesus was born in a Jewish family – so he believed in the basics of Judaic world-view such as monotheism, sin committed by Adam and Eve, their expulsion from heaven by God, covenant of Israelites with God to follow God's commandments and the hope of a future God-guided regime in the entire world ushering in the era of peace and prosperity for all nations under the leadership of Jews.

When Israelites returned from the Babylonian exile, they completely abandoned polytheism and started practicing monotheism very sincerely. They also developed institutions to follow God's commandments – punishment for blasphemy, murder, adultery etc; circumcision; Sabbath and so forth.

Despite this, Israelites got humiliated and defeated by Greeks and Romans. Specially, Romans were extremely oppressive. They imposed excessive taxes, appropriated the power to appoint priests, made Jewish prisoners of war slaves and behaved with Jews harshly.

These adversities must have raised doubts in the minds of Israelites on the truth of their monotheistic world-view. They must have been tormented by the question: if our God exists, why did He not protect us from the Romans, especially when we were worshipping Him alone and following all His commandments?

Earlier, Israelites had developed an explanation why they had suffered exile at the hands of Babylonians. The cause, according to their belief, was polytheism. But no such explanation was available now, as they had become 100% monotheists. So, what caused their humiliation at the hands of Romans?

Jesus also must have faced the same dilemma.

## **How did Jesus resolve this dilemma?**

Being born and brought up as a Jew, Jesus had complete faith in the Jewish God. He had no doubts that God would provide justice to the Jews -- His chosen people and liberate them from the subjugation of the Romans too, just as He had liberated them from the yoke of Egyptians, Assyrians and Babylonians in the past.

Jesus must have already learnt about the Jewish golden era of the future envisaged in the Hebrew Bible. As explained earlier, this pinnacle of Jewish state had the following features:

The Jewish temple at Jerusalem will be rebuilt and all the Jews scattered around the world will finally come back to their homeland Israel. God, through His chosen Messiah, will then make Judaism acceptable by most nations and will rule over them spiritually and politically. Any nation still opposing or fighting Judaic forces will be defeated and subjugated by Israel and forced to send gifts of gold, silver, wood, cattle etc.

This theocratic rule will usher in a golden era of non-violent, sinless and just world, with everyone enjoying a peaceful and prosperous life. Under such a rule, conflicts and wars will completely stop. Israel will become the center of wisdom as well as a political and economic superpower. Israel will also adjudicate international disputes. Even predatory animals will become non-violent and eat only grass.

Expression of this aspirational vision of the future has been made in hundreds of verses in the Hebrew Bible such as in Isaiah 60:1-22; 2:1-4; 32:15-20; Zephaniah 3:9-20; Hosea 2:16-23; Amos 9:11-15; Micah 4:1-4; Zechariah 8:7, 12, 20-23, 14:9; Jeremiah 31:33-34, etc.

I have already discussed this in sub-chapter 2A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Judaism].

In order to solve the Jewish dilemma, Jesus made some astounding doctrines.

### **1<sup>st</sup> doctrine of Jesus – the Kingdom of God is imminent**

Remembering the ideal dream future Jewish state, Jesus came out with an innovative and bold solution to the Jewish dilemma. He declared that God had not abandoned Jews and He was going to establish the Messianic ideal rule within the lifetime of the present generation. Thus, Jesus assured Israelites that they need not lose hope, as God was going to destroy all the sinful regimes such as the Roman Empire and establish the ideal world kingdom led by Israel as envisaged in the Hebrew Bible within the life time of the present generation.

This solution was very bold and spontaneous.

Suppose your child does not perform well in a school test. What do you say to him? You would most probably say: “Dear, do not feel bad. Learn from your mistakes, work a little harder and in the next test, you are bound to come with flying colors.”

This is exactly what Jesus also intended to say to his countrymen. He in effect was saying: “My dear fellow countrymen, do not despair from the present Roman oppression. Learn from your past mistakes due to which God had to put you in this miserable condition; do what I, as a Messiah, tell you to do and soon God, as promised, will make Israel the super power spiritually, politically and economically. Israel was destined to rule the whole world including Romans giving people of all nations the gift of peace, prosperity and happiness. Hence, Israel is going to rise soon again.”

The concept of this dream Jewish state was old, but Jesus brought it right at the door step of Israelites by declaring that it was going to happen right in the life time of the present generation. This doctrine had the potential of giving people instant hope for an ideal Jewish life and hence energizing them in an unprecedented way.

Moreover, Jesus was attracted by this old Jewish ideal because it had the promise of ending all wars which had devastated Israel so many times in the past. It also had the promise to make Israel the leading nation of the world and making Jesus the leader of Israel.

Jesus called this ideal state the Kingdom of God or Kingdom of Heaven or simply Kingdom.

Matthew calls it the Kingdom of Heaven, while other gospels call it the Kingdom of God. All the three words are synonymous. The word 'Kingdom' appears 14 times in Mark, 50 times in Matthew, 39 times in Luke, and 5 times in John.

It is obvious that his Kingdom of God was a physical and political entity. It was supposed to be a real event in future. Only in this sense, we can understand the declaration of Jesus that the Kingdom of God will come during the life time of the present generation. If something is going to happen within my life time, it means it is going to happen right here on Earth. So, the Kingdom of God was not a metaphorical or spiritual state. It was not like the concept of heaven. It was a human religious-political event going to happen right here on Earth with Israel as its epicenter.

So, what is the difference between heaven and the Kingdom of God/Kingdom of heaven?

Heaven is the place where, according to Jesus, God lives. This is the place where all followers of Jesus will go after death. Those who live in heaven are always joyous, blissful and loving. Hell is the opposite of heaven, where people will be suffering and burning forever.

The Kingdom of God / the Kingdom of heaven, on the other hand, referred to a political kingdom on Earth, which was supposed to be ruled from Jerusalem by Jesus in future in accordance with the commandments of God. This is similar to the state imagined by the Hebrew Bible, though Jesus made significant changes in this concept, which we will discuss shortly. The purpose of this Kingdom was to provide a model Kingdom on Earth set up in the light of the teachings of Jesus so that the sceptics taste the greatness of his Kingdom and decide with full knowledge whether they want to follow Jesus or still reject him. This was to be the final place of teaching and the last opportunity for humans to decide whether they wanted to follow Jesus or reject him.

The difference between heaven and the Kingdom of heaven/Kingdom of God can be found in the following statement of Jesus:

Matthew 6.9-10:

*This, then, is how you should pray:*

*'Our Father in heaven,  
hallowed be your name,  
your kingdom come,  
yours will be done,  
on Earth as it is in heaven....'*

So, the Father / God sits in heaven while humans should aspire and strive to bring the Kingdom of God on Earth based on God's commandments. This Kingdom would be like a mini version of heaven on

Earth.

### All the synoptic gospels report this bold declaration of Jesus

The statement of Jesus that the Kingdom of God was very near was so bold, shocking and central of his teachings that it has been reported by all the three earlier gospels, known as Synoptic gospels. Let me quote from them:

Mark 1.14-15

*After John (the Baptist) was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the good news of God. “The time has come,” he said. “The kingdom of God has come near. Repent and believe the good news!”*

Mark 9.1

*And he said to them, “Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see that the kingdom of God has come with power.”*

Luke 9.27

*“Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God.”*

Luke 10.10-12

*But when you enter a town and are not welcomed, go into its streets and say, ‘Even the dust of your town we wipe from our feet is a warning to you. Yet be sure of this: The kingdom of God has come near.’ I tell you, it will be more bearable on that day for Sodom than for that town.*

Matthew 4.17

*From that time on Jesus began to preach, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near.”*

Matthew 10.23

*When you are persecuted in one place, flee to another. Truly I tell you, you will not finish going through the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.*

These passages prove that Jesus and his followers were absolutely confident that the Kingdom of God would be set up soon.

But on what basis, Jesus was so confident about the imminence of the Kingdom of God?

This question brings us to his second doctrine.

### **2<sup>nd</sup> doctrine of Jesus – he is the Messiah**

Jesus firmly believed that whatever happened in one's life, God was its cause. So, when he was pondering over the Jewish dilemma and came out with the solution described above, it must have struck

him that ‘it was God who was generating those thoughts in my mind’.

In fact, this appears to be the trend among all Bible writers. Whatever they thought, they believed that those thoughts were being generated by God. They did not understand how human brain functioned and how thoughts were produced by the brain. So, it appears that whenever they reflected on anything profound or ‘sacred’, they believed that their thoughts must have been produced by God.

Another possible cause of such a belief may be some dream dreamt by Jesus. He might have seen in a dream that God was appointing him the Messiah for Jews to bring on Earth the golden future of Judaism envisaged in Hebrew Bible. That dream thus might have made him believe that he was really a Messiah.

Whatever be the cause of this belief, once convinced, Jesus openly started proclaiming that he was the Messiah.

This is reported by gospels very clearly:

Mark 15.2

“Are you the king of the Jews?” asked Pilate.

“You have said so,” Jesus replied.

Luke 23.3 and Matthew 27.11 also say exactly the same.

However, Christians believe that it was not merely the imagination of Jesus that he was the Messiah. They believe that Jesus was really the Son of God and was sent to Earth by God for a specific purpose.

But if Jesus was really the son of an all-knowing God, he would not have made any statements, which turned out to be false. For example, his very claim that Kingdom of God would be coming within the lifetime of the generation he was addressing, turned out to be false. Moreover, if Jesus really was the Son of God and resurrected, why did he not appear before his followers ever since? If he could ‘appear before hundreds of his followers just after death’, he could have appeared a few times more between 2<sup>nd</sup> century CE and 21<sup>st</sup> century CE. That would have proved Christianity to be 100% true.

Christians also claim that the fact that Jesus did so many miracles also proves that he was the real Messiah sent by God.

But miracles are against natural laws – hence they are impossible to happen. Nature does not make any exception to any of its rule at any time anywhere.

If Jesus really had powers to do miracles, he could have and should have made miracles which could be verified by anyone. For example, he could have moved one of the Sinai Mountains to the middle of Rome so that the Roman emperor of his time and the rest of the world could see it and be awed by his power. That would have instantly proved beyond any doubt that he was the real Messiah. Then every

person of the world would have become his follower making his dream to bring Kingdom of God to Earth within his lifetime a reality.

In fact, miracles were attributed to Jesus after his death by his followers in order to make Christianity acceptable among the gullible masses. Gospels were written after about 40 years of the death of Jesus. So his followers had ample time to pass on fabricated stories and miracles from one person to another, each adding his own bits to make it spicier, before they were put down in words by some of his followers.

We will discuss these and several other false statements of Jesus in the next sub chapter. All these falsehoods disprove any claim that Jesus was really the Messiah or God's Son.

But could it not be that Jesus deliberately lied that he was the Messiah just to gain respect and popularity? It appears unlikely for two reasons:

First of all, he was born and brought up in the Jewish culture – so it is unlikely that he would have internally got rid of the entire Jewish world view and values, became an atheist/agnostic privately and decided to cheat people by lying that he was a Messiah.

Secondly, if he was a cheater, he would not have spoken at the time of his death words like "My God, My God, why have you forsaken me?" [Mark 15.33-34, Matthew 27.46]. Generally, at the time of crisis or death, people do not have the time to fabricate lies.

So, it is reasonable to conclude that Jesus somehow must have convinced himself to be the Messiah on the basis of certain thoughts /dreams which he interpreted (wrongly) as the message of God. Jesus sincerely believed that he was the Messiah and he really wanted to lift his countrymen out of their current period of despondency caused by the oppressive rule of Romans.

But how would he bring the Kingdom of God, even if he thought he was a Messiah? This brings us to his next doctrine.

### **3<sup>rd</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Universal unconditional love and repentance would bring the Kingdom of God on Earth**

Once convinced that he had been chosen by God to be the Messiah, Jesus started thinking on how to establish the Kingdom of God. Please remember that he was still laboring under the delusion that whatever thoughts were coming in his mind were being sent by God. Once such a delusion grips a person, he would naturally feel empowered because he can now reasonably expect that whatever he thinks is sanctioned by God, hence it is right and everyone must follow it.

While thinking on how to set up the Kingdom of God, Jesus must have noticed that in the ideal Jewish state, there is no conflict, violence or war. There is peace and prosperity everywhere. People of the entire world have voluntarily adopted Judaism as their religion.

Since universal peace and prosperity was the essence of the ideal Jewish state, Jesus must have thought that if everybody started practicing love, there will be peace everywhere; similarly if the rich shared their wealth equally with the poor, there will be prosperity everywhere. He must have thought that violence breeds violence and hatred generates hatred. So, universal peace could not be achieved by using force.

This argument led Jesus to believe that universal love would be the best means to achieve the goal of universal peace and prosperity, because love would not only end conflicts, it would also motivate people to share their wealth and knowledge with everyone.

This doctrine was radically different from the standard Jewish doctrine, which justified conquest of the world by military power with the help of God. Jesus replaced military conquest by universal love.

This is why Jesus says:

Matthew 22.35-40

*One of them, an expert in the law, tested him with this question: “Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?”*

*Jesus replied: “‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments.”*

Mark 12.28-31 and Luke 10.26-37 also say exactly the same thing.

Had Jesus been following the conventional Jewish method expressed in Hebrew Bible, he would have thought of raising an army, driving out the Romans from Judea/Palestine, defeating the Roman Empire, establishing a Jewish theocratic kingdom and bringing all the nations of the world under his theocratic regime on the strength of his army. While doing this, he would have kept thinking God was helping him. Had he succeeded in doing that, he would have been undoubtedly declared a Messiah by all the Jews and the entire world would have accepted Jewish God as the only true God. But that did not happen.

The genius of Jesus lies in breaking a completely new path – the path of universal love to reach the goal of universal peace and prosperity. It sounds logical. Is not it?

However, Jesus also believed that Adam and Eve had sinned by disobeying God. So, he made repentance a necessary condition for being entitled to enter Kingdom of God. This was in addition to the condition of loving God and all fellow humans.

When one is in the mode of repentance, one does not enjoy any normal pleasure. This is one of the reasons why Jesus is against pleasures of riches and sex.

So, Jesus started preaching universal love and repentance. Since love always forgives, he also started teaching forgiveness. Since love shares equally, he started preaching helping the poor, weak and sick.

However, something strange happened.

His teachings attracted only the poor and the sick. His followers were mainly fishermen, carpenters, manual farm laborers, prostitutes and the like. The rich completely ignored him. The politically powerful Romans, their officials and the priests became even hostile to him. Jesus had not expected this.

But there was a reason behind this situation. The poor got attracted to Jesus because they needed emotional and material support from him. They believed that Jesus was the Messiah and could help them live a better life by his divine blessings. The rich needed no such favor. On the contrary, they must have thought ill of Jesus because they suspected that he was instigating the poor against them. The ruling elites – Romans and priests – must have smelled political ambition in Jesus in his political concept of the Kingdom of God.

These developments must have forced Jesus to conclude that only the poor could be loving, the rich were not capable of loving at all. He must have concluded that the poor were always humble, helpful and compassionate, while the rich were always arrogant, indifferent and harsh. This thought must have made him permanently prejudiced against the rich.

This led to his next doctrine.

#### **4<sup>th</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Only the poor can enter the Kingdom of God, not the rich**

So, Jesus decided to glorify the poor and condemn the rich.

There are hundreds of passages in the Hebrew Bible where it has been taught by ‘God/His prophets’ that the poor should be helped and treated fairly. But there is not a single passage in the Hebrew Bible which says that only the poor will enter heaven and the rich can’t.

This was again a unique doctrine of Jesus. He is the first person in human history who offered spiritual goodies only to the poor and denied it to the rich.

However, he offered a way out for the rich – if they wanted to enter the Kingdom of God, they must distribute whatever they have to the poor and become poor. Then, they too would be admitted and respected in the Kingdom of God and subsequently allowed entry into heaven after death.

Thus Jesus hoped that his ideal of universal love coupled with living in the mode of repentance would transform everyone on Earth for the better, make them more like God and thus he would be able to set up a worldwide Kingdom of God.

Jesus must have thought that he would be able to set up the Kingdom of God on Earth very soon in his own life time of 50-60 years.

So, the Kingdom of God Jesus hoped to rule was essentially a communist state (minus violence and materialism) with equal prosperity/poverty for all under the ‘equal blessing of God’.

Jesus did not explicitly elaborate on these political-economic ideals because of security reasons. He knew that if he openly campaigned for a global political regime under his Kingship, Romans would consider him their rival and crush him in no time.

Jesus therefore goes all out to glorify the poor.

See what he is saying about the poor and the rich:

Mark 8.34-35

*Then he called the crowd to him along with his disciples and said: “Whoever wants to be my disciple must deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. For whoever wants to save their life will lose it, but whoever loses their life for me and for the gospel will save it.*

Mark 10.29-31

*“Truly I tell you,” Jesus replied, “no one who has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for me and the gospel will fail to receive a hundred times as much in this present age: homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children and fields—along with persecutions—and in the age to come eternal life. But many who are first will be last, and the last first.”*

Luke 6.20-21

*Looking at his disciples, he said:*

*“Blessed are you who are poor,  
for yours is the kingdom of God.*

*Blessed are you who hunger now,  
for you will be satisfied.*

*Blessed are you who weep now,  
for you will laugh....”*

Luke 6. 24-25

*“But woe to you who are rich,  
for you have already received your comfort.*

*Woe to you who are well fed now,  
for you will go hungry.*

*Woe to you who laugh now,  
for you will mourn and weep...”*

Matthew 6.19-20

*“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on Earth, where moths and vermin destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moths and vermin do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal.*

Matthew 6.24

*No one can serve two masters. Either you will hate the one and love the other, or you will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money.*

Jesus promised for the poor a golden future not only for the next world, but also in the present world. He assured them that God will take care of their basic necessities like food, clothes etc., if they have full faith in Him. He says:

Luke 12.22-24

*Then Jesus said to his disciples: “Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; or about your body, what you will wear. For life is more than food, and the body more than clothes. Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them. And how much more valuable you are than birds!*

John 16.23-24

*Very truly I tell you, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete.*

Jesus however realized that mere promise of the Kingdom of God for the poor may not be enough to gain their support. They would like to better their present life too. So he devised an ingenious way: he started preaching that if the rich give away all their wealth to the poor, they too would be welcome as a citizen of the Kingdom of God and subsequently after their death, they would be allowed to enter heaven.

This strategy gained him instant support of the poor. The poor liked it because now they could hope to get real financial help from the rich. Some of the rich also liked it because now they hoped that they too could enjoy the Kingdom of God by offering help to the poor.

See How Jesus appreciates helping the poor:

Luke 18.22-25

*When Jesus heard this, he said to him, “You still lack one thing. Sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.”*

*When he heard this, he became very sad, because he was very wealthy. Jesus looked at him and said, “How hard it is for the rich to enter the kingdom of God! Indeed, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for someone who is rich to enter the kingdom of God.”*

Matthew 25.34-36

*“Then the King will say to those on his right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.’*

### **5<sup>th</sup> doctrine of Jesus – Do not resist evil**

The path of universal unconditional love was, according to Jesus, essential to attain the state of peace and prosperity of the Kingdom of God. However, following this path logically implies that one should not hurt anyone, whatever be the circumstances and whoever is hurting. If I love everyone as passionately as I love myself, naturally I would not want to hurt anyone, just as I do not hurt myself.

So, Jesus boldly follows his own doctrine of universal love to its logical end. He teaches not to retaliate, not to get angry, and not to hurt anyone even after getting hurt. He preaches that one should not resist evil, rather one should surrender before the evil.

This is what he says:

Luke 6.29-30

*If someone slaps you on one cheek, turn to them the other also. If someone takes your coat, do not withhold your shirt from them. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back.*

In fact, Jesus went one step further. He asked even to love one's enemies:

Luke 6.35-36

*But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be children of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.*

Matthew 5.39

*But I tell you, do not resist an evil person. If anyone slaps you on the right cheek, turn to them the other cheek also.*

Matthew 5.43-46

*“You have heard that it was said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you, love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be children of your Father in heaven. He causes his Sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that?*

The ideal of Jesus – do not resist the evil – was one of his most radical doctrines. Judaism had always preached an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. It always justified revenge to protect social order and the interests of Israelites.

Leviticus 24.17-20 says:

*Anyone who takes the life of a human being is to be put to death. Anyone who takes the life of someone's animal must make restitution -- life for life. Anyone who injures their neighbor is to be injured in the same manner: fracture for fracture, eye for eye, and tooth for tooth. The one who has inflicted the injury must suffer the same injury.*

But Jesus fundamentally changed this Jewish doctrine.

We will discuss the harmful effect of this doctrine of Jesus in detail in sub chapter 3E [Harmful effects of Christianity].

### **6<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Sexual pleasure is sinful**

Jesus believed that humans in the form of Adam and Eve had committed sin by disobeying God. So, humans must repent this misdeed. While we repent, we cannot and should not enjoy the pleasures of life. So, Jesus was not only against wealth, but also against sexual pleasures. For him, God had given the sexual powers only to reproduce, not to indulge in pleasure. So, one must love God and God only in order to be forgiven for the original sin. Love for anything else including sexual pleasures is sinful. He says:

Matthew 23.25

*How terrible it will be for you legal experts and Pharisees! Hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and plate, but inside they are full of violence and pleasure seeking.*

Once sexual pleasure was condemned, it was only the next logical step for Christianity to condemn pre-marital sex, masturbation, prostitution, homosexuality, divorce, remarriage, use of contraceptives for birth control, abortion etc.

### **7<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Personal relationship should be sacrificed, if necessary, for the sake of better humanity**

Jesus says:

Luke 14.26

*If anyone comes to me and does not hate father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters—yes, even their own life—such a person cannot be my disciple.*

Matthew 10.37

*Anyone who loves their father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves their son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.*

Jesus realized that the biggest stumbling block in the way of universal love (and therefore making of Kingdom of God) is the bond of the family. Family attachments and responsibilities prevent people from going all out to do something great for the world. Jesus was aiming at bringing about the Kingdom of God for the entire humanity. This was not possible without people's active participation, which in turn was not possible unless people sacrificed family attachments and responsibilities. This is why he asks his followers to be exclusively committed to the goal set by him.

### **8<sup>th</sup> doctrine – Spread the message across the world without fear of persecution**

Judaism never proactively attempted to spread its world-view across the world. So, one was either born as a Jew or would be a non-Jew. There was no way a non-Jew could become a Jew. Jesus broke this tradition and asked his followers to spread his message of the Kingdom of God and universal love to all people across the world. This was the first globalization of a religion.

He knew that his ideas were so radical that Jews and Romans would never like it and will persecute his followers. So he said:

Matthew 5.10

*Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*

Matthew 24.9

*Then you will be handed over to be persecuted and put to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of me.*

Luke 21.12

*But before all this, they will seize you and persecute you. They will hand you over to synagogues and put you in prison, and you will be brought before kings and governors, and all on account of my name.*

### **The dreams of Jesus was however shattered by his sudden death**

Jesus sincerely believed that he was the chosen Messiah and with the help of God was soon going to establish the Kingdom of God within his own life span (i.e., within next 10-20 years). But when Romans and their allies – the priests – found out his political ambition and his claim that he was the Son of God and Messiah, they naturally got very alarmed and angry. The priests thought that Jesus had committed blasphemy by declaring that he was the Son of God, as God is one and indivisible – so He does not have any Son. Naturally, they got Jesus arrested and managed to get him executed.

Jesus had never expected such a sudden tragic turn of events. He was dreaming about his sweet kingship and was busy campaigning for it. His followers were spreading the message far and wide. His project was going on smoothly. But suddenly, his whole world turned upside down.

Death is the time of extreme stress. So, normally people become panicky and nervous when they know that death is imminent and certain. Jesus was no exception. Till he was arrested and sentenced to death, he was living under the belief that God would always protect him and make him the future premier of the Kingdom of God.

However, he must have only one basic fear: what if his belief that 'he had been chosen as the Messiah by God' was his own imagination and turned out to be false?

With the imminent certainty of crucifixion, his belief in God and his being the Messiah got completely shattered. This is proved by what the Gospels report Jesus saying at the time of death:

*"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"* [Mark 15.33-34]

*"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"* [Matthew 27.46]

*"Father, into your hands I commit my spirit."* [Luke 23.46]

*"It is finished."* [John 19.30]

Though there is no unanimity among gospel writers about what Jesus actually said at the time of death, but out of 4, two of them (Mark and Matthew) clearly report that Jesus suddenly realized that God had forsaken him. This means Jesus's worst fears had come true. Jesus now had to face the truth that he was not the Messiah and God was not protecting him. This is why he was surprised: *"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"*

It is also possible that he still believed that he was the Messiah but due to some deficiency in his conduct, God had forsaken him.

But either way, Jesus came to the conclusion that God had abandoned him.

These words clearly prove that Jesus was not expecting death in this way at all. His bitterness about this humiliating way to death clearly points to his sweet ambition of ruling the Kingdom of God in near future.

The last words of Jesus mentioned in John's gospel -- *"It is finished"* -- may also be interpreted on similar lines. Jesus realized that his dream, his project to set up the Kingdom of God is ruined or finished. There was now no hope – everything is gone and finished.

The above analysis also proves that the so-called prediction by Jesus of his own death as reported in the gospels must be later fabrications by his followers. If Jesus really knew when and how he was going to die, there was no reason for him to be surprised, disappointed or be bitter. His words *"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"* display surprise, despair and bitterness.

These words also falsify the central Christian belief: the birth, mission and martyrship of Jesus was God's plan to forgive humans for their sin.

Had it been so, Jesus would not have been surprised or become bitter at the time of his death.

Rather, he would have said something like this:

*“Dear Father, I have completed your assigned mission of making humans aware of their sin.*

*Today I have arranged for my death to symbolize repentance on behalf of humanity for their sin. The mission would be accomplished as soon as I die. Soon, I will rise to be back in your graceful company. I am so happy today!”*

However, no book of the New Testament has reported this sort of statements.

Once Jesus was executed, mainstream Jews straightway rejected his claim that he was the Messiah. They rightly believed that their Bible had clearly laid down that the Messiah was he who was supposed to make Israel the only spiritual, political and economic super power of the world ruling all nations in accordance with the commandments of God and bringing an end to all types of violence. They argued that since Jesus had clearly failed to achieve this goal, he could not be the Messiah.

## **Group B**

### **Ideas developed by the followers of Jesus**

After death of Jesus, it was his followers who developed the remaining doctrines of Christianity.

Main doctrines of Christianity, as developed by the followers, may be summarized as follows:

**1. After crucifixion, Jesus resurrected, interacted with his followers and finally ascended to heaven**

**2. Jesus was the Son of God and willingly martyred himself to repent on behalf of humanity for the original sin**

**3. Jesus will come back again from heaven to establish the Kingdom of God**

**4. God has made Heaven for rewarding the followers of Jesus and Hell for punishing non-followers**

**5. Jesus performed miracles, as he was the Son of God**

**6. Jesus was born from Virgin Mary**

Let me discuss these doctrines one by one.

**1. After crucifixion, Jesus resurrected, interacted with his followers and finally ascended to heaven**

The followers of Jesus had never thought that Jesus would be arrested and put to death so suddenly. They were under the impression that Jesus was under constant protection of God and hence nobody could

kill him against his will; if he had died, he must have done so willingly to achieve some purpose.

The sudden crucifixion of Jesus left these followers disoriented. They could not imagine how their dear Messiah who had promised the Kingdom of God within their lifetime could leave them so suddenly. So, they refused to accept that he was no more. They wanted to believe that their Messiah must be around them in some spiritual form. They believed it so strongly that a few of them must have started seeing Jesus in dreams in which Jesus must be assuring them that he was very much alive in spiritual form and still very much concerned with their well-being!

Imagine a mother who lost her 10-year old child in an accident. Is it not natural for her to see the child in her dream as a normal playing child, not as dead? Similar things must have happened with the followers of Jesus. Some of the disciples must have started dreaming or hallucinating about him. This was the beginning of the belief in the Resurrection of Jesus.

These emotionally unstable followers must have interpreted such dreams/hallucinations as resurrection of Jesus. Then they must have started telling their friends about this exotic event. Those friends must have told their friends about this event with their own add-ons. Soon, the story would have spread all over with additions, alternations and embellishments. Gradually, the belief in resurrection of Jesus, his spirit's interaction with followers and ascent to heaven got embedded in their world-view.

This line of argument is not just my wild guess, but this is what is revealed on close study of the books of New Testament itself.

Scholars agree that Paul's letters were written in 50's and 60's, while gospels were written between 70's and 90's. Jesus had died sometime in 30's.

The first opinion about the resurrection of Jesus among his followers is reflected in Paul's letter in 1 Corinthians 15, where Paul believes that Jesus must be alive in some spiritual form, not in the form of physical body. He says:

*42 So will it be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable ...*

*50 I declare to you, brothers and sisters, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.*

Paul must be reflecting the opinion of the followers of his time that Jesus was alive in some spiritual form only.

Let us now go to the earliest gospel – Mark. It, in its original manuscript, ended with the following remarks (16.5-8):

*5 As they entered the tomb, they saw a young man dressed in a white robe sitting on the right side, and they were alarmed.*

**6** “Don’t be alarmed,” he said. “You are looking for Jesus the Nazarene, who was crucified. He has risen! He is not here. See the place where they laid him. **7** But go, tell his disciples and Peter, ‘He is going ahead of you into Galilee. There you will see him, just as he told you.’”

**8** Trembling and bewildered, the women went out and fled from the tomb. They said nothing to anyone, because they were afraid.

The words of Mark may be interpreted as “Jesus had risen in spiritual form and hence he was not there in the tomb”. Moreover, Mark makes no mention of Jesus appearing before his followers or asking them to touch his body, as we find in later gospels.

This must obviously be unsettling; so Church authorities’ added verses 9 to 20 in the chapter 16 of Mark giving details of how Jesus appeared in the physical form, whom he met and what he said to them etc. This fact is admitted by them when they add the following words at the end of Mark 16.8:

*The earliest manuscripts and some other ancient witnesses do not have verses 9–20.*

As we move on to the next gospel Matthew, the story starts becoming more embellished. Now, an earthquake comes, an angel appears in the tomb and talks to the ladies. Matthew 28.2-4 says:

**2** There was a violent earthquake, for an angel of the Lord came down from heaven and, going to the tomb, rolled back the stone and sat on it. **3** His appearance was like lightning, and his clothes were white as snow. **4** The guards were so afraid of him that they shook and became like dead men.

Matthew also describes the appearance of Jesus in physical form before the ladies in Jerusalem and some of his followers in Galilee and also talking to them.

The next gospel Luke adds more spices in the story. He declares that **two** men appeared in the tomb (in place of **one** as mentioned by Mark and Matthew). Luke makes Jesus appear not only in full bodily form but also makes him ask his followers to touch him to remove their doubts about his physical presence! Jesus also eats bread and fish with the followers. Moreover, while the previous gospels had stated that Jesus would appear in Galilee, Luke makes Jesus appear only in Jerusalem, which was a more populous and prestigious town.

Luke 24 says:

**4** While they were wondering about this, suddenly two men in clothes that gleamed like lightning stood beside them.

**39** Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch me and see; a ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have.”

**40** When he had said this, he showed them his hands and feet. **41** And while they still did not

believe it because of joy and amazement, he asked them, “Do you have anything here to eat?” <sup>42</sup> They gave him a piece of broiled fish, <sup>43</sup> and he took it and ate it in their presence.

Finally, when we come to John, the story has been embellished to the fullest extent possible. Now, in place of **2 men** of Luke, **2 angels** appear; now Jesus asks the followers to touch even his wounds! John gives much more details of his physical appearance.

**John 20** says:

**11** Now Mary stood outside the tomb crying. As she wept, she bent over to look into the tomb <sup>12</sup> and saw two angels in white, seated where Jesus’ body had been, one at the head and the other at the foot.

**27** Then he said to Thomas, “Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe.”

The above description clearly proves how the story was gradually built up by writers of New Testament about the physical resurrection of Jesus: From one man appearing in the tomb, it became one angel, then 2 men, and then 2 angels! From appearance in Galilee, it shifted to appearance in Jerusalem! From just mention of rising from tomb, Jesus was made to eat fish and ask followers to touch him!

Now, let us see the impossibility of physical resurrection from the scientific and historical points of view.

Scientifically, it is impossible to explain how a corpse can become alive on its own. Not a single example has been found to the contrary. Nature does not make any exception. So, Christians will have to give an extraordinarily strong proof in support of their claim of exception to the rule.

Historically also, this claim is untenable. If physical resurrection of Jesus had taken place, it would have definitely been mentioned by the non-Christian historians of the 1<sup>st</sup> or early 2<sup>nd</sup> century CE, given the massive significance of the event. But no such historical account has been found.

Secondly, if Jesus had really resurrected physically, he should have appeared before the Roman Emperor Tiberius or the then Roman Governor of Judea - Pontius Pilate (who had ordered his crucifixion) and said something like this:

“Hey, you wanted to kill me? Look, I am back again fully alive. Now, you know who I am? I am the Son of God carrying the message of God for the whole humanity. You, men of little faith, do you not know the power of God and His Son? Your power is nothing before divine power. Now, have faith. Repent and accept me as the Son of God and your leader. I forgive you for your sin.”

Had Jesus done that, it would have been a 100% proof that Jesus resurrected. Then the entire Roman Empire and after that, the rest of the world would have voluntarily embraced Christianity as the

only true religion. Then, the mission of Jesus would have been completed and he would have been able to establish the Kingdom of God on Earth without further labor and without any risk of prosecution. But nothing of that sort happened at all!

Besides, what prevents Jesus even now from appearing before the world, say before any General Assembly or Security Council meeting of the UN and declare his power of resurrection and divine mandate?

These arguments clearly prove that resurrection of Jesus is nothing but a manufactured concept. Hence, it is completely false.

## **2. Jesus was the Son of God and willingly martyred himself to repent on behalf of humanity for the original sin**

The immediate followers of Jesus persuaded themselves that Jesus must have chosen his death willingly to fulfil some purpose. So, it became logically necessary to find out /invent that purpose. This task was difficult because Jesus himself was not known to have said anything about the “purpose” behind his “deliberate choice of getting himself executed”.

The followers must have thought that the purpose ascribed to Jesus must be in harmony with Jesus’s life and his teachings. The best candidate found to foot this bill was ‘repentance for sin’. The Hebrew Bible had started the story of sin committed by Adam and Eve, Jesus mentioned about it in his teachings and it was in alignment with his teachings of self-suffering on face of evil as well as his teachings of universal love. Indeed, if you love everyone like yourself, you would not commit any sin against anyone and if any of them commits any sin against you and asks for forgiveness, you would readily forgive.

So, Christians made the story: Jesus was part of God; he was rather Son of God; Adam-Eve committed sin; the nature of humans became sinful; humans started sinning; everyone started suffering disease, pain and death due to committing sin; God loved humans; he took pity on them and sent his Son Jesus to Earth so that he could make humans aware of their sin; humans needed to repent for their sins – the first sin as well as subsequent sins; Jesus decided to sacrifice himself to atone the sins of all humans; he arranged to get himself crucified; he then rose up, met some of the followers and went back to heaven to be with his Father.

This then became the most central doctrine of Christianity.

## **3. Jesus will come back again from heaven to establish the Kingdom of God**

Jesus had initially predicted that the Kingdom of God was going to be realized within his life time. Now, that Jesus was no more and his prediction had turned out to be false, Christians tried to conceal this falsehood by saying that Jesus will be coming very soon from heaven in the clouds with great glory and power to set up this Kingdom.

Gospels therefore put the following words in the mouth of Jesus:

Mark 13.26, 30-31

*At that time people will see the Son of Man coming in clouds with great power and glory. ....*

*Truly I tell you, this generation will certainly not pass away until all these things have happened. Heaven and Earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.*

Matthew 24.30-35 and Luke 21.27-33 too say exactly the same thing.

Notice the shift: these same gospels were boldly declaring till yesterday that the Kingdom of God would be set up by Jesus during his own life time. Now, they are saying that Jesus will come from heaven on clouds to perform this task.

If the Kingdom of God was to take place during the lifetime of the generation Jesus was addressing, obviously there should be no question of Jesus first dying, then going to heaven and then coming back again on the clouds in some radiant supernatural body with all glory and power to set up the Kingdom of God on Earth. So, why are the synoptic gospels contradicting themselves?

What must have happened is this: when the prediction of Jesus that the Kingdom of God will be happening during the lifetime of the present generation failed to materialize till his death, his followers had two options: either they abandon their faith in Jesus being the Messiah for having told a lie (as Jews did), or they find out some other ways to interpret the prediction of Jesus. They chose the latter option.

The average life span of the people during the time of Jesus was probably around 50-60 years. So, from the time of the death of Jesus at the age of around 35 years till next 20-30 years, these followers still had the hope that somehow Jesus will come back from heaven in a supernatural body on clouds. Hence, these beliefs got their way to the synoptic gospels composed in early 70s CE. However, these gospel writers did not dare to delete the original prediction of Jesus, which must have been authenticated by first-hand witnesses. Hence, the contradiction.

However, when the first generation completely passed away by 70s, the followers lost their hope of the Kingdom coming anytime soon. Hence, the gospel of John, written in late 80s – early 90s by some second generation follower openly repudiated the original stand. It rather declared that the Kingdom of God can be entered only after death and resurrection:

John 3.3

*Jesus replied, “Very truly I tell you, no one can see the kingdom of God unless they are born again.”*

Jesus did not believe in rebirth. So in what sense, is he using the word “born again”? He must have meant the rise of his followers’ soul in heaven.

So, the Kingdom of God was first stated to take place on earth within the life time of the present generation; then it was stated to take place when Jesus would return from heaven in some super natural body; then finally it was stated that it would happen only when the pious soul is raised in heaven!

Obviously, Christians were fabricating story after story to protect Jesus from the allegation of having told a lie about the time when the Kingdom of God would happen!

#### **4. God has made Heaven for rewarding the followers of Jesus and Hell for punishing non-followers**

Jews initially did not have any clear idea of heaven and hell where souls are supposed to go after death. The main narrative of the Hebrew Bible is not attainment of heaven, but taking revenge against Babylonian and Assyrian rulers and dreaming about setting up of a theocratic Israeli world empire in future under the guidance of God, bringing an end to war, reconstructing the Jewish temple at Jerusalem and bringing all the Jews back to Israel.

Jesus, brought up in this Jewish milieu, too was initially striving for that sort of earthly empire, though in his own non-violent way.

With sudden crucifixion, his entire project collapsed. Now, no earthly empire was possible under his leadership.

So his followers started changing the concept from earthly kingdom to a spiritual kingdom called heaven. In heaven, Jesus would rule under the guidance of God. So all those who were following the teachings of Jesus would now go to heaven to enjoy its luxuries as well as love of Jesus and God.

This transformation became complete by the time the Gospel of John was written. So the Gospel of John keeps on emphasizing the divinity of Jesus by making him part of God (not just his representative on Earth) and makes heaven his and God's abode.

See some of the passages of John's Gospel, the kind of which are absent in the earlier three Gospels:

John 7.28-29

*Then Jesus, still teaching in the temple courts, cried out, “Yes, you know me, and you know where I am from. I am not here on my own authority, but he who sent me is true. You do not know him, but I know him because I am from him and he sent me.”*

John 10.30, 10.38

*I and the Father are one.*

*But if I do them, even though you do not believe me, believe the works that you may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in the Father.*

*My Father's house has many rooms; if that were not so, would I have told you that I am going there to prepare a place for you? And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am. You know the way to the place where I am going.*

*Thomas said to him, "Lord, we don't know where you are going, so how can we know the way?"*

*Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you really know me, you will know my Father as well. From now on, you do know him and have seen him."*

So, Christians made heaven the place where after death, all of them will go and enjoy the love of Jesus and God forever, while all non-Christians will go to hell, where they will be burnt forever!

## **5. Jesus performed miracles, as he was the Son of God**

Jesus was an intelligent strategist. He knew that in order to make his project of setting up the Kingdom of God on earth successful, he needed to convince people that he was God's man. So, apart from offering goodies such as special access to Kingdom of God / heaven by the poor, he must have decided to perform miracles, which, he believed, would make people think that he was divine.

But miracles cannot and do not happen – nature does not make any exception of its rule for any person. Nobody, for example, can walk on water, because that would be against the law of gravitation and friction. Nobody can raise the dead, because it would be against the way a biological system works. Nobody can turn water into wine, because the chemical compositions of water and wine are totally different. And so on.

So, how could Jesus 'perform the miracles' as reported by the Gospels?

Jesus sincerely believed that God protected and guided him. So, he also must have believed that if he prayed to God for healing someone, God would heal that person. This belief must have motivated him to attempt to cure the sick by blessing them.

Sometimes blessing the sick by a person believed to have healing powers may cure the sick due to a factor we now know as **placebo effect**.

Placebo effect is a well-known scientific fact according to which an inert or innocuous substance is given to a patient under the pretext that it is a medicine in order to trigger a mental process in the patient releasing certain hormones which may heal him. There are several documented cases in which people have been cured by the placebo effect. This happens because when mind is in a relaxed, optimistic and positive state, it releases certain hormones, which have beneficial effect on the body. It does not work in 100% cases; but it does work sometimes with some people.

So, under this placebo effect, by simply believing that one would get cured if blessed by Jesus; some sick people may have really got cured when Jesus blessed them. Here the blessing became the substitute medicine.

Now, suppose there were 10 sick people Jesus came across and he blessed all of them to get cured. Even if one of them got cured due to placebo effect, he would be very happy and tell about this ‘miracle’ to 20 other people, who in turn will tell another 30 people and so on. So, this ‘miracle of Jesus’ would spread far and wide motivating more people to come to Jesus to receive his blessings. Again, some would get cured due to placebo effect and they, in turn, would again tell others about the ‘healing power of Jesus’.

Those who did not get cured might have thought that perhaps their sin was too grave – hence the blessing did not work. So, they would not propagate their failed examples to save themselves from ridicule.

This way, even though just 1% people finally got cured due to placebo effect, a vast majority would believe that Jesus had the powers to do miracles!

This is how rumors about the powers of Jesus to do miracles must have spread. Gradually, these stories were retold again and again, with each devout follower adding his own spices and they finally ended up getting compiled in the Gospels after about 40 years of the death of Jesus in the form of well-embellished and gigantic miracles!

## **6. Jesus was born from Virgin Mary**

Once the myth that Jesus had been sent by God to atone the sins of humanity was embedded in the Christian mind, the next logical step was to declare that Jesus could not have been born as a normal person. The argument leading to this conclusion would have been something like this:

The entire human race is sinful. So, anyone born as a normal human is also sinful. A sinful person cannot redeem other’s sins. Jesus is divine and sinless, because God had sent him to redeem humanity from its sin. Hence, he could not have been born as a normal human. So, special arrangements must have been made by God for the birth of Jesus. So, God must have sent Holy Spirit to impregnate Mary through some non-sexual process. Hence, Mary must be a virgin mother even though she gave birth of Jesus.

To sum up:

The entire Christianity from A to Z is a complex web of falsehood, lies and myths. Some were developed by Jesus himself. He sincerely believed that he was a Messiah and was guided by God. His followers created the rest of the story. We will examine the falsehood of all these Christian beliefs and more in sub-chapter 3C [Falsehood of Christianity].

# Chapter 3 -- Christianity

## Sub-chapter 3B

### Political & Economic Implications of Christianity

Any belief system trying to explain the world in most fundamental terms would be logically implying certain values most desirable for humans. These values and beliefs in turn would imply a particular type of political and economic system, which would be most suitable for the realization of those values. So, what political and economic system Christianity implies?

#### Political implications of Christianity -- Theocracy

According to Christianity, God is the supreme authority deciding all the affairs of humans. It is God who makes and unmakes a king according to His judgement on the conduct of a person. So, Christianity propounds a theocratic political system.

See some of the passages of New Testament in which God has been shown as the maker and unmaker of kings:

Luke 1.52-53

*He has brought down rulers from their thrones*

*but has lifted up the humble.*

*He has filled the hungry with good things*

*but has sent the rich away empty.*

Acts 13.20-22

*After this, God gave them judges until the time of Samuel the prophet. Then the people asked for a king, and he gave them Saul son of Kish, of the tribe of Benjamin, who ruled forty years. After removing Saul, he made David their king. God testified concerning him: 'I have found David son of Jesse, a man after my own heart; he will do everything I want him to do.'*

Revelation 20.4-5

*I saw thrones on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony about Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshiped the beast or its image and had not received its mark on their foreheads or their hands. They came to life and reigned with Christ a thousand years. (The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.)*

Romans 13:1

*Let everyone be subject to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God.*

As these passages show and as I have discussed in the previous sub-chapter, Christianity is nothing but a philosophical attempt to assure mankind that the present rule of kings on Earth, which is based on war and tyranny, need to be and would be dismantled by God. Jesus, in his second coming, will be the ruler of the Earth for 1000 years ushering in a golden era of peace and love. During this period, Satan will be subdued. Hence, there would be no violence, lies, dishonesty and greed. Hence, there would be no crime and hence no punishment. Everyone will be a true Christian -- loving and helpful.

These thoughts reveal the mind-set of the people inventing Christianity – they always believed that monarchy was the only way God wanted to rule people; but they hoped that God would soon appoint a compassionate and just monarch like Jesus, who would rule the world soon and solve all the problems of violence and injustice once for all!

It is thus proved that Christianity supports only Theo-monarchy. Democracy was a completely alien concept for Jesus or Christianity.

Some Christian apologists argue that God created entire mankind in His image – hence all men are equal and therefore Christianity indirectly supports democracy which is based on equality of all men:

*Genesis 1.27*

*So God created mankind in his own image, in the image of God he created them; male and female he created them.*

But this argument is wrong. Creating man in the image of God refers to the minimum common characteristic of humans – it does not in itself qualify a person to deserve special privileges. Had that been so, why does Bible treat women inferior to men or slaves inferior to their masters or Gentiles inferior to Jews or the rich inferior to the poor in so far as entry into the Kingdom of God is concerned?

If every person was really considered equal in the matter of governance, God should not have chosen one person over the other as a ruler, as He had been supposedly doing all the time. Then, God should rather have asked people to govern themselves and He should have kept Himself completely out of this messy affair of making and unmaking of kings.

So, Bible itself does not believe in equality of men in all respects. Hence, democracy is completely out of sync with Judaism or Christianity.

### **Economic implications of Christianity – Minimalism/socialism**

Christianity's views about wealth and its production/consumption is completely different from that of Judaism. While in Judaism, there is respect for wealth and it is considered as a bounty given by God, Christianity condemns wealth.

As I have shown in the previous chapter, Jesus is continuously condemning the rich and glorifying the poor. His Kingdom of God is forbidden for the rich:

Luke 6.20-21

*Looking at his disciples, he said:*

*“Blessed are you who are poor,  
for yours is the kingdom of God.*

*Blessed are you who hunger now,  
for you will be satisfied.*

*Blessed are you who weep now,  
for you will laugh....”*

Luke 6. 24-25

*“But woe to you who are rich,  
for you have already received your comfort.*

*Woe to you who are well fed now,  
for you will go hungry.*

*Woe to you who laugh now,  
for you will mourn and weep...”*

Secondly, Jesus declares that God takes care of the basic needs of the poor, provided the poor has unshaking faith in God. So, all that a poor needs to do to fulfil his basic needs is to pray to God:

Mark 11.24:

*Therefore I tell you, all that you ask for in prayer, believe that you will receive it and it shall be yours.*

Luke 12.22-24

*Then Jesus said to his disciples: “Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; or about your body, what you will wear. For life is more than food, and the body more than clothes. Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them. And how much more valuable you are than birds!*

Thirdly, Jesus advises the rich to sell off their wealth and distribute it among the poor:

Luke 18.22-25

*When Jesus heard this, he said to him, “You still lack one thing. Sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.”*

If these 3 beliefs are combined, it logically follows that the poor should not try to become rich (as

wealth is bad); the poor should not try to toil to earn his livelihood (as God will take care of his needs, if he just prays with maybe, just a little work) and the rich should give away their entire wealth to the poor (only then they can enter the Kingdom of God).

These 3 fundamental beliefs define the economic philosophy of Christianity.

This Christian economic philosophy is different from socialism, because socialism is not against wealth as such; it is only against inequality between the rich and the poor. Besides, in socialism everyone must work hard to earn livelihood – mere prayer to God would not be allowed.

Christian philosophy is also different from capitalism, because capitalism respects wealth and the rich; it promotes enterprise and hard work for production of wealth; it expects people to save money to reinvest in more profitable ventures, rather than squander away all the savings to feed the poor.

Christian economic philosophy is thus a unique economic philosophy. If it is followed seriously, it would degrade the society to a stage where everyone is contented being poor; everyone is just praying to God to feed, clothe and shelter him and everyone shares his poverty with everyone else equally. There would be no science and no technology in this system, as sustained capital investment and human effort is required to develop them, which is condemned in Christianity.

This Christian concept is worse than even the Judaic economic system. In Judaism, everyone respects wealth, wants to become rich and can enhance his wealth by working, following God's commandments and seeking His mercy. But in Christianity, nobody would even try to become rich and even if someone is rich, he would have to give away all his wealth to the poor.

### **Christianity and modern Western economies**

Condemnation of the rich and appeasement of the poor by Christianity had disastrous consequence for Christian societies. Influenced by these Christian values, majority of Christians of the West developed a soft corner for the poor and hatred for the rich. This motivated them to change public policy in favor of subsidizing the poor, which necessitated heavily taxing the rich. The subsidy to the poor extended to almost all areas – food, education, health care, housing, small enterprises, protection from foreign competition and so forth.

It is this Christian obsession with the poor which later evolved into ideas of communism, socialism and various forms of populist or welfarist economies. All these economic philosophies are obsessed with the welfare of the poor and all of them hold that the rich are essentially greedy and exploiting. So, all these leftist ideologies are essentially hangovers of Christianity.

Since several non-Christian countries were ruled by Christianized European powers, this disease of communism/ socialism/ populism/ welfarism spread in most parts of the world.

The Industrial Revolution and the prosperity it brought to Europe and America was not because of

Christianity, but a consequence of rejection of Christianity and by substituting it with Humanism, Enlightenment and a scientific attitude of mind by a handful of pioneers. These new ideas put man before God and justified fulfilment of maximum desires through human endeavor by applying science in the service of mankind.

Christian economic philosophy, however, blunted these new ideas of humanism, Enlightenment and capitalism. Even today, the present pope Francis goes on condemning free market economy bemoaning its “anti-poor” nature. He is only following Jesus.

The conflict between these two opposite streams of thought can be seen even today across the world.

I will argue in the sub-chapter 3E [Harmful effects of Christianity] that this obsession with the poor spawning leftist economic ideologies has proved to be extremely harmful for mankind. Free market economy is the only way to prosperity and elimination of poverty.

## Chapter 3 -- Christianity

### Sub-chapter 3C

#### Falsehood of Christianity

As I have noted earlier, Christianity holds the same Judaic world-view as mentioned in the Hebrew Bible/Old Testament. Falsehood of Judaic world-view pointed out in sub-chapter 2B, therefore, applies on Christian world-view too.

But Christianity has also developed some unique doctrines about the world, which are different from those of Judaism. I will point out the falsehood of only such doctrines in this sub-chapter.

These false doctrines are as follows:

1. The Kingdom of God would be set up on Earth by Jesus during his own lifetime.
2. Faith can do anything – cure diseases, remove disabilities, make a dead person alive, move mountains, turn water into wine and so on.
3. Birds and plants do not work and they are fed and clothed by God.
4. Jesus fulfilled prophecies predicted in Old Testament
5. Stars can fall on Earth
6. On death of Jesus, darkness covered the land for 3 hours from noon to 3 PM
7. After crucifixion, Jesus resurrected and met his followers in physical form.

Let me discuss these beliefs one by one and show how they are false.

1. **The Kingdom of God would be set up on Earth by Jesus during his own lifetime.**

As I have discussed before, Jesus had predicted that the spiritual-political Kingdom of God under his premiership would take place during the lifetime of his generation. To recapitulate, Jesus says:

Mark 9.1

*And he said to them, “Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see that the kingdom of God has come with power.”*

Matthew 10.23

*When you are persecuted in one place, flee to another. Truly I tell you, you will not finish going*

through the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.

But his prediction turned out to be false. Jesus could not set up the Kingdom of God during his lifetime nor even after 2000 years after his death. This was the most fundamental and biggest setback to what he believed, did and lived for. This falsehood renders his entire world-view completely out of sync with the reality.

Why did Jesus hold this belief so close to his heart? This was because he wanted to assure his fellow Israelites that they did not need to despair in the face of foreign subjugation, as God had planned for them a victorious end – the rule of Judaism over the entire world very soon! This certainly raised hope and Jesus became a popular hero among Israelites instantaneously. But, falsehood cannot support hope for long!

Some Christian apologists argue that the Kingdom of God referred to by Jesus was not an earthly political kingdom, but a spiritual state of mind. Some modern Hindu spiritual gurus also claim that Jesus was essentially talking about a spiritual state, something like the state of liberation or Nirvana. Even if this interpretation is accepted, it is still false, because there is no proof that everyone on earth became as spiritually pure as Jesus himself during his lifetime. Had that been the case, no Christian persecution would have taken place anywhere in the world after the death of Jesus at the hands of ‘unenlightened’ rulers.

## **2. Faith can do anything – cure diseases, remove disabilities, make a dead person alive, move mountains, turn water into wine and so on.**

In the gospels, Jesus has been described to perform a number of miracles – curing diseases and disabilities, removing evil spirits from afflicted persons, raising the dead, walking on water, turning water into wine, calming storms and so on.

Jesus explains that all his powers are due to his absolute faith in God and just anybody can have those powers if he/she has faith in God. According to him, God is very loving to his children (humans) and God feels very happy to give whatever His children ask for in faith.

Jesus says (Matthew 7.7-11):

*Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks, receives; and the one who seeks, finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened.*

*Which one of you would hand his son a stone when he asks for a loaf of bread, or a snake when he asks for a fish? If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give good things to those who ask him?*

Stating the power of faith, Jesus says again (Matthew 17.20):

*He said to them, “Because of your little faith. Amen, I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, ‘Move from here to there,’ and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you.”*

The same message is repeated by him in Mark 11.24:

*Therefore I tell you, all that you ask for in prayer, believe that you will receive it and it shall be yours.*

So, according to this doctrine of Jesus, whatever his sincere followers (devout Christians) prayed for, they would get it.

But this is completely false. No Christian has scientifically proved such powers of prayer.

For example, if faith and prayer really works, why do just 10 most devout Christians of the world including Pope not gather and pray sincerely to God for cure of all cases of arthritis from the Christian population of the world? As per the prescription of Jesus, this should work. But it would not.

If Christians could make this happen even once in the past or present, the rest of the world would have been impressed so much that all of them would have converted to Christianity voluntarily by now. Then, no more Christian missionary work would have been required. So, the desire of Jesus to spread the message of God all over the world would also have been fulfilled. This is a simple scientific experiment, which is easily verifiable. But Christians would not do it, because deep down, they too know that it does not work!

This unwillingness or inability to conduct such experiments prove that all the miracles allegedly performed by Jesus and as mentioned in the New Testament are false.

### **3. Birds and plants do not work and they are fed and clothed by God.**

Jesus says [Matthew 6.26-30]:

*Look at the birds in the sky; they do not sow or reap, they gather nothing into barns, yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are not you more important than they? Can any of you by worrying add a single moment to your life-span? Why are you anxious about clothes?*

*Learn from the way the wild flowers grow. They do not work or spin. But I tell you that not even Solomon in all his splendor was clothed like one of them. If God so clothes the grass of the field, which grows today and is thrown into the oven tomorrow, will he not much more provide for you, O you of little faith?*

But this argument of Jesus is false. Birds too have to work hard to get food, mates and shelter. The competition for food in the animal world is in fact so fierce that only very few survive. Others die of starvation or get eaten by their predators. We do not observe God saving animals from predators, starvation or disease.

Scientists have estimated that during the entire history of Earth, anywhere between 1 and 4 billion species have existed. Out of that, about 99% have become extinct due to over-predation, disease, genetic obsolescence, starvation etc. So, why did this Christian God not prevent such extinction, if He took care of birds and all other created living beings?

The same holds true for plants too. They work very hard to absorb nutrients from soil, air and water. They have to actively seek sunlight and so on. They too become victims of insects, bacteria and virus. They too become extinct.

Besides, several species of animals do hoard food for future consumption. For example, rodents such as hamsters and squirrels and some birds such as rooks, woodpeckers and Western Scrub Jay store food. Hoarding is a way to save surplus available food for later consumption and it helps in survival during the period of scarcity of food. This future consumption may be done after a few days or a few months. For example, a jaguar hangs a partially eaten prey on a tree so that he can eat it after a few days. Rodents can eat the stored food after a few months.

Even the fat stored in their own body by hibernating animals such as polar bears, bats, turtles, lemurs, bumblebees, hedgehogs, snails etc is a kind of hoarding, and it helps them survive during hibernation in extreme winter. So, it is false to say that animals do not store food.

So, the belief that God would fulfill all our needs if we are Christian enough is not only false, but absurd. No Christian seriously believes it. None of them, for example, stops working in the hope that God would pay their bills or would send them checks of say, one million dollar each or place dinner on the table every night!

If it is argued that God does not do things directly, but has just given enough intelligence to all living beings to survive and prosper, that proposition too would be false. If animals and plants were given enough intelligence, why did they become extinct? Why do even humans suffer from starvation, poverty, disease and premature death? Besides, if enough intelligence is available to all living beings, what is the point in saying that God takes care of them all? Then intelligence itself is enough.

Someone may say that what Jesus really meant was that you should keep on trying your best and keep on praying your best – God will then certainly fulfill all your needs. But if I have to do my best – most careful planning, most sincere hard work, and so forth -- what is the need of doing prayer to God or what is the need of God at all? Even some atheists or communists have achieved grand success in some way by doing their best. So, what is the need to pray?

So, this doctrine of Jesus that God takes care of the needs of all living beings, no matter how it is interpreted, is completely false.

But why did Jesus say this?

Almost all the followers of Jesus were poor. They needed food, clothes, shelter etc. Jesus told them what they wanted to hear – God would take care of all their needs. Once the poor are assured that God would look after them well, they could focus on propagating the message of Jesus.

But did God really help the poor? No. But the poor kept on hoping for God's help. Hope is the oxygen which keeps people optimistic even while they are suffering. So, his followers kept hoping that the Kingdom of God would come soon and they would then start living a good life. Their immediate needs were fulfilled by sharing the charities Jesus managed to obtain under his claim of messiahship.

#### **4. Jesus fulfilled prophecies predicted in Old Testament**

In the gospels, Jesus made several references to the 'prophecies of the past prophets' and claimed to be fulfilling those 'prophecies'. But, scholars have not found any such references in any of the past scriptures – neither in the Hebrew Bible nor in Talmud.

For example:

Jesus says in Luke 24.44-47 –

*He said to them, "This is what I told you while I was still with you: Everything must be fulfilled that is written about me in the Law of Moses, the Prophets and the Psalms."*

*Then he opened their minds so they could understand the Scriptures. He told them, "This is what is written: The Messiah will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, and repentance for the forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem..."*

But the claim of Jesus that what he says was written in the "Law of Moses, the Prophets and the Psalms" is completely false. Nowhere Moses, other Prophets or Psalms say what Jesus ascribes to them. In fact, there is no such description in the entire Hebrew Bible or even in Talmud.

Take another example.

Jesus says in Matthew 11.7-10:

*As John's disciples were leaving, Jesus began to speak to the crowd about John (the Baptist): "..... Then what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. This is the one about whom it is written:*

*"I will send my messenger ahead of you,  
who will prepare your way before you."*

Mark 1.2 and Luke 7.27 also say the same thing.

But no book of Hebrew Bible or Talmud says any such thing! The statement of Jesus is completely false.

Why did Jesus make references he knew nothing about?

He must have done it to gain acceptability by his fellow Israelites who revered the scriptures – Hebrew Bible and Talmud. However, it appears that Jesus had either never read the Judaic scriptures or he did not remember the exact words of the scriptures. He might have heard something from some Rabbi, added something of his own subconsciously to glorify himself as divine and delivered it to his audience.

## 5. Stars can fall on Earth

Jesus, while predicting ‘events of the last days of Earth’, says that stars will fall on Earth (Matthew 24.29):

*“Immediately after the tribulation of those days,  
the Sun will be darkened,  
and the Moon will not give its light,  
and the stars will fall from the sky,  
and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.”*

Revelation 6.13 too makes a similar claim:

*“The stars in the sky fell to the Earth like unripe figs shaken loose from the tree in a strong wind.”*

Jesus, who claimed to be the Son of omniscient God, did not even know that stars are not small points of light hanging a few hundred miles above Earth and they simply cannot fall on Earth. He, just like all laypersons of his time, thought that stars are like fruits hanging on a tree that would fall if the tree is shaken.

Jesus did not know that stars are in their place due to the balance of gravitational forces and inertial forces. They keep on moving around some gravitational centers. If a star comes even a few thousand miles near Earth, Earth will evaporate and will be swallowed by the gravitational pull of the star. So, far from the star falling on Earth, Earth itself would evaporate in the proximity of the star. So, the claim of Jesus to rule the Earth after the fall of stars is completely false!

This example shows how Jesus was desperately trying to appear knowledgeable, while he knew nothing about how the universe works. He made these tall statements to impress people that he was really the Messiah, not an ordinary person and his second coming would be accompanied by big events like falling of stars, shaking of Earth etc. The fact is that he was as ignorant about the universe as his fellow Israelites.

## 6. On death of Jesus, darkness covered the land for 3 hours from noon to 3 PM.

The Gospel of Mark says:

Mark 15.33

*[The Death of Jesus] At noon, darkness came over the whole land until three in the afternoon.*

Matthew 27.45 and Luke 23.44 also give similar descriptions.

So, these Gospels are saying that on crucifixion of Jesus, the land of Jerusalem where Jesus was crucified and other adjoining areas (or whole Earth?) became dark for 3 hours from noon to 3 PM.

But, there is no event which could explain 3 hours of continuous darkness on a part of land of Earth during daytime. It is simply impossible, given the dynamics of the motion of Sun and Earth.

Some apologists say that it was due to a complete solar eclipse happening at that time. But even a full solar eclipse cannot last for more than 7 minutes and 31 seconds because of the dynamics of the motion of Sun, Moon and Earth.

Obviously, these Gospel writers were making these tall claims just to impress people so that they believe in the divine nature of Jesus and convert to Christianity.

## **7. After crucifixion, Jesus resurrected and met his followers in physical form.**

This has already been discussed in sub-chapter 3A. I will briefly repeat the argument for ready reference.

Scientifically, it is impossible to explain how a corpse can become alive on its own. Not a single example has been found to the contrary. Nature does not make any exception. So, Christians will have to give an extraordinarily strong proof in support of their claim of exception to the rule.

Historically also, this claim is untenable. If physical resurrection of Jesus had taken place, it would have definitely been mentioned by the non-Christian historians of the 1<sup>st</sup> or early 2<sup>nd</sup> century CE, given the massive significance of the event. But no such historical account has been found.

Secondly, if Jesus had really resurrected physically, he should have appeared before the Roman Emperor Tiberius or the then Roman Governor of Judea - Pontius Pilate (who had ordered his crucifixion) and said something like this:

*“Hey, you wanted to kill me? Look, I am back again fully alive. Now, you know who I am? I am the Son of God carrying the message of God for the whole humanity. You, men of little faith, do you not know the power of God and His Son? Your power is nothing before divine power. Now, have faith. Repent and accept me as the Son of God and your leader. I forgive you for your sin.”*

Had Jesus done that, it would have been a 100% proof that Jesus resurrected. Then the entire Roman Empire and after that, the rest of the world would have voluntarily embraced Christianity as the only true religion. Then, the mission of Jesus would have been completed and he would have been able to establish the Kingdom of God on Earth without further labor and without any risk of prosecution. But nothing of that sort happened at all!

Besides, what prevents Jesus even now from appearing before the world, say before any General Assembly or Security Council meeting of the UN and declare his power of resurrection and divine mandate?

So, the doctrine of resurrection is completely false.

**Conclusion:**

Even one false belief of New Testament is sufficient to demolish the claim that it is revealed or inspired by all-knowing God or His all-knowing Son, Jesus. Had Jesus been really the Son of God or His messenger, he would not have propagated even a single false view about the world. This proves that he was just an ordinary man laboring under the illusion that he was God's Son or His Messiah.

## Chapter 3 -- Christianity

### Sub-chapter 3D

#### Contradictions in Christianity

New Testament has hundreds of self-contradictions. Just google “contradictions in New Testament” and there would be thousands of sites detailing the list of self-contradictions. No God-inspired book can have even a single contradiction. So, these contradictions clearly prove that New Testament is not a word of God or His representative.

What could be the reason for such a wide variety of contradictions?

Gospels were written after about 40 years of death of Jesus. So, they were compiled on the basis of description of the words and deeds of Jesus made up by the followers of Jesus's generation or next generation. With such a long gap of time between actual events and the time of compilation, the real words and deeds of Jesus got modified in the course of information passing from one follower to another. Since different gospels were written on the basis of descriptions of different followers, they naturally gave different account of the words and deeds of Jesus. This is how contradictions arose.

These contradictions and differences in the content of the gospels prove that they are not reliable sources of information about Jesus.

But since there are no other reliable sources to know the real life of Jesus, we have no option except logically scrutinizing the gospels and arrive at conclusions which are most compatible with logic, science, history, Jesus-related archaeological excavations and overall character of Jesus.

I have listed below some examples of self-contradictions, which, in my view, cannot be reconciled by Christian scholars:

#### 1. Genealogy of Jesus

According to Mathew 1.6-17, from David to Jesus, there were 28 generations. But, according to Luke 3.23-31, from David to Jesus, there were 43 generations!

Besides, Matthew (1.16) says that Jacob was the father of Joseph (who was the husband of Mary), while Luke (3.23) says that Heli was the father of Joseph! Christian apologists try to reconcile this contradiction by saying that Matthew's genealogy traces the bloodline from David to Jesus through Joseph, while Luke's account does it through Mary. But this is factually impossible. Husband and wife cannot be separated by  $43-28 = 15$  generations! We could have accepted it, had there been a gap of 1 or 2 generations, but not with 15 generations.

## 2. Is calling a person “fool” sinful or getting angry sinful?

### Yes:

According to Jesus, if you call somebody a fool, you will go to hell. Matthew 5.22 says:

*But I tell you that anyone who is angry with a brother or sister will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to a brother or sister, ‘Raca,’ is answerable to the court. And anyone who says, ‘You fool!’ will be in danger of the fire of hell.*

### No:

According to gospels, Jesus himself got angry several times. For example:

A) Jesus uses insulting language such as “hypocrites”, “foolish & blind people”, and “snakes” against those who are not his followers. He also gets violent in the temple:

Matthew 23.13, 17, 25 & 33:

13 “How terrible it will be for you legal experts and Pharisees! Hypocrites!

17 You foolish and blind people! Which is greater, the gold or the temple that makes the gold holy?

25 “How terrible it will be for you legal experts and Pharisees! Hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and plate, but inside they are full of violence and pleasure seeking.

33 You snakes! You children of snakes! How will you be able to escape the judgment of hell?

B) Jesus, in a fit of anger, curses a fig tree for not bearing fruits when he felt hungry, even though it was not even the season for the tree to bear fruits (Matthew 21.18-19; Mark 11.12-24; Luke 13.6-9). The fig tree reportedly withered away. Poor tree!

## 3. How can one achieve salvation?

-- **By faith alone** (Galatians 2.16; Ephesians 2.8-9)

Galatians 2.15-16:

*We who are Jews by birth and not sinful Gentiles know that a person is not justified by the works of the law, but by faith in Jesus Christ. So we, too, have put our faith in Christ Jesus that we may be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law, because by the works of the law no one will be justified.*

Ephesians 2.8-9

*For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast.*

-- By faith and works.

James 2.14-17 says:

*What good is it, my brothers and sisters, if someone claims to have faith but has no deeds? Can such faith save them? Suppose a brother or a sister is without clothes and daily food. If one of you says to them, “Go in peace; keep warm and well fed,” but does nothing about their physical needs, what good is it? In the same way, faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead.*

#### 4. When is divorce wrong?

**Always:**

In Mark 10.11-12, Jesus says:

*He answered, “Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her. And if she divorces her husband and marries another man, she commits adultery.”*

But in Matthew 5.32, Jesus says that divorce is not wrong in case of unfaithfulness:

*But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, makes her the victim of adultery, and anyone who marries a divorced woman commits adultery.*

#### 5. Did Jesus claim to enjoy all the powers of heaven and Earth?

**Yes:** (Matthew 28.18; John 3.35)

Matthew 28.18:

*Then Jesus came to them and said, “All authority in heaven and on Earth has been given to me.*

John 3.35:

*The Father loves the Son and has placed everything in his hands.*

**No:** (Matthew 20.23; Mark 10.40)

Matthew 20.23:

*Jesus said to them, “You will indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared by my Father.”*

Mark 10.40

“…but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared.”

## 6. What were the last words of Jesus?

- “My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?” (Matthew 27.46; Mark 15.34)
- “Father, into your hands I commend my spirit” (Luke 23.46)
- “It is finished.” (John 19.30)

## 7. How long was Jesus on the tomb?

According to Mathew 12.40, Jesus, when asked to give his signs about death, said:

*For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of a huge fish, so the Son of Man will be three days and three nights in the heart of the Earth.*

But according to Christianity, Jesus was in tomb a day before Sabbath day, i.e., on Friday night (John 19.42; Mark 15.42; Luke 23.54), day of Saturday and night of Saturday. He ‘resurrected’ on Sunday morning (John 20.17). So, he was in tomb only for 2 nights and 1 day, not 3 nights and 3 days as mentioned in Mathew 12.40.

## 8. How did Judas die?

According to Mathew 27.5, Judas hanged himself:

*So Judas threw the money into the temple and left. Then he went away and hanged himself.*

But, according to Acts 1.18, Judas died due to rupture in his body:

*With the payment he received for his wickedness, Judas bought a field; there he fell headlong, his body burst open and all his intestines spilled out.*

## 9. Who was seen near the tomb of Jesus when Mary Magdalene and other women visited there on the Sunday morning?

According to Mark 16.5, it was a man, dressed in white:

*As they entered the tomb, they saw a young man dressed in a white robe sitting on the right side, and they were alarmed.*

According to Matthew 28.2-3, it was an angel who appeared like lightening:

*There was a violent earthquake, for an angel of the Lord came down from heaven and, going to the tomb, rolled back the stone and sat on it. His appearance was like lightning, and his clothes were white as snow.*

According to Luke 24.4, there were 2 men shining like lightening:

*While they were wondering about this, suddenly two men in clothes that gleamed like lightning stood beside them.*

According to John 20.11-12, there were 2 angels in white:

*Now Mary stood outside the tomb crying. As she wept, she bent over to look into the tomb and saw two angels in white, seated where Jesus' body had been, one at the head and the other at the foot.*

So, the reply to the question varies from 1 man to 1 angel to 2 men to 2 angels!

### **Conclusion:**

As noted earlier, these contradictions render the Books of New Testament, especially Gospels, unreliable. Christianity is thus based on shaky foundation. Unreliability of Gospels makes their description of other aspects of Jesus also doubtful.

## Chapter 3 – Christianity

### Sub-chapter 3E

#### Harmful effects of Christianity

First of all, since Christianity maintains that Bible (Old Testament) is true, all the harmful effects described in respect of Judaism are applicable for Christianity too. In fact, all those evils have been spread across the world by Christian missionaries, not by Jews. Judaism remained confined in a very small area and since they did not believe in proselytization, spreading of Biblical beliefs was done by Christian missionaries only.

Moreover, Christianity has its own unique set of beliefs which too have harmed the world tremendously – much more than Judaism.

We will examine these unique Christian beliefs below and demonstrate how extremely harmful they are for the society. These beliefs are:

- a) God takes care of all our needs – we just need to have faith
- b) We deserve punishment for our ancestor's mistakes
- c) We should not resist evil by physical force
- d) Everyone should love everyone else unconditionally
- e) Acquiring wealth is a sin and being poor is virtuous
- f) Indulgence in sexual pleasure is a sin and celibacy is virtuous

Let me examine them one by one.

##### a) God takes care of all our needs – we just need to have faith

Jesus says (Matthew 7.7-11):

*Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks, receives; and the one who seeks, finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened.*

*Which one of you would hand his son a stone when he asks for a loaf of bread, or a snake when he asks for a fish? If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give good things to those who ask him?*

But, as we have seen, this belief is completely false. We do not get what we pray for. Prayer has no power to fulfil any wish – such as cure of a disease or removal of poverty or making a dead person alive

or turning water into wine, as gospels have imagined.

Had that been the case, all humans would have been living a super luxurious and super-pleasant life, for who does not want it?

If God takes care of all the needs of His obedient children (Christians), why have they to toil hard for survival? Why does God not pay all their bills? Why does God not give them checks for at least a million dollar each?

Jesus says [Matthew 6.26-30]:

*Look at the birds in the sky; they do not sow or reap, they gather nothing into barns, yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are not you more important than they? Can any of you by worrying add a single moment to your life-span? Why are you anxious about clothes?*

Well, men are anxious about clothes because God does not produce, stitch and distribute clothes to His followers free! Jesus is simply giving the poor a false hope. Jesus is acting as a leftist politician promising all sorts of goodies to the poor so that he gets their support to establish his Kingdom of God.

But, Christians still go on praying and hoping for the best. But it has never worked. It will never work.

This Christian belief, if followed seriously, would prove to be a disaster. If we do nothing and just keep praying, all of us will die of starvation and disease.

This Christian belief is directly against the endeavor of science. Science tries to understand how things behave or how events are causally linked. Then we use that knowledge to our advantage by building up an appropriate technology.

But once we start believing that God would do everything for us, we would not even try to develop science and technology. We will make no efforts to improve our lot.

On the same line, Christians believe that God gives us children too.

But this belief is extremely dangerous. If we believe that children are given by God, we would not try to reduce the number of children by using appropriate birth control methods such as use of contraceptives, pills or abortion. That would further exacerbate the problem of too little resources for too many people on Earth.

This Christian belief is therefore extremely harmful for humanity.

## **b) We deserve punishment for our ancestor's mistakes**

As explained in sub chapter 3A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity], the followers of Jesus, in order to give a meaning to the execution of Jesus, developed a world-view according to which Jesus died to atone the sin of mankind. They argued that this sin was

committed by Adam and Eve by disobeying God's command and therefore this sin has been inherited by all humans.

This belief has made Christians feel guilty for no fault of theirs. They keep on condemning themselves as sinful. They keep on repenting for the imaginary sin committed by their imaginary ancestors – Adam and Eve! They keep on hoping that God will forgive them and allow them entry into heaven, if they sincerely repent and believe in Jesus!

This guilt leads to condemnation of the present worldly life. The present life is thus brushed aside as having no intrinsic value. The pleasures of life – food, dress, comfort, love, laughter, sex, friendship, entertainment, discovery, adventure and so forth – then lose their worth. The present life becomes merely a stepping stone to gain re-entry into heaven after death. So, death becomes more important than life.

This is why Jesus moves with a long face. He never smiles, never laughs, never jokes! He is carrying the burden of 'sin of entire humanity' all the time. He cannot enjoy the present. As soon as a person becomes his follower, he too becomes like Jesus – serious, quiet and unhappy. Now, entering heaven and avoiding hell becomes his only goal of life. But heaven and hell are unverified realms. So, the Christian sacrifices the priceless gift of the present for an imaginary future!

As I have stated while discussing falsehood of Judaism, the belief that God created Earth on the 1<sup>st</sup> day and humans on the 6<sup>th</sup> day has been proved completely false by science. Adam and Eve were not created by God, but evolved in millions of years from out of an ancestor of chimpanzees, according to the theory of biological evolution. There was neither any garden nor any tree of knowledge of good and evil nor any God who was bossing around humans in that garden. So, the belief that Adam-Eve disobeyed God is also false. Hence, there is no need of feeling guilty for something which never happened!

### **c) We should not resist evil by physical force**

Jesus preaches to forgive enemy, not to resist evil, offer the left cheek when right cheek is slapped and so on. His Sermon on the Mount and other teachings consistently preach this sort of morality. I will give just one quote:

Matthew 5.38-44

*You have heard that it was said, an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. But I say to you that you must not oppose those who want to hurt you. If people slap you on your right cheek, you must turn the left cheek to them as well. When they wish to haul you to court and take your shirt, let them have your coat too. When they force you to go one mile, go with them two. Give to those who ask, and don't refuse those who wish to borrow from you.*

*You have heard that it was said, "You must love your neighbor and hate your enemy". But I say to you, "love your enemies and pray for those who harass you".*

Let us suppose that this sort of morality is accepted by an overwhelming number of individuals in a society. So, as a consequence, they will elect a government which would abolish all police, court, military and similar institutions because the purpose of all these institutions is to catch and punish individuals as revenge against their crimes or as deterrence to the potential criminals. Jesus is against any revenge or punishment to any individual, even if he has harmed others.

What would happen then?

Then all the criminals -- cheaters, thieves, rapists, murderers, terrorists – would have no fear and they would step up their criminal activities. So, more and more innocent persons would suffer. More forgiveness on their part would encourage even more people to commit such crimes. So, society would have more and more criminals and less and less victims. A day will come when everybody would like to be a criminal and nobody would like to be a victim. Then the whole moral fabric of the society would be torn asunder and mankind will return to primitive times when might was right and when everybody was in constant war against everybody else. Then life would again be short, nasty and brutal.

Would we like to go back to that unpleasant state?

In the context of rising tide of Islamic terrorism, this sort of morality would be even more disastrous. It would be in fact suicidal. Non-resistance to evil and complete surrender to whatever it dictates would be very inviting to the terrorists, as they can easily impose their Sharia and Jizya tax on Christian population following this sort of Christian ethics. In fact, Christianity has not only tolerated terrorism but has also facilitated its expansion by teaching Christians to put up with the terrorist violence and not to resist it. It is because of such suicidal ethics that Islamic terrorism is spreading in all Christian countries, while Christian population in Islamic countries is going down dramatically and would be completely wiped out soon.

Pope Francis is only following Jesus when he has nothing except uttering the hollow words of peace in the face of terrorist violence.

If a robber knows that his potential victim is not going to resist, it would be even more tempting for him to rob the victim. In a way, the victim is inviting the robber by following such foolish policy. So, Christianity too has facilitated the spread of terrorism.

**Secondly**, if somebody is hitting me on the right cheek, turning left cheek to him is invitation to hurt *myself*. So, why should I hurt myself at the cost of trying to avoid hurting others? Why am I less important than all others in this world? Since I am just like any other individual, there can be no justification to degrade one person (me) at the cost of others.

In fact, anger and revenge against being wronged is very much needed for a sustainable moral society. We should follow the golden rule: do to others what you would like them to do to you [as Jesus himself preaches: Matthew 7.12]. But if someone is violating this rule, as criminals do, then an efficient

system of detection, trial and punishment to these wrong-doers must come into operation at once. Only that would motivate people to follow the golden rule, which in turn, would lead to more social cohesion, harmony, peace and prosperity.

But why did Jesus support such submissive behavior?

As explained in sub-chapter 3A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity], Jesus wanted to gain the support of the poor and the weak in order to become their mass leader and Messiah. The poor and the weak have obviously no option but to “forgive” wrong-doers; so Jesus preached that sort of ethics to please and woo them. He assured them respectable place in the Kingdom of God and finally heaven, because he could not give them any tangible benefit in this world.

As a logical corollary to appeasing the poor and the weak, Jesus had to condemn the rich and the powerful. So, he condemned the rich and declared that they would never enter heaven.

Matthew 19.23-24

*Then Jesus said to his disciples, “I assure you that it will be very hard for a rich person to enter the kingdom of heaven. In fact, it’s easier for a camel to squeeze through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter God’s kingdom.*

To sum up, Christian morality is the morality of the weak and the poor. It is against self-respect and self-dignity. If it is seriously implemented, it would be disastrous for the world, because then all Christian-majority countries (including US and Europe) would stop punishing criminals or fighting against terrorists and aggressors. They will simply surrender to whosoever chooses to attack and subjugate them.

Fortunately, no Christian country takes the teachings of Jesus seriously. No country has thankfully even tried to implement it by dismantling all police, court and military infrastructure.

Nevertheless, the hangover of Christianity is clearly visible on these societies. This is expressed in their soft-handling of jihadi terrorism, support for abolition of capital punishment, acceptance of Muslim refugees, providing 3 star facilities to criminals in jails and so forth.

#### **d) Everyone should love everyone else unconditionally.**

Jesus keeps on preaching that everyone should love everyone else. He is obviously laboring under the delusion that if a person is advised to love, he will start doing it. But is universal unconditional love possible or even desirable?

According to the way humans are biologically programmed, unconditional love is impossible in this world. Everyone is by nature programmed to look after his own interest first. So, whenever we say we love, there is always a selfish desire working in the back of our mind.

For example:

We love our spouses because they help satisfy our needs for emotional sharing, sex, children, companionship, financial support, home management etc. We love our children because they carry our genes.

We love friends because they help us by their valuable advice and support. We are kind and helpful to others in general because we have learnt in the evolutionary process that that sort of behavior is most appropriate for our survival and growth as a group/community.

We love our country because it provides us security, justice, education and other support.

We do philanthropy because we cannot bear the pathetic condition of the world as it is. We also want to improve upon it so that we/our children are more comfortable with it. So, still, it has something to do with ourselves, rather than showing mercy to others. That others are benefitted is only a bye-product of the natural ‘helping-ourselves’ instinct.

In view of this position, it is useless to preach that everyone must love everyone else unconditionally. In fact, it is extremely harmful. If a person takes the words of Jesus seriously and attempts to love everyone unconditionally, he would be lost forever. He would be helping others all the time and would have no time to attend to his own needs. Even if he works 24 hours a day and spends all his money and energy on helping others, he would still not be able to cover during his entire life span more than, say, a few hundred or thousand persons out of the total human population of 7 billion. Meanwhile, he would have nothing left to sustain himself and his family. So, he and his dependents will soon have to die.

Secondly, the statement “I must love others” implies that I am less important than others. If everyone is also thinking the same way, it follows that everyone else is more important than the person thinking this way. So, who is more important – me or others? It follows that everyone is equally important. But if that is so, let everyone care for himself, rather than others. That is natural, more convenient and more efficient. It makes sense that 10 people dining in a room feed themselves directly, rather than everyone feeding the other nine.

Jesus strongly advises everyone to “love his neighbor as himself” (Mark 12.28-31).

But, what is the implication of “loving your neighbor as yourself”?

It means whatever possessions I have, I must share it equally with my neighbor, say A, with love. So, if I have \$1000, I must share it equally with A, who is having only \$100. So, I must give him \$450 so that both of us have \$550 each. But, suppose, there are two more poor neighbours B and C near our residence, each of them having only \$50 each. So, now, I and A must share our wealth equally with B and C. We do that and then I and A, B and C have \$300 each. But in the next neighbourhood, suppose there are 8 poor persons who have nothing. So, now, I, A, B and C must share our wealth with them too with the

result that now all 12 of us has to share \$1200 equally, which makes everybody own \$100 each. This process can go on and on till we reach the poorest person on the Earth. Ultimately, everybody will own, may be a few cents or not even that!

So, this loving-your-neighbor-as-yourself process would make every person equally poor.

This policy of universal love, if adopted by the rich with full force, would be disastrous for the economy, because with nobody having surplus wealth, no new enterprises can be started for want of capital. This would result in zero growth of the economy, which in turn would lead to joblessness, poverty, crime and misery.

Thus, if this advice of Jesus is really followed (fortunately nobody follows it!), this world will have only equally poor and unemployed people who instead of loving each other and adoring Jesus would be struggling for survival or may be even eating each other!

### **e) Acquiring wealth is a sin and being poor is virtuous**

Christianity condemns acquisition of wealth as sin. Hence it cuts the very root of human happiness. Happiness is fulfilment of one's needs and dreams. Fulfilment of almost all human needs and dreams can be facilitated substantially by wealth. So, wealth is absolutely necessary for human happiness. And the more, the better. But Jesus keeps on condemning it.

See some examples of condemnation of wealth by Jesus:

Matthew 6.24

*No one can serve two masters. Either you will hate the one and love the other, or you will be loyal to the one and have contempt for the other. You cannot serve God and wealth.*

Matthew 19.23-24

*Then Jesus said to his disciples, “I assure you that it will be very hard for a rich person to enter the kingdom of heaven. In fact, it's easier for a camel to squeeze through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter God's kingdom.”*

Matthew 6.19-20

*“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on Earth, where moths and vermin destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moths and vermin do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal.*

This constant condemnation of the rich and appeasement of the poor had disastrous consequence for Christian economies. When we condemn something to be bad, we start taxing it. For example, we know that cigarette smoking is bad for health; so we tax tobacco to reduce its consumption. Under the same logic, since Christianity condemns wealth as something bad, it follows that those who earn wealth are

doing something bad; so they must be taxed.

It is this logic which is behind the concept of tax, especially progressive tax. The very concept of tax is anti-rich, anti-business and anti-growth. In fact, all religions except Judaism and Islam, have condemned wealth. It is because of the impact of these religions that in most countries of the world, taxing the rich is taken for granted.

If we reject all religions, there is no need to tax the rich at all. All taxes must be abolished. Then, how would the goods required by all (security, justice, currency regulation, roads etc) be funded? Let all consumers of a national common good or service pay equally. After all, this is how the economy works in the realm of the private sector goods and services.

But the Christian condemnation of wealth and glorification of the poor has resulted in setting up an elaborate mechanism to tax the rich heavily in order to subsidize the poor vigorously. It is this obsession with the poor which later evolved into ideas of communism, socialism and various forms of leftist populism.

Marxist communism is nothing but a hangover of Christianity. Christian principle “love your neighbor as yourself” would logically end up in complete equality of wealth (or rather poverty), which communism aims at. Communism wants to attain equality by forcibly dispossessing the rich of their wealth, nationalizing all means of production and distribution and dividing income equally. So, condemnation of the rich and equality of income are common in both Christianity and communism. The only difference is that Christianity wants to attain equality by voluntary sharing, while communism wants to do it by force. True, communism is not against wealth as Jesus was, but both world-views hate the rich and inequality.

Communist revolutions in Russia, China and other places led to the killing of millions of the rich or even middle class owners of means of production. Communism is now fading away, but it has left behind its core concept (minus physical violence), now known variously as socialism, social justice, egalitarian society, inclusive growth, welfare state and so on. All these leftist economic ideologies aim at taxing (punishing) the rich in order to subsidize (morally support) the poor. This is a clear Christian effect.

The same anti-wealth, anti-pleasure idea continued among the later Christian saints also (1 John 2.15-17):

*Do not love the world or the things of the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, sensual lust, enticement for the eyes, and a pretentious life, is not from the Father but is from the world.*

1 John 2.6

*Whoever claims to abide in him (Jesus) ought to live [just] as he lived.*

It is because of this Christian concept that almost all European and American countries – which are all Christian – have set up a large infrastructure for taxing the rich and subsidizing the poor. Protecting home industries from foreign competition or internal new small businesses from established ones are also part of the same mind set.

Western countries, soaked in Christian world-view, could never give any long-term opportunity for an uncontrolled free market economy to bloom.

Only under such unrestricted free market economy, maximum productivity can be achieved and maximum variety of goods and services could be enjoyed by maximum people. Only under such an economy, anyone could earn and spend any amount of money without being taxed and where all people pay equally for common services under a government whose only job should be to enforce all contracts including the contract government undertakes to provide security to all its citizens. Such a society may have inequality, but it would be dynamic enough to facilitate mobility from lower to higher levels for anyone who sincerely wants to move upward and is willing to work for it. There is nothing morally wrong in inequality, while government restrictions on production, ownership and consumption proves to be extremely harmful for the entire society.

Thus, Christianity has played a major role in keeping this world poor. By condemning the rich, it prepared grounds for forcible appropriation of the assets of the rich as in communist regimes or imposition of excessive tax on the rich as in democratic regimes. If the massive tax collected by the state was left with the rich, there would have been much more investment leading to much higher growth of economy leading to much less unemployment leading to much less poverty leading to much less need to tax the rich to subsidize the poor.

Whatever wealth the West has produced is despite Christianity, not because of Christianity. During European Enlightenment of 17<sup>th</sup> and 18<sup>th</sup> centuries, the Western intellectuals struggled hard to get rid of Christianity, and to large extent, they did succeed. The Western economic revolution – scientific, industrial and technological -- was the outcome of this Enlightenment, not of Christianity. It is this revolution which brought affluence to the West. Science and technology is completely incompatible with Christianity because the former is undertaken to enrich the material conditions of human life, while the latter condemns any such enrichment and glorifies the poor.

Christianity is still a very dominant religion in the Western developed countries. The overwhelming Christian majority in these countries tilts public policy decisions towards Christianity – resulting in massive welfare states, high taxation, enormous subsidy for the poor/small businesses, less spending on science and military and so on.

### **g) Indulgence in sexual pleasure is a sin and celibacy is virtuous**

As I explained in the sub chapter 3A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Christianity], Jesus

condemns sexual pleasure as sinful, because pleasure-seeking for him was an outcome of self-indulgence, not self-repentance. In order to be forgiven by God and re-enter the Kingdom of God, repentance was considered necessary.

Jesus himself remained a bachelor and all Christian monks and nuns are also required to avoid sex completely.

For Jesus, sex is good only to the extent it facilitates reproduction and sex is sinful, if done only for pleasure.

He says:

Matthew 23.25

*How terrible it will be for you legal experts and Pharisees! Hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and plate, but inside they are full of violence and pleasure seeking.*

Luke 8.14

*As for the seed that fell among thorny plants, these are the ones who, as they go about their lives, are choked by the concerns, riches, and pleasures of life, and their fruit never matures.*

But sex is one of the principal needs of humans (and all living beings). Nature has programmed us to want it not just for reproduction, but as one of the most pleasurable experiences. It is celebration of life, a celebration of surplus energy and it brings health and happiness. Countless medical research reports prove that sex is good for health and wellbeing for both partners.

Our basic biological needs cannot be altered by our beliefs. However hard we may believe in celibacy, however much we may regulate our diet, however much we may do prayer and meditation, sexual desires would keep on rising again and again. Just as we cannot stop growth of hair or nails only by believing that it is bad, we cannot stop the desire for sex by believing that it is bad.

Asking people not to desire sex for pleasure is like asking the Sun not to radiate heat, or like asking water not to flow out from a pot which is placed under a running water tap.

In an adult healthy male, everyday millions of sperms are produced. Once the storage capacity of sperms is filled up, there is a natural desire to release the sperms. Similarly, in every adult women, every month one egg is made ready for procreation. This natural abundance in production of sperms and eggs creates desire in humans to have sex much more frequently than just once or twice in a lifetime for actual procreation. So, the very biological constitution of human bodies is such that sex will have to be enjoyed much more frequently than the number of children one wants to have.

Anything less than that would create a feeling of deprivation and misery.

And this is true for all living beings who use sex for procreation. All of them produce offspring in

abundance. This abundance in the number of offspring was needed for each species for survival after taking into account the toll taken by predators, food shortage, extreme weather and peer rivalry. If both predators and preys are to co-exist, species of prey will have to produce more babies so that even after getting eaten by predators, they survive in sufficient numbers. This is why sex has been biologically hardwired in each organism with the potential for reproducing offspring in abundance. Without such a mechanism, genes could not have been transferred so successfully. It is this successful continuous flow of genes which has made us what we are today from out of the first form of primitive life.

So, without a very intense and dominant desire for sex, the entire biological evolution would come to a grinding halt. The entire biological food chain would collapse.

Humans do not have to go on producing babies each time they feel the urge for sex, because there are no predators of humans and Earth is already overpopulated.

So, sex will have to be indulged only for pleasure. It becomes an unasked boon. It becomes a gift of bliss given by nature. There is no other option available for humans unless they are made sexually impotent by special drugs.

Jesus' adverse view of sexual pleasure led to the feeling of guilt and social taboo attached to sex in all Christian societies across the world till recently. This is why masturbation, pre-marital sex, homosexuality and prostitution are still condemned/banned by most of them resulting in avoidable misery and deprivation.

It is this repression of sex which expresses itself in pornography, phone sex, cleavage showing ads, semi-naked photos of women on magazine covers and sexual scandals among Christian priests. These are just examples of venting of repressed sexual energy. Hence, they cannot be stopped unless the root problem of condemnation of sex is resolved. Christians including Pope worry about these things without realizing that it is their own false view about sex which has created this situation in the first place!

This condemnation of sex as pleasure resulted in various other perverse views on logically connected issues. As for example:

### **Condemnation of divorce**

The condemnation of divorce by Jesus is a logical outcome of condemnation of sex as pleasure. To him, divorce facilitated enjoyment of sex with multiple partners. So, he condemned divorce too.

By declaring that divorce is sinful, Jesus made life miserable for millions of couples.

A couple may find themselves mutually incompatible on so many issues -- sexual needs, ways of bringing up kids, frequency of taking holidays, socialization, watching TV programs etc. Despite their best efforts to adjust to each other's needs, they may never succeed. In such a situation, divorce by mutual agreement or by court order and remarriage is the best possible solution for both partners.

But, Jesus is unduly hard on this and he declares divorce a sin:

Matthew 5.32

*But I say to you that whoever divorces his wife except for sexual unfaithfulness forces her to commit adultery. And whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery.*

In Mark 10.11-12, Jesus does not even make the exception in case of sexual unfaithfulness. He condemns divorce unconditionally:

*He answered, “Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her. And if she divorces her husband and marries another man, she commits adultery.”*

Imposition of such irrational sexual morality has created unspeakable misery for couples in Christian countries. Only now, with dilution of Christian morality, these rules have been made more liberal.

### **Condemnation of abortion or contraceptives**

Condemnation of abortion is a logical outcome of the belief that God creates human life. If children are ‘gifts of God’, it follows logically that they should not be killed through abortion or prevented from coming into existence through contraceptives. The argument that it costs a lot of energy and money to raise a child and hence their number needs to be reduced through contraceptives or abortion was rejected by Christianity on the ground that God takes care of all human needs.

But this idea of Jesus is not only scientifically false, as demonstrated in sub-chapter 3B [Falsehood of Christianity], but also extremely dangerous because it is already leading to overpopulation of Earth. Devout Christians still do not want to use contraceptives for fear of hell. Overpopulation in several countries is already a major problem resulting in starvation, crime, environmental degradation and global warming.

**Thus, Christianity has harmed the world very, very deeply.**

## Chapter 3 – Christianity

### Sub chapter 3F

#### Summary of Christianity

Christianity was invented to save Israelites from despair caused by foreign subjugation of Romans.

Israelites were living under the delusion that since they were worshipping the only true God (Yahweh) and had abandoned polytheism after return from Babylonian exile, they would be protected by their God. But subjugation of Romans completely shattered this belief. They did not know whether to abandon their only God or still worship Him.

Jesus, born and brought up as a Jew, came up with new ideas to save his fellow countrymen from this crisis.

He revived the idea of Judaic God's rule over the entire world under the leadership of Israelites ensuring end of all wars, universal peace and prosperity. He called it the Kingdom of God and assured Israelites that this Kingdom is going to be set up by him very soon with the help of God. He sincerely believed that he has been assigned this role by God and hence declared himself to be the Messiah long-awaited by Jews.

This assurance lifted Israelites from their despair and they hoped for a miraculous return to a state of political super power with the whole world under their control.

The poor and the weak needed more relief from the daily oppression of Roman soldiers and grinding poverty. Hence, they immediately became the followers of Jesus. This created a soft corner for the poor in the mind of Jesus and he started praising the poor and condemning the rich. He declared that only the poor would be respected in his Kingdom and only they can enter heaven.

Since in his imagined Kingdom of God, there was to be no conflict or war, and he thought hatred would generate only hatred, he started preaching non-violence and love for all. He hoped that once people become loving to each other, peace would automatically prevail all over the world. He even started preaching love for enemies.

However, as soon as the ruling Romans and their allies – Jewish priests and merchants – discovered the political agenda of Jesus, they became furious and therefore executed him.

The sudden execution of Jesus shattered the followers of Jesus. They could not digest the fact that their Messiah had been so brutally killed. Their intense love for Jesus even made them dream/hallucinate Jesus and they started 'seeing' Jesus. They called it resurrection of Jesus.

They also started searching for an emotionally-satisfying explanation of the entire tragic event. They finally came out with an explanation that Jesus must be a part of God; God must have sent him to Earth to redeem mankind from the sin they inherited from Adam and Eve; Jesus must have chosen his death to atone the sin of mankind on behalf of all humans and he must have resurrected and gone back to heaven to be with God again.

This explanation was the starting point of Christianity.

Christianity is thus a mixture of the beliefs of Jesus as a Jew as well as his followers who gave a new interpretation of sudden crucifixion of Jesus.

It includes the beliefs of Jesus such as Kingdom of God coming to Earth within his life time, his being a Messiah, special privileges to the poor, non-resistance of evil, heaven and hell and the need to propagate these ideas to the whole world.

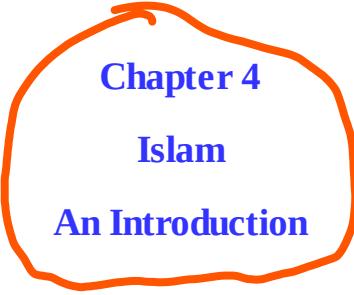
It also includes the beliefs of his followers such as the divine nature of Jesus, his being an integral part of God, his self-chosen martyrdom as atonement for the sin of mankind, his resurrection after death and belief that Jesus would come back again to complete the unfinished task of setting up the Kingdom of God on Earth.

Gospels were compiled after about 40 years of the death of Jesus. By that time, teachings of Jesus got modified while passing from one follower to another. Followers also kept on adding their favorite ideas subconsciously. This gave rise to the stories of miracles and supernatural events associated with Jesus.

However, almost all the beliefs of Jesus are false. The contradictory statements of gospels prove their unreliability.

Worse, the key beliefs of Jesus are extremely harmful, particularly his ideas of non-resistance to evil, virtues of poverty and condemnation of sex and divorce.

Jesus might have given temporary relief from despair to the Jews, but he ended up making a world-view which proved to be extremely harmful for the world.



## Chapter 4

### Islam

#### An Introduction

Islam was propounded by Muhammad (570 – 632 CE), who was born in Makkah, Saudi Arabia in a pagan tribe known as Quraish.

Muhammad claimed that he had been chosen by the omnipotent, omniscient creator of the universe – called Allah by him -- to become His final messenger for humanity.

Quran is believed to be the compilation of messages of Allah communicated to Muhammad over a period of 22 years. Islam is a world-view based on these messages.

Hadith is the compilation of what Muhammad said in his personal capacity and what he did.

Quran and Hadith are the two most basic books of Islam.

#### **Political Timeline of Muhammad**

570 CE – Birth of Muhammad

577 CE - Death of his mother

595 CE - Marriage with Khadijah when he was 25 and she was 40

613 CE – Starts preaching Islam

619 CE – Khadijah's death; marriage with Aisha when he was 49 and she was 6

622 CE [AH 0] – Migration to Madinah

624 CE [AH 2] – First aggressive raid on Makkan Caravans; Battle of Badr and exile of Jewish tribe Banu Qaynuqa

625 CE [AH 3] – Battle of Uhud; exile of Jewish tribe Banu Nadir

627 CE [AH 5] – Battle of Trench; genocide of Jewish tribe Banu Qurayza

628 CE [AH 6] – Treaty of Hudaybiyya; conquest of Jewish settlement of Khaybar; poisoned at Khaybar

630 CE [AH 8] – Conquest of Makkah and Taif

631 CE [AH 9] – All Arabians submit to Islam; raid on Tabuk, the first aggression on Christians and imposition of Jizya on them

### **Who compiled Quran and when**

Muhammad had kept some scribes who used to note down his ‘divine revelations’ on parchment, bones, stones, tree barks etc. Some people were also committing these verses to memory. After death of Muhammad, the first Caliph Abu Bakr, who ruled from 632 to 634 CE, got all these different pieces of writings compiled into one book.

As more and more people started learning Quran from prevalent written pieces, they started using different dialects to re-write Quranic verses. The third Caliph Uthman, who ruled from 644 to 656 CE, decided to use only Quraish dialect to ensure uniformity. So, he again got compiled Quranic verses from the first-hand manuscripts, got it compared with the compilation made by Abu Bakr and then got several copies of complete Quran made. He sent one copy each to different Muslim nations for preservation. Then, he got destroyed all other versions of Quranic verses.

Hadiths of Shahi Bukhari 6.61.509 – 511 describe the above-mentioned process about compilation of Quran.

### **Who wrote Hadith and when**

There are 6 compilations of Hadith, but the earliest and most respected Hadith is that of Bukhari and is called Sahih Bukhari. This was compiled by Muhammad bin Ismail al-Bukhari, who was born in 810 CE in the city of Bukhara in the present Uzbekistan.

The first Hadith was compiled after about 200 years of death of Muhammad. It is said that Bukhari had collected about 600,000 Hadiths, but he accepted only 7275 Hadiths as authentic. Thus, about 99% of Hadiths were rejected by him as fabricated/unreliable.

The second most authentic Hadith is Sahih Muslim, which was compiled by a Persian Imam called Muslim ibn al- Hajjaj (817-874 CE).

This is why authenticity of Hadiths is very controversial – some reject them completely as inauthentic, while others consider them as a secondary source of information about Muhammad’s words and deeds.

Since Quran is silent on several aspects of life, Hadiths fill up these gaps. They are the primary sourcebooks of Islamic morality, conduct and law.

### **World-view of Islam from the point of view of a Muslim**

Muslims believe that Allah chose Muhammad to be his final messenger for the entire humanity. Allah revealed His messages to Muhammad through the angel Gabriel.

Islam has the same cosmology as that of Judaism and Christianity – creation of the universe by the

creator in 6 days; a geo-centric universe with flat, stationary Earth; Earth supported by pegs of mountains to prevent it from falling into an abyss and casting out of humans by Allah from heaven due to disobedience of Adam and Eve.

Islam prescribes very harsh punishment for doubting the existence of Allah and Muhammad's being the last messenger of Allah. Normal crimes such as theft, adultery, murder etc also attract severe punishment. Considering wealth as bounty granted by Allah, sanction for full enjoyment of sex with wives, veils for women in public places, their inferior status and ban on charging interest/rent are other distinguishing features of Islam.

Islam has 5 main pillars: belief in Allah and Muhammad as His last messenger, praying to Allah 5 times a day, keeping fast during daytime for a month in a year, charity to the poor and doing pilgrimage to Makkah at least once in a lifetime.

Jihad – struggle to establish Allah's rule in the entire world – is the next most important pillar of Islam and it is its principal distinguishing feature.

Allah, according to Quran, wants to establish His rule in the entire world by establishing its superiority over all other religions:

*9.33. It is He Who has sent His Messenger with guidance and the religion of truth (Islam), to make it superior over all religions even though the infidels (polytheists, pagans, idolaters, disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah) hate (it).*

*3.85. And whoever seeks a religion other than Islam, it will never be accepted of him, and in the Hereafter he will be one of the losers.*

Muslims believe that those who follow Allah's orders as revealed to Prophet Muhammad would be rewarded booty and wealth in this life [Quran 8.69, 48.20 etc.] and paradise after death. Islamic paradise is a place where there is unlimited supply of drinking water, fruits, honey, milk, meat, silk clothes, jewelry of gold, wine and virgins for every inhabitant to enjoy [Quran 18.31, 37.48, 38.51, 47.15, 52.22 etc].

Those who do not believe in his words (called Kafirs, infidels or unbelievers) would be punished in this world and after death, they will be put in hell forever. Punishment awarded by Allah for unbelievers in this world include getting diseases like plague [Quran 2.59], getting converted into apes [Quran 2.65], agony [Quran 3.56], flood, locusts, lice, frogs, blood [Quran 7.133], hit by tornado and swallowed by Earth and water [Quran 29.40] etc. Being sent to hell would mean being burnt in fire [Quran 4.56], having to drink boiling fetid water [Quran 14.16] and being tortured in several other ways.

Quran repeatedly condemns unbelievers (non-Muslims) and asks Muslims to keep struggling to spread Islam in the whole world by all possible means including persuasion, taxation, terror and murder

of non-Muslims. This struggle is called jihad and it is mandatory for all able-bodied Muslim males.

## History of Islam

Since Muhammad is considered to be the last and final messenger of Allah, Muslims believe that Quran is the final truth for the entire humanity. Quran, according to them, is free from any error, falsehood or contradiction and hence the question of its improvement by humans does not arise.

This is the reason Islam has not changed at all during the last 1400 years of its existence. Islam cannot have any history of change, growth or decline. It remains and will remain as it is.

However, in its political expression, it expanded from Saudi Arabia to the entire Middle East, North Africa, South Asia, South East Asia and parts of Europe. The central political and religious leadership of Islamic world was called Caliphate. Muhammad was succeeded by the following Caliphs:

Abu Bakr (632-634), Umar (634-644), Uthman (644-656), Ali (656-661), Ummayad Caliphs based in Damascus (661-750), Abbasid Caliphs based in Baghdad (750-1258) and Ottoman Caliphs based in Istanbul (1362-1924). However, there were also isolated Islamic empires and sultanates in different parts of Asia and Africa which were not directly under the central Caliphate.

From the 19<sup>th</sup> century onward, gradually most of the Muslim states came under the colonial rule of European empires.

The post of last Caliph was abolished by Kemal Ataturk, the first President and founder of modern Turkey in 1924. He declared Turkey to be a secular and democratic nation-state.

After World War II, all Muslim states got gradually liberated from the European powers and became democratic nation states or autocratic regimes with varying degrees of Islamization.

The organization called Islamic State, most active in Syria-Iraq region, is now trying to establish a global Islamic Caliphate.

Currently, there are about 50 Islamic states in the world. There are about 1.60 billion Muslims today, making Islam the second largest in terms of population.

## Sects of Islam

There are 2 main sects of Islam – Sunni and Shia. They differ not on the fundamentals of Islamic beliefs, but on minor issues.

For example, Shias believe that only Muhammad's close relative such as his cousin and son-in-law Ali should have succeeded Muhammad, not Abu Bakr. Sunnis do not find anything wrong with Abu Bakr and his successors. As a corollary to this difference, Shias reject all Hadiths involving Caliphs other than Ali.

This difference intensified further after Ali's son, Hussain, was killed by a Sunni Umayyad Caliph

in the Battle of Karbla in 680 CE.

Another major difference is that Shias revere, almost worship religious leaders called Ayatollahs and Imams; treat them as their role models and make pilgrimage to their shrines. Sunnis consider this insulting to Allah.

A good percentage of Sunnis do not consider Shias to be Muslims.

There are around 80% Sunnis and 20% Shias in the world today. Shias are in majority only in Iran, Iraq, Bahrain, Lebanon and Azerbaijan.

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Islam

##### Doctrine of the divine origin of Islam is unacceptable

Muslims believe that Muhammad had been chosen as the last messenger of Allah. The messages communicated to Muhammad by Allah are eternally true and good for all mankind. There cannot therefore be any falsehood or error in Quran.

But, as we will see in sub chapters 4C and 4D, Quran has hundreds of false and self-contradictory statements. Even one false statement or contradiction is enough to prove that Quran could not have been the message of Allah, as Allah is supposed to be all-knowing.

So, Quran could not have been a true revelation of the real creator of the universe, who is said to be all-knowing. This means Muhammad is not a real messenger of any divine entity. Thus, this explanation of the origin of Islam is false.

But if Muhammad was not the real messenger of the creator of the universe, what made him propound Islam?

##### Did Muhammad invent Islam in order to lure people to get booty by undertaking criminal activities?

This hypothesis would imply that Muhammad himself did not believe in Islam, but he manufactured it for amassing wealth and enjoying sexual varieties for himself and his associates by undertaking criminal activities. Islam approves plundering non-Muslims for booty, imposing Jizya tax and killing non-Muslims in case they refuse to pay Jizya tax. So, Islam could be viewed as an ideology sanctioning these criminal activities just to enable easy money and sex for its followers.

But this hypothesis has 2 problems:

Muhammad was born in a Pagan family in 7<sup>th</sup> century in a place like Arabia, where people were generally very loyal to their tradition. It is therefore unlikely that Muhammad, defying his entire heritage, would discard all the inherited concepts of God and morality; become a covert atheist overnight and then decide to cheat people by placing before them a monotheistic ideology like Islam.

His ideology aimed at establishing Allah's rule in the entire world. Achievement of this goal required tremendous sacrifice at personal level, even risking one's life because it involved constant fight to defeat all other ideologies and religions by force. A limited personal goal of having only

wealth and women therefore cannot justify such a big venture.

## So, what was it? What factor then gave rise to Islam?

To understand the cause of the origin of Islam, we have to understand the factors which influenced the formative years of Muhammad.

There are 3 such factors:

**Childhood tragedies**

**Emotionally unsatisfying marriage with his first wife**

**Influence of monotheistic religions of Judaism and Christianity**

Let me describe each of these factors.

### **Childhood tragedies**

Muhammad's father Abdullah died at the age of 25 after a brief illness within a few months after his marriage. Muhammad was born in 570 CE, two months after the death of his father. His father's death was the first tragedy in Muhammad's life.

This tragic event naturally devastated Muhammad's mother Aminah. She went into severe depression. This depression must have affected Muhammad's growth as a baby, as at that time, he was still in his mother's womb. Modern medical science has amply demonstrated the link between mother's state of mind and the growth of her baby in the womb.

Muhammad's mother was now a poor widow. She was not offered any substantial financial help from the family members. She was in any case so depressed that she had lost all desire to bring up Muhammad. So, **she decided to hand him over to a professional wet nurse – Halima**. This was the second tragedy in Muhammad's life – he did not get the love of his mother. **Why ??**

Initially, Halima did not want to take Muhammad, as she was not getting enough money for her services. But Halima failed to get any child of a wealthy parent, so she had to agree to take Muhammad, even though she was not very keen.

**Naturally, Muhammad did not get the love and care he deserved even from Halima. This was the third tragedy.**

Owing to these devastating tragedies, Muhammad could not grow up normally. He became very solitary and withdrawn. So, **Halima wanted to return Muhammad to his mother at the age of two**. But his mother was not yet mentally ready to take back the child. Finally, she accepted him when he was 5 years old.

His mother died when Muhammad was just 6 years old. Perhaps she never recovered from the shock of the death of her husband. This was the 4th tragedy.

Then, Muhammad was looked after by his grandfather Abdul-Muttalib. He loved and even pampered Muhammad to no end. This was the best time of Muhammad since his birth. Unfortunately, his grandfather also died after 2 years. This was the 5<sup>th</sup> tragedy.

Then, his paternal uncle Abu Talib took care of him. Abu Talib was the leader of Banu Hashim clan of Quraysh tribe. He protected Muhammad from other clans of Quraysh tribe when they complained to Abu Talib about Muhammad's criticism of their gods. He took Muhammad on his business trips to Syria etc where Muhammad learnt about other religions.

However, since Abu Talib was not well off, Muhammad must have lived under poor conditions. His other better off uncles refused to look after him.

It is thus obvious that Muhammad suffered several emotional and material trauma during his childhood.

These tragedies during his early childhood must have traumatized Muhammad. He did not get the attention and love he deserved from his father, mother, foster-mother and grandfather. All these tragic events must have made him feel deprived and orphaned. He must have felt angry, very angry at his fate, at his parents, at the society, and life in general.

This deprivation and anger was so intense that he became mentally sick. He lost all desires to socialize and became completely withdrawn. Even after he grew up, he would spend most of his time alone in the caves in nearby mountains. He started dreaming and hallucinating about ghosts, angels, kingdoms, God, revenge, aggression and so forth.

The attention Muhammad could not get from his parents, he now aspired to get from people by commanding unquestioned respect, adulation and obedience. He started thinking feverishly how to carve a powerful place for himself in the world.

But to get recognition and respect, you must do something big for the society. So, he started thinking big. He started becoming ambitious. His anger started getting channelized for a higher purpose in life. This was the psychological motivation for his ambition of doing something really big.

### **Emotionally unsatisfying marriage with his first wife**

Since Muhammad was poor, he agreed to be hired by the richest woman of Makkah -- Khadija for a trade caravan assignment. Khadija was widely respected for her business acumen and organizing capability. She was nick-named as "Princess of Quraysh" and "The Pure One".

Khadija had been widowed twice and had several children from her late husbands. The experience she had had with her late husbands must have made her wiser. She must have realized that she was mentally too strong to be dominated by any husband even though Arabian culture was male-dominated. So, she rejected all marriage proposals received from rich and noble families. She knew she could not

have loving relationship with anyone equal or superior to her, as a man from such background was likely to try to dominate her while she would not tolerate any domineering behavior from any male.

So, she decided to propose to Muhammad to be her next partner. Muhammad was not only poor and inferior in status, but also 15 years younger to her. So, she thought he would be unlikely to dominate her.

When she proposed to marry young Muhammad, he immediately agreed. At that time, she was 40 and he was 25.

But why did Muhammad agree to this uneven marriage, where his wife was much richer, smarter, had a higher social status and was older than him?

Muhammad must have agreed to this marriage because he wanted to get rid of his poverty and the burden of earning his livelihood. He also must have aspired for a higher social status, which he thought would help him achieve his ambition of doing something big.

But this marriage was of convenience, not of romantic love. So, it did not satisfy him emotionally, partly because she was too old and partly she did not give him any son (both of their sons died at very early age), though she gave him 4 daughters. As in all primitive societies, in Arabia too, sons were prized much more than daughters for simple practical reasons – boys were needed to fight and protect tribes and do farming or trading under difficult conditions.

However, Muhammad was in awe of Khadija's superior status and riches and he did not want to lose his newly acquired status due to this marriage. So, he did not dare to divorce her or marry other women while she was alive.

That Muhammad was dissatisfied with this marriage is proved by the simple fact that as soon as Khadija died in 619 CE at the age of 64, Muhammad, who was 49 at that time, immediately went on a marriage and sex spree. Had he really loved Khadija, he would not have thought of remarrying at the ripe age of 49 after 24 long years of relationship with her.

Just after Khadija's death, within a short span of 12 years between 619 and 631 CE, Muhammad married 11 women; married and divorced 16 other women and had sex with several other slave girls. In 632, he died.

It is also perfectly understandable why Muhammad fell for a 9 year old girl – Aisha just after Khadija's death. This was to make up the deprivation he had undergone while living with a much older and dominating Khadija. His mind now wanted to make up for the lost opportunity – he now wanted a very, very young wife bordering a child.

So, Khadija was a big influence on Muhammad, partly positive and mostly negative.

Muhammad was too masculine to submit to any woman. He however did not dare to lose social respect by divorcing Khadija. This dilemma frustrated him day in and day out. This motivated him to seek

higher respectability of his own in the outside world. He became politically very ambitious. Rather than basking under the glory of his wife, he decided to make his own respectable place in the world.

So, this was another factor which fueled his ambition of doing something big in an aggressive way.

### **Influence of monotheistic religions of Judaism and Christianity**

Muhammad learnt about monotheistic religions – Judaism and Christianity – while on business trips to distant lands with his uncle and in the local fairs where Jews and Christians used to come and preach. He must have been impressed by the omniscient, omnipotent nature of one creator God believed by these religions. These religions fascinated him because they unified and simplified the explanation of the world. He also accepted the Judaic doctrine of a geo-centric universe, which appeared quite obviously true to him. All Judaic beliefs about the origin of the universe, God's creation in 6 days, fall of man due to Adam and Eve's disobedience to God's order, flatness of Earth, Sun revolving around Earth etc were accepted by Muhammad as true.

He was also aware of the high respect the past 'prophets' such as Abraham, Moses and Jesus commanded among people.

With the knowledge of Judaism and Christianity, Muhammad could easily contrast the multiplicity of Pagan gods with their limited powers and mutually conflicting nature. He was embedded in Pagan culture, but he was inspired by Judaism so much that he decided to challenge the Pagan religion.

Human mind wants a unifying principle, which can explain every event of the universe. The underlying harmony in the cosmos can be explained only by some unifying force or intelligence.

Islam is nothing but **Judaism in full bloom**. Judaism propounded the doctrine of only one God who wanted to kill anyone who dared to worship any other God. It is this intolerance of other gods which became the central doctrine of Islam.

 Muhammad also borrowed the concept of heaven and hell from Christianity and combined it with the intolerance of Judaic God. 

### **Origin of Islam**

Muhammad had been exposed to the Judaic world-view where doctrines of the creation of the world in 6 days and fall of man from heaven to Earth due to disobedience of God's order had been propounded.

Muhammad however realized a grave shortcoming in Judaism – it had no answer how man would regain the original blissful state of heaven where he lived joyously under the loving care of God. Judaism was bogged down too much with the local needs of Israelites. Its main narrative was its concern for only their homeland, security, prosperity and political supremacy. At the most, they wanted to wait for a yet-to-be-born Messiah who would bring peace and prosperity in the world under Israeli theocratic leadership.

But Judaism did not deal with the issue of how the fallen mankind would regain entry into heaven and live in proximity with God once again.

Christianity was indeed concerned with this missing issue, but its solution, thought Muhammad, was illogical. Christianity prescribed repentance by entire mankind for the sin committed by Adam and Eve. Muhammad argued that asking for repentance of entire mankind was unnecessary, because it was the personal mistake of Adam and Eve; once they repented, God forgave them and in fact God sent Adam to Earth as His first prophet.

So, what could be the way to re-enter heaven for the entire mankind?

It was Muhammad's answer to this question that gave birth of Islam.

Muhammad, taking the cue from Judaic concept of God, thought that since there is only one God and He is most disturbed when a person starts worshipping any other God, the only way a person can hope to please God is that he worships only this God, and never worships any other God.

Besides, Muhammad thought, since most people are ignorant about the existence of the true God, it also becomes the duty of every knowing person to educate and persuade such ignorant people to believe and worship this one God only. If due to ignorance, someone resists this doctrine, he must be pressurized to accept it, as it is in his own interest. God would be very pleased with such effort, because only with such endeavor, the entire mankind would become wise enough to worship Him alone.

Suppose a child insists to play on a roof on which there is no barrier around its edge. So, there is a danger of his falling off. Suppose he goes to play there despite his parents forbidding him to do so. Under these circumstances, is it not the duty of parents to go to the roof, catch hold of the child, slap him and forcibly bring him back to the ground?

On the same analogy, Muhammad developed the doctrine of converting people to Islam by education, if possible; by force, if necessary. He thought that if by application of a little force, people could be brought to the true world-view he was convinced he had, it would be a great service to them, as they would be assured of heaven after death and a happy life on Earth. So, it is only out of 'compassion', not malice that Muhammad was willing to use force to bring people on the right path he thought he had discovered.

This spirit of 'compassion' was articulated by the then supreme religious leader of Iran, Ayatollah Khomeini in 1984 in the following words:



*"If one allows the infidels to continue playing their role of corrupters on Earth, their eventual moral punishment will be all the stronger. Thus, if we kill the infidels in order to put a stop to their corrupting activities, we have indeed done them a service. For their eventual punishment will be less. To allow the infidels to stay alive means to let them do more corrupting. To kill them is a surgical*

*operation commanded by Allah the Creator."*

So, Muhammad argued that worshipping the only true God and persuading/forcing others to do the same are the only means through which one can gain re-entry into heaven, because this is the only way to please God. A life dedicated to such venture, Muhammad argued, would not only ensure entry into heaven, but also a good life on Earth. God, pleased with such people, would bestow them the blessings of wealth, social status and a variety of sexual pleasure.

So, like Judaism (and unlike Christianity), Muhammad did not condemn the enjoyment of wealth and sex in the present life.

To sum up, according to Muhammad, worshipping only one God and persuading/forcing everyone else to do the same is what was needed to enjoy heaven and the present life.

This is the unique answer of Islam to the question of how one should live life.

Muhammad called such a God 'Allah' and his venture to educate/pressurize entire mankind to worship only Allah 'jihad'.

### **Why Muhammad adored the aggressiveness of Judaic God**

Judaic God was extremely aggressive towards anyone worshipping any other God and was ready to kill such a person. Belief in this Judaic aggressive God as the only true God was very emotionally satisfying to Muhammad. Such a God immediately became his role model, because now, all his sub-conscious pent-up anger and frustration of previous years could be vented in an acceptable way by becoming a follower of such a God. Muhammad therefore adored such a God. He declared himself to be His slave.

So, now, finally Muhammad's childhood and marriage frustration got a respectable outlet. He could be justifiably aggressive towards people in order to bring them to the true path of worshipping only one God so that they are saved from the anger of God in this life and after-life. Now, people could be subjugated or killed under the pious conviction that it was for the sake of saving them from the anger of God. This is why jihad – converting people to Islam by persuasion or force – became the central doctrine of his belief-system.

This idea was so fulfilling to Muhammad's sub-conscious mind seeking to be aggressive, that he got obsessed with this idea of God. Soon, he started dreaming or perhaps hallucinating about his interaction with such a God. His sub-conscious desire to be somebody really big must have generated such a dream/hallucination. In one of such dreams/hallucinations, he might have seen God sending some angel and declaring him to be His final messenger. So, he started believing that he was really the final messenger of God! He then openly declared himself to be the messenger of God.

Soon whatever thoughts about God and His possible commands in a particular situation came in his

mind, he assumed it to have been sent by God Himself! In doing this, he was simply following Jesus and other Judaic prophets. After all, they too had assumed that God was directly communicating with them and sending messages to them for guiding humanity!

This practice was intellectually and emotionally very satisfying to Muhammad's aggressive desires. Now, whatever he wanted to do or say, he assumed that God was guiding him through His messages! Now, he believed that he had the divine sanction before every word that came from his mouth and every deed that he accomplished!

Islam was born.

### **Explaining the central doctrines of Islam**

Essentially, Islam is nothing but Judaism applied universally with full force with addition of Christian concepts of heaven and hell.

There are striking similarities between Judaism and Islam. For example:

Both are monotheistic; both are intolerant of other religions; Islam recognizes most of the prophets of Torah; both claim to be offspring of Abraham (Jews consider themselves children of Isaac; while Muslims consider themselves children of Ismail; both Isaac and Ismail were sons of Abraham from different wives); both reject Christian concept of Jesus being divine or Son of God; women in both religions have to cover their head in public; both religions permit polygamy; both do circumcision of the male child; etc.

However, Muhammad took the Judaic concept of intolerance of other religions very, very seriously. He made it the central doctrine of Islam. He believed that Muslims must build pressure on all non-Muslims to convert them to Islam. He sincerely believed that persuading/forcing people was the only way all humans can enter paradise and also enjoy the present life. He thought this was the only unfinished task of God left to be completed.

Let me now explain the most central doctrines of Islam:

1. **There is only one God - Allah**
2. **Allah wants to establish His rule in the entire world**
3. **Allah hates unbelievers**
4. **Allah sanctions subduing, taxing and killing of non-Muslims**
5. **Allah sanctions plundering of non-Muslims**
6. **Allah wants Muslims to migrate to other lands in order to convert non-Muslims to Islam**
7. **Jihad permeates all Islamic beliefs, institutions and practices**

## 8. Islam sanctions deception to reach its goal

### 1. There is only one God - Allah

As stated earlier, belief in one God (Allah) was inspired by Judaism. Muhammad believed that praying, worshipping, adoring and glorifying Allah was the only way to please Him and pleasing Him is the only way to enter heaven or paradise.

This is why out of 5 pillars of Islam, 4 are about believing and worshipping Allah (belief in Allah and Muhammad as His messenger; praying to Allah 5 times a day; fasting during daytime for a month in order to remember Allah more intensely and pilgrimage to Makkah at least once in lifetime in order to perform certain rituals associated with Allah/Muhammad). The 5<sup>th</sup> pillar is giving certain percentage of income as charity to the poor.

### 2. Allah wants to establish His rule in the entire world

Muhammad believed that Allah likes to be worshipped and glorified. Allah wants that His commands must be followed by everyone. This is what pleases Allah the most. Hence, this is the only way humans can please Allah in order to be happy in the present life and live in heaven for ever after death. So, it follows that everyone should not only worship Allah and follow His commands, he should also try to convert others in whatever way it is possible. This means all other religions must be denounced and dismantled. Quran sets this goal very clearly:

3.85 And whoever seeks a religion other than Islam, it will never be accepted of him, and in the Hereafter he will be one of the losers.

9.33 It is He Who has sent His Messenger with guidance and the religion of truth (Islam), to make it superior over all religions even though the Mushrikun (polytheists, pagans, idolaters, disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah) hate (it).

So, the goal for Muslims is very clearly laid down: every Muslim must strive to make Islam the only religion of the world.

Essentially, this means Islam wants to be the supreme ruling ideology of the world. So, this is an imperialist, conquest ideology. This logically implies that the goal of Islam is not dependent on what non-Muslims do or do not do; it is pre-determined to conquer all religions of all non-Muslims and convert them to Islam.

So, the argument of the apologists that Muslims fight only if they are attacked by non-Muslims is anti-Islamic. Islam does not need any action on part of non-Muslims to attack them. It is under command of Allah to conquer the world and impose its ideology on everyone, no matter what non-Muslims do or don't do.

The reasons cited by some apologists to justify Islamic violence – persecution of Muslims,

injustice, colonialism, poverty, unemployment, bad foreign policy of superpowers resulting in meddling into Muslim affairs etc. – are therefore superfluous. Allah, according to Muhammad, has simply commanded to Islamize the whole world, no matter how friendly or unfriendly non-Muslims are towards Muslims.

Islam is therefore an imperialist ideology whose only aim is to implement “Allah’s rule” in the whole world, no matter what non-Muslims do or do not do to Muslims.

### 3. Allah hates unbelievers

This is one of the central narratives of Quran. No reader of Quran can miss this. There are thousands of verses in Quran which state that Allah hates unbelievers; that Allah punishes them in this world by way of poverty, disease, famines, flood etc; and that He burns them in hell after death. Allah wants Muslims to be hard against unbelievers. He commands Muslims to convert them to Islam by persuasion, if possible; by force, if necessary.

See some examples of the hatred against unbelievers in Quran:

Unbelievers are apes and pigs --

7.166 When they persisted in doing what they were forbidden from, We said to them, “Become apes debased.”

5.60 They are those whom Allah has subjected to His curse and to His wrath; and He has turned some of them into apes and swine ...

Unbelievers are the vilest of animals –

8.55 Surely, the vilest of all the moving creatures, in the sight of Allah, are those who reject Faith and do not believe

Unbelievers have disease in their hearts –

2.10 In their hearts is a disease (of doubt and hypocrisy) and Allah has increased their disease. A painful torment is theirs because they used to tell lies.

Unbelievers are deaf, dumb and blind –

2.171 And the example of those who disbelieve, is as that of him who shouts to those (flock of sheep) that hears nothing but calls and cries. They are deaf, dumb and blind. So they do not understand.

Unbelievers are the worst of people –

98.6 Surely those who disbelieved from among the People of the Book and the polytheists will be in the fire of Jahannam (hell), in which they will be living forever. Those are the worst of all human beings.

Unbelievers are the lowest of the low –

95.4 We created man in the best stature (mold),

95.5 Then We reduced him to the lowest of the low,

95.6 Except those who believed and did righteous deeds, because for them there is a reward never ending.

Unbelievers are sinful liars –

45.7 Woe to every sinful liar,

45.8 Who hears the Verses of Allah (being) recited to him, yet persists with pride as if he heard them not. So announce to him a painful torment!

Allah brings down destruction on unbelievers –

47.10 Have they not travelled through the earth, and seen what was the end of those before them? Allah destroyed them completely and a similar (fate awaits) the disbelievers.

Allah has cursed unbelievers –

2.88 And they say, "Our hearts do not hear or understand Allah's words" Nay, Allah has cursed them for their disbelief, so little is that which they believe.

It is thus obvious that Quran is full of hatred against unbelievers.

In fact, their very word “Kafir” (which is translated as unbelievers) is laden with hatred. This word is not simply a neutral classification, it is denouncement of all non-Muslims as those whom Allah hates and wants to punish and against whom all Muslims must be harsh.

So, when OIC (Organization of Islamic Co-operation), which is an organization of 58 Muslim-majority states, demand that no person should criticize Muslims on religious issues and such speech should be treated as hate speech and therefore banned, they are either ignorant of the hate speech of Quran against non-Muslims or being hypocritical. If hate speech is to be banned, the first book which needs to be banned is Quran itself, because it is bursting with hatred against non-Muslims.

Contrast this hatred preached by Islam with the view of Christianity, Buddhism, Jainism and Sikhism which treat all humans, irrespective of their beliefs, with respect and want to gently persuade them to what they believe to be the right path. Islam believes in hating, terrorizing, taxing or killing non-Muslims, while these religions believe in changing the heart and mind of people by love and education.

In fact, in any civilized society, differences of opinion on controversial issues should be sorted out by discovering more facts by scientific method and by mutual discussion of these facts in an amicable way. However, Islam tries to change people, who happen to hold a different view, by hating, criticizing, belittling, condemning, abusing, humiliating, subduing, cursing and punishing. This approach never works.

This approach can never change one's heart and mind. It can only generate conflict and violence.

#### 4. Allah sanctions subduing, taxing and killing of non-Muslims

As I have stated in the chapter dealing with Judaism, Judaic God had no hesitation in killing anyone worshipping any other God.

See some of the passages of Bible:

Leviticus 24.15-16

*Assault and blasphemy*

*Tell the Israelites: Anyone who curses God will be liable to punishment. And anyone who blasphemes the Lord's name must be executed. The whole community will stone that person. Immigrant and citizen alike: whenever someone blasphemes the Lord's name, that person will be executed.*

Deuteronomy 13.1-5

*False prophets and false gods*

*You must follow the Lord your God alone! ...Cling to him - no other! That prophet or dream interpreter must be executed because he encouraged you to turn away from the Lord your God who brought you out of Egypt...*

Deuteronomy 13.6-11

*False prophets and false gods*

*... Stone them until they are dead because they desired to lead you away from the Lord your God, the one who brought you out of Egypt, out of the house of slavery.*

Muhammad's view of Allah, derived essentially from Judaism, too was therefore equally intolerant of any other God or religion. But 'compassionate' Allah gives one extra option for followers of other religions: if unbelievers could be subdued and made to pay Jizya, they may be tolerated and left free after humiliating them! However, if they refuse to pay even Jizya, they must be fought and killed.

See the following verse of Quran:

9.29. *Fight against those who (1) believe not in Allah, (2) nor in the Last Day, (3) nor forbid that which has been forbidden by Allah and His Messenger (4) and those who acknowledge not the religion of truth (i.e. Islam) among the people of the Scripture (Jews and Christians), until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.*

Here, Allah is prescribing imposition of Jizya on all those people of the Scripture who do not believe in Allah, Last Day, and Muhammad as messenger. So, all Jews, Christians, Hindus, Buddhists etc irrespective of what they do or do not do, deserve to be subdued and imposed Jizya tax.

This verse was ‘revealed’ in 631 CE (AH 9), before Muhammad’s raid in Tabuk, the first aggression against Christians. Muhammad had become quite strong by this time, as all Arabia had submitted to Islam. Muhammad was now developing a new aggressive policy against all non-Muslims. This verse came just one year before he died. Hence, it represents the final version of Islam.

This verse does not say that only if non-Muslims attack Muslims or prevent them from following Islam, they should be attacked, subdued and imposed Jizya tax. The only condition required for subjugation and tax imposition is their just being non-Muslims. It is an open-ended verse applicable on all unbelievers of the world, not just aggressors.

Apologists however keep on claiming that Islam always sanctions fighting only in self-defense. For every reference of fighting in Quran, they come up with imaginary or real historical events where some non-Muslim army was ready to attack Muslim army and therefore Muhammad received the message from Allah to fight in self-defense. For example, they argue that verse 9.29 was revealed just before the massive army of Byzantine Empire was about to attack Muhammad’s army.

But had that been the case, Allah would have communicated verse 9.29 something like this:

*“Fight against Byzantines who are going to attack you, as they want to prevent you from worshipping Me. I will help you defeat them. After defeating them, impose Jizya tax on their subjects.”*

But Allah does not say anything like that. He commands to fight just anyone who does not believe in Allah or the Last Day unless he pays Jizya.

If Allah wanted Muhammad to fight only in self-defense, He should have always said in Quran: “*fight only when attacked*”. Why does Allah always say: “*fight against unbelievers*” or “*fight against those who do not believe in Allah*”? Did Allah not know the difference in the meaning of words “*fight only when attacked*” and “*fight against unbelievers*”? Did Allah not know enough Arabic to make this distinction clear? No amount of semantic acrobatics can change the meaning of Quran from “*fight unbelievers*” to “*fight in self-defense*”!

Worse, Quran clearly says that Jews and Christians must be subdued/humiliated while Jizya is imposed. This means they must be made to feel inferior compared to Muslims; they must be made to feel that they believe in an inferior and false religion. This is a purely aggressive and disrespectful act, not a defensive measure.

Islamic apologists say that it is a favor to non-Muslims because they are being given freedom to practice their religions in lieu of this protection money and by paying Jizya, they have also been freed from the responsibility of fighting against external enemies.

But this argument of the apologists is hypocritical.

Suppose tomorrow US federal government imposes an Islam Tax on all US Muslims in lieu of

granting freedom to practice their religion and not having an obligation to join military service. Besides, just to humiliate them and prove the inferiority of Islam, the government also requires Muslims to take an oath that US constitution is superior to Islamic law. Would US Muslims accept it as a great favor? They would rather start riots on the streets!

A further analysis of this verse reveals the aggression of Islam even more clearly.

This verse asks Muslims to fight non-Muslims in case they refuse to pay Jizya. Now, what is the meaning of 'fighting'? Surely, it has to be harsher than extracting Jizya tax, as this was to be undertaken only in case of refusal to pay Jizya tax. What could be harsher than extracting money? It has to be either confiscation of the entire property or murder of the non-Muslim concerned. It cannot be anything else. In both cases, it is an open sanction for aggression.

This line of action is further confirmed by Hadith of Sahih Muslim (19.4294):

*..... the Messenger of Allah would say: When you meet your enemies who are polytheists, invite them to three courses of action. If they respond to any one of these, you also accept it and withhold yourself from doing them any harm. Invite them to (accept) Islam; if they respond to you, accept it from them and desist from fighting against them. .. If they refuse to accept Islam, demand from them the Jizya. If they agree to pay, accept it from them and hold off your hands. If they refuse to pay the tax, seek Allah's help and fight them.*

Thus, according to this verse of Quran, Muslims are required to be aggressive against all non-Muslims. This is what Islamic State, Al Qaida, Taliban and other Islamic organizations are doing. So, they are following what Quran has sanctioned. This is pure aggressive fighting, not defensive fighting.

Jizya is nothing but a pressure tactic. Muhammad invented it just to pressurize non-Muslims to accept Islam.

This rule is applicable to all non-Muslims. This practice has been followed by most Muslim rulers throughout the history of Islam. As, for example, Jews and Christians were imposed Jizya tax by Muslim rulers in Arabian Peninsula, North Africa, Caucasus, Spain and South Asia. Hindus in India were also required to pay Jizya under most Islamic rulers.

Let us examine some other aggressive verses:

8.12 (Remember) when your Lord inspired the angels, "Verily, I am with you, so keep firm those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes."

The entire chapter 8 was composed in 624 CE (AH 2) after the victory in the Battle of Badr. Here, Muhammad is saying that Allah gave them this victory by inspiring angels to strengthen the hands of Muslim fighters by creating terror in the heart of unbelievers. This is a clear case of aggression. Besides,

notice the words. Here, Allah is sanctioning terror not against local enemies such as Makkans in self-defense, but against anyone who did not believe in Allah!

9.73. *O Prophet! Strive hard against the disbelievers and the hypocrites, and be harsh against them, their abode is Hell, - and worst indeed is that destination.*

As explained earlier, Chapter 9 of Quran pertains to the period when Muhammad had become strong (631 CE) and it expresses his aggressive policy against non-Muslims. Here also fight is to be undertaken against all non-Muslims, not just local rivals in self-defense.

4.89. *They wish that you reject Faith, as they have rejected (Faith), and thus that you all become equal (like one another). So take not Auliya' (protectors or friends) from them, till they emigrate in the Way of Allah. But if they turn back (from Islam), take (hold) of them and kill them wherever you find them, and take neither Auliya' (protectors or friends) nor helpers from them.*

Chapter 4 of Quran was composed just after the Battle of Uhud (625 CE) in which Muslims had been badly defeated by well-prepared army of Makkans. Muslims were now leaving Islam. So, here, Muhammad is trying to raise the low morale of Muslims and advising them to kill any Muslim who leaves Islam. Later, this became the standard practice in Islam. Under Islamic law, apostasy is to be punished by death. So, once a person has become a Muslim, he cannot leave Islam. This means there is no freedom to choose a religion in Islam. This proves its aggressiveness and intolerance.

Following this verse 4.89, the Islamic law (Sharia) provides death for apostates. In fact, apostasy is punishable by death in several Islamic countries – Saudi Arabia, UAE, Qatar, Afghanistan, Sudan, Brunei, Mauritania etc.

3.151. *We shall cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve, because they joined others in worship with Allah, for which He had sent no authority; their abode will be the Fire and how evil is the abode of the Zalimun (polytheists and wrong-doers).*

This verse too refers to the depressing time after the Battle of Uhud. Here, 'Allah' (Muhammad) is threatening to terrorize unbelievers, especially polytheists who worship more than one god.

48.29 *Muhammad is the messenger of Allah. And those with him are hard (ruthless) against the disbelievers and merciful among themselves*

So, Islam does not treat Muslims and non-Muslims equally. Non-Muslims must be treated harshly, while Muslims should be treated mercifully. There is no reference to self-defense here too. All disbelievers must be treated harshly unconditionally, according to Allah.

Hadiths also express the same violent attitude:

Sahi Bukhari Volume 1, Book 2, Number 24

Narrated Ibn 'Umar:

*Allah's Apostle said: "I have been ordered (by Allah) to fight against the people until they testify that none has the right to be worshipped but Allah and that Muhammad is Allah's Apostle, ....."*

Here, Muhammad is not saying that he would fight only if non-Muslims attack him. He is claiming that Allah has ordered him to fight against all people who do not believe in Allah or Muhammad as His messenger.

*Fight everyone*

Sahi Bukhari

Volume 4, Book 52, Number 65:

Narrated Abu Musa:

*A man came to the Prophet and asked, "A man fights for war booty; another fights for fame and a third fights for showing off; which of them fights in Allah's Cause?" The Prophet said, "He who fights that Allah's Word (i.e. Islam) should be superior, fights in Allah's Cause."*

Here, Muhammad orders Muslims to fight in order to make Islam the most superior religion of the world. He does not say that Muslims should fight just to defend themselves. This is the true jihad – fighting in Allah's cause, according to Muhammad.

Sahi Bukhari

Volume 1, Book 11, Number 626

Narrated Abu Huraira:

*The Prophet said, "No prayer is harder for the hypocrites than the Fajr and the 'Isha' prayers and if they knew the reward for these prayers at their respective times, they would certainly present themselves (in the mosques) even if they had to cawl." The Prophet added, "Certainly I decided to order the Mu'adh-dhin (call-maker) to pronounce Iqama and order a man to lead the prayer and then take a fire flame to burn all those who had not left their houses so far for the prayer along with their houses."*

Here Muhammad is expressing his desire to burn all those who do not come for a prayer. What happened to Allah's command: "*there is no compulsion in religion*" (Quran 2.256)?

*It is clear from these passages that Muhammad justified taxing, terrorizing, enslaving and killing non-Muslims to force them to accept Islam. In fact, he himself led or instigated hundreds of aggressive acts against non-Muslims including polytheist Makkans, Jews and Christians.*

## **5. Allah sanctions plundering of non-Muslims**

Muhammad believed that Allah not only approves subduing, taxing and killing non-Muslims for the sake of spreading Islam, but also approves just plundering and harassing them, in case they are too powerful to be subdued completely by Muslims.

Quran clearly sanctions plundering booty:

8.69. *So enjoy what you have gotten of booty in war, lawful and good, and be afraid of Allah...*

48.20. *Allah has promised you abundant spoils (booty) that you will capture,*

33.27. *And He caused you to inherit their lands, and their houses, and their riches, and a land which you had not trodden\_(before)...*

Similarly, there are hundreds of passages in Hadith of Shahi Bukhari and others justifying plundering and booty. See some samples here all taken from Hadith of Shahi Bukhari:

Volume 1, Book 2, Number 35:

Narrated Abu Huraira:

*"The Prophet said, "The person who participates in (Holy battles) in Allah's cause and nothing compels him to do so except belief in Allah and His Apostles, will be recompensed by Allah either with a reward, or booty (if he survives) or will be admitted to Paradise (if he is killed in the battle as a martyr). ..."*

Volume 1, Book 7, Number 331:

Narrated Jabir bin 'Abdullah:

*"The Prophet said, "I have been given five things which were not given to anyone else before me.....*

3. *The booty has been made Halal (lawful) for me yet it was not lawful for anyone else before me.*

Volume 8, Book 78, Number 698:

Narrated Abu Huraira:

*"We went out in the company of Allah's Apostle on the day of (the battle of) Khaibar, and we did not get any gold or silver as war booty, but we got property in the form of things and clothes...."*

The fact that Muhammad had borrowed this idea from Judaism is clear by the following Biblical passages which gives God's sanction for appropriating lands of non-Israelites:

Deuteronomy 9.5

*It is not because of your righteousness or your integrity that you are going in to take possession of their land; but on account of the wickedness of these nations, the LORD your God will drive them out before you, to accomplish what he swore to your fathers, to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.*

Deuteronomy 12.29-30

*The Lord your God will cut off before you the nations you are about to invade and dispossess. But when you have driven them out and settled in their land, and after they have been destroyed before*

you, be careful not to be ensnared by inquiring about their gods ...

Muhammad's justifications for booty was also the same as that of Judaism: since non-Muslims are refusing to believe in Allah, they are sinners and hence Muslims must punish them by plundering their property (and, if necessary, taking their life).

Muhammad followed this 'order of Allah' with full ferocity. Once he shifted to Madinah, he asked his followers to plunder the caravans of Makkans who used to pass through Madinah with their camels laden with trade goods such as dates, raisins, leather etc. This is confirmed by Ibn Ishaq, the earliest biographer of Muhammad in his book 'Sirat Rasul Allah'.

## **6. Allah wants Muslims to migrate to other lands in order to convert non-Muslims to Islam**

Muhammad sincerely believed that it was a sacred duty for Muslims to convert all non-Muslims of the world to Islam. This logically implied that Muslims must spread to the land of non-Muslims in order to convert them. Muhammad himself had migrated from Makkah to Madinah.

**Quran 4.100 says:**

*Whoever migrates in the way of Allah shall find on the Earth many a place to settle, and a wide dimension (of resources). Whoever leaves his home migrating for the sake of Allah and His Messenger, and death overtakes him, then, his reward is established with Allah. Allah is Most-Forgiving, Very-Merciful.*

This explains massive military campaigns of Muslims into the land of non-Muslims throughout the history of Islam. This also explains why Muslims have migrated to almost all countries of the world. For Muslims, even illegal immigration is fine, as they believe that all land belongs to Allah and migrating in any way for the sake of expansion of Islam is a religious obligation.

The migration could be of two types – a) migration by aggression and b) migration by legal or illegal but peaceful entry into the land of non-Muslims.

In the case of a), Muslims would be either victorious or get killed. If they become victorious, they would subjugate non-Muslims and impose Islam on them. Imposing Jizya would be the first step towards Islamization. In case, they get killed, they are supposed to go to paradise!

In case of b), after their entry into the foreign land, Muslims would increase their number by a very high birth rate (stopping birth of children is strictly prohibited in Islam). Once they are in sufficient number, they would start plundering non-Muslims (as discussed in the previous para). If non-Muslims flee the area, Muslims would capture the assets of the area. If non-Muslims resist, more harassment or plundering would follow. Thus, inch by inch, Muslims can keep on increasing their strength. Once they become strong enough, they would subjugate non-Muslims completely by force [or by majority strength in a democracy] and impose Islam on them.

This strategy has been followed and still being followed by Muslims around the world.

## **7. Jihad permeates all Islamic beliefs, institutions and practices**

Jihad – struggle to convert all non-Muslims to Islam by persuasion, if possible; by force/deceit, if necessary – permeates all beliefs, all institutions and all practices of Islam. It is the foundation of Islam. Let me explain how some of the well-known beliefs of Islam are logical outcome of jihad:

**Polygamy** – Quran approves having up to 4 wives by a Muslim man (Quran 4.3). This institution was necessary in view of the fact that in jihadi fights, many Muslims were getting killed. So, number of Muslim men at a given time used to be much less than that of women. So, to accommodate extra women, polygamy became necessary. Moreover, in jihadi fights, Muslims were killing non-Muslims and taking their women as booty. So to marry them, polygamy became necessary.

**Zakat** – It is one of the 5 pillars of Islam and it consists in giving certain percentage of income for social/religious purposes. In jihadi fights, a large number of Muslim men were getting killed. So, their widows and orphans had to be taken care of by the society. This necessitated compulsory charity on part of surviving Muslims. This is known as zakat. Moreover, zakat was also used to run schools where jihadis were to be trained. Zakat also funded jihadi battles.

**Ban on earning by interest/rent** – All economic policies of Muhammad had only one goal – collect maximum money for jihadi ventures. By denouncing interest, he ensured that nobody would enjoy the fruits of his saved money in any manner. So, the saved money would become useless, unless the person himself wanted to engage in business. Hence, it became easier for Muhammad to persuade the money-owner to part with his money in the form of Zakat or charity for jihad. The same logic holds good for ban on earning rent on one's land.

**High birth rate of Muslims** – Quran says that Allah gives and protects children. So they should not be killed due to poverty:

*“...kill not your children because of poverty - We provide sustenance for you and for them; ..”*  
(Quran 6.151)

This command logically implies that Muslims should not use contraceptives or abortion to avoid/kill children. This explains why Muslims across the world have much higher birth rates than followers of other religions. Muhammad must have thought that having maximum number of children would be good for jihad, because greater number of jihadis in a battle was more likely to end in victory.

## **8. Islam sanctions deception to reach its goal**

Muhammad was very intelligent. While he was in Makkah and his Islam was in its infancy, he knew he was too weak to fight physically against Makkans. So, he confined himself only to arguing and criticizing Paganic religion of Makkans and made peaceful adjustments with them. During this time, he

preached that everyone should be free to follow his own religion and there should be no compulsion. See the verses of Quran of this period:

*2.256. Let there be no compulsion in religion...*

*16.125. Invite (people) to the way of your Lord with wisdom and good counsel. And argue with them in the best of manners....*

*109.6. To you be your Way, and to me mine.....*

These are some of the verses of Quran preaching peace and respect for other's views. They are called Makkan verses.

However, once Muhammad shifted to Madinah and became militarily strong, he declared that Allah had superceded the Makkan verses and now sanctioned physical fight against non-Muslims! He took this U-turn by saying that Allah abrogates the previous verses by substituting them with better ones.

Quran 2.106 says:

*Whenever We abrogate a verse or cause it to be forgotten, We bring one better than it or one equal to it. Do you not know that Allah is powerful over everything?*

**This is a key verse of Quran**, as it empowered Muhammad to contradict any of his previous stands about anything with impunity. He now used this verse to justify his strategy of aggressive acts against non-Muslims in place of his earlier stand of peaceful co-existence with Paganic religion of Makkans.

Now, notice how diametrically opposite are the following verses of Quran vis-à-vis the earlier peaceful verses:

*8.12 I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes."*

*9.73. O Prophet! Strive hard against the disbelievers and the hypocrites, and be harsh against them...*

By making such U-turns, Muhammad taught Muslims a very good strategy: **talk peace & freedom when you are weak; fight and subjugate, when you are strong!**

To this day, Muslims are following this policy with grand success!

For example, Muslims are in minority in the US, Europe or India; so, in these places, they say Islam is a very peaceful religion; we want peaceful co-existence with all religions; we believe in friendship, freedom, democracy, secularism and all that blah, blah.

But look at the Islamic countries, where Muslims are in majority and they have Islamic governments. There, all the minorities – Christians, Hindus, Jews, atheists etc – are being harassed, kidnapped, plundered, killed, raped and forcibly converted to Islam! Their religious places of worship

are getting vandalized and destroyed! Their population has been shrinking! This is how Saudi Arabia, Iran, Iraq etc have achieved almost 100% Muslim population!

Saudi Arabia, which is the model of all Islamic nations, does not even allow public worship by non-Muslims, let alone exercise of religious freedoms such as free propagation and preaching of their religions!

Take another example. Most of the Islamic websites emphasize that Islam is a very peaceful religion and it does not support terrorism. They quote only the peaceful verses (Makkan verses) of Quran to prove their stand. But there, they do not talk about the fact of abrogation and existence of aggressive verses. They are doing this because they know that non-Muslims would be visiting these sites and they will be fooled. Precisely, this is what happens! Today, most non-Muslims including the Presidents and Prime Ministers of non-Islamic countries do believe that there is nothing wrong in Islam and only a few misguided youth have become terrorists without any official sanction of terrorism by Islam! This is the success of the strategy of deception!

Pakistan is a very good example of how Islam tries to deceive. It says it is fighting with terrorists and gets billions of dollars from the US as a military aid in the name of fighting terrorism. But, it covertly keeps on supporting anti-India and anti-Afghanistan terrorists. It sheltered Osama bin Laden and Mullah Umar while declaring in public that they were never in Pakistan!

So, while apologists of Islam keep on quoting peaceful verses, critics of Islam keep on quoting aggressive verses. The fact is that both types of verses are there in Quran. Muslims have been taught to use them cleverly depending on whether they are weak or strong vis-à-vis non-Muslims in a particular place at a particular time.

Not understanding this deceptive and double character of Islam is the biggest hurdle in combating global Islamic terrorism. Until we expose this deceitful character of Islam, we cannot eliminate it.

### **Islam and terrorism**

The above explanation of the origin of Islam clearly demonstrates that what we call terrorism is essentially what Muhammad taught and practiced! Jihadists are simply following their religion sincerely. It is the apologists of Islam who are misrepresenting Islam while trying to prove that Islam, like all other religions, is against aggression.

#### But what is terrorism?

Terrorism is any advocacy or activity that uses violence, sabotage or threat to generate social panic in order to further religious, political or other goals.

Let me explode some common myths prevalent about the relationship between Islam and terrorism:

**Myth 1: IS, Al Qaeda, Taliban, Boko Haram etc are terrorist organizations. They have**

nothing to do with Islam.

**Myth 2: Only a tiny Muslim population supports terrorism. All the rest are peace-loving.**

**Myth 3: There are two streams of Islam – Radical Islam and Moderate Islam. Only Radical Islam supports terrorism. Hence, we must fight Radical Islam and protect Moderate Islam.**

These myths have been propagated by apologists of Islam in the West. Naïve Westerners who have no first-hand knowledge of Quran or Hadith start believing in these myths. Politicians then start formulating their political strategies on such ignorance. This is bringing the entire Western civilization under existential threat. Islamic apologists have been incredibly successful in befooling infidels (non-Muslims, especially Westerners) into believing that the West has no problems with Islam.

Let me explode these myths:

**Myth 1: IS, Al Qaeda, Taliban, Boko Haram etc are terrorist organizations. They have nothing to do with Islam.**

Let me give the example of IS, which is the most active and most powerful Islamic terrorist organization in the world at present.

IS (Islamic State), also known as ISIS (Islamic State of Iraq and Syria), ISIL (Islamic State of Iraq and Levant) and Daesh (acronym of its Arabic name), is an offshoot of Al Qaeda, the terrorist organization responsible for 9/11 and several other major attacks against the Western interests. IS became the top Islamic terrorist organization, when it captured a substantial territory in Iraq and Syria. Its leader Abu Bakr Al-Baghdadi declared himself Caliph of all Muslims of the world on 29<sup>th</sup> June 2014. The goal of IS (like all other Islamic terrorist organizations) is to convert the whole world to Islam by force.

The US President Barrack Obama and almost all other Presidents and Prime Ministers of the world keep on repeating the same worn-out cliché: **Islamic State is not Islamic.** Terrorism has nothing to do with Islam and so on.

But **what is Islamic?** Surely, whatever is in Quran is 100% Islamic. Now, let us compare the vision and acts of IS and Quran.

Supremacy over all other religions:

IS wants to establish a world-wide Caliphate of Islam so that Islam is officially the only supreme religion of the world and all other religions are either banned or subdued. This is what Quran also teaches:

*3.85 And whoever seeks a religion other than Islam, it will never be accepted of him, and in the Hereafter he will be one of the losers.*

*9.33 It is He Who has sent His Messenger with guidance and the religion of truth (Islam), to*

make it superior over all religions even though the Mushrikun (polytheists, pagans, idolaters, disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah) hate (it).

Beheadings: IS has been beheading infidels. Is it sanctioned in Quran? Yes. Quran 47.4 says:

*So, when you encounter those who disbelieve, smite their necks, until when you have broken their strength thoroughly, then make them captives....*

Another Quranic verse 8.12 says:

*I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes.*

Crucifixions:

IS has been crucifying opponents of their ideology. This is fully sanctioned by Quran. Verse 5.33 says:

*Those who fight against Allah and His Messenger and run about trying to spread disorder on the earth, their punishment is that they shall be killed, or be crucified, or their hands and legs be cut off from different sides,...*

Slavery& rape:

IS has been raping infidel women and keeping them as slaves whenever they capture a territory. This is fully supported by Quran:

33.50. O Prophet! Verily, We have made lawful to you your wives, to whom you have paid their Mahr (bridal money given by the husband to his wife at the time of marriage), and those (captives or slaves) whom your right hand possesses - whom Allah has given to you....

4.24. Also (forbidden are) women already married, except those (captives and slaves) whom your right hands possess.

In Quran, the meaning of "whom your right hand possesses" is captives or prisoners of war who are kept as slaves. Muhammad himself had forcibly married a Jewish woman Safiya right after killing her husband, father and brother. He himself kept several concubines who had been captured in jihadi ventures.

Imposition of Jizya tax and dhimmitude on non-Muslims:

IS has been imposing Jizya tax on non-Muslims and treating them like second-class citizens under Dhimmitude, which is a well-established practice of Islamic law (Sharia). Quran fully supports this, as also explained in the beginning of this sub-head. Verse 9.29 says:

*Fight against those who (1) believe not in Allah, (2) nor in the Last Day, (3) nor forbid that which has been forbidden by Allah and His Messenger (4) and those who acknowledge not the religion*

*of truth (i.e. Islam) among the people of the Scripture (Jews and Christians), until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.*

Please notice here that Quran not only sanctions imposition of Jizya on Jews and Christians, but also wants them to be subdued or humiliated. This is exactly what is done by IS within its territories.

### Killing of Muslims:

You may be wondering why Muslims are also being killed by IS. After all, they are not unbelievers. This apparent contradiction is explained by verse 9.73 of Quran:

*O Prophet! Strive hard against the infidels and the hypocrites; and be severe unto them. Their abode is Hell -- a hapless destination.*

So, Quran sanctions not only being harsh against infidels (non-Muslims), but also hypocrites, i.e., Muslims who do not follow the principles of jihad. This is why IS keeps killing Shias and other Muslims who are believed to be not following the true jihad.

It is thus clear that the ideology of Islam = the ideology of IS.

The same principle applies to all Islamic terrorist organizations. Hence, Islam is the fundamental justification for these terrorist activities.

### **Myth 2: Only a tiny Muslim population supports terrorism. All the rest are peace-loving.**

Actually, terrorism gets expressed in various degrees of violence. As the most violent expression, a terrorist kills/subjugates all those who oppose his vision of the world. As the least violent expression, a terrorist supports in principle killing/subjugation of all those who oppose his vision of the world. The former type of terrorists may be called **active terrorist**, while the latter type may be called **passive terrorist**. Passive terrorists may become active terrorists within minutes. In fact, the passive terrorists are simply active-terrorists-in-the-offing or active-terrorists-in-the-waiting. Just a small meeting with an active terrorist, a pilgrimage to Makkah, a chance reading of Quran and these passive terrorists would become an active terrorist and would be ready to kill and be killed.

So, while the number of active Islamic terrorists may be tiny compared to the total Muslim population of the world, the number of passive Islamic terrorists is in hundreds of millions.

For example, a good percentage of Muslims support death penalty for apostasy or blasphemy (refer to the latest Pew Research on Muslims). This amounts to supporting terrorism in principle, because it amounts to denial of the freedom to choose a religion. In some Islamic countries, such as Pakistan, Afghanistan, Egypt, Jordan etc, this support is above 70%. Even if we take this percentage as a conservative 40% on average for the entire Muslim population (1600 million), it comes to  $1600 \times 0.4 = 640$  million. This is by no means a tiny population!

If we count all those Muslims who give physical, financial, moral and intellectual support to the

jihadi organizations while remaining otherwise fully passive in jihadi affairs, the figure of Islamic terrorists may rise to even 1 billion. For example, according to a Pew Research conducted in 2015, 8% in Turkey and 14% in Nigeria support IS. This fact alone adds up to 26 million supporters for terrorism.

**Roughly, 30% of Muslims on average in the US, UK, France, Germany and Spain justify suicide bombing against non-Muslims, according to a Pew research. These are potential active terrorists and would be in millions living right in the heart of the West!**

Thus, it is completely false to say that only a tiny percentage of Muslims are terrorists, while all other Muslims are peace loving.

**Myth 3: There are two streams of Islam – Radical Islam and Moderate Islam. Only Radical Islam supports terrorism. Hence, we must fight Radical Islam and protect Moderate Islam.**

Moderate Islam may be defined as Islam whose followers support and practice peace & tolerance with non-Muslims. Radical Islam may be defined as Islam whose followers support and practice violence & intolerance against non-Muslims. Radical Islam is also called Militant Islam, Jihadist Islam, Islamism, jihadism, etc.

But can Islam be divided into these two water-tight schools?

Let us begin with the basic question: what is Islam? Islam is defined as the logically connected set of beliefs and values as written in Quran. So, Islam can be defined only with reference to what is written in Quran, not by what a group of Muslims choose to believe or not to believe.

Now, as we have seen in this sub-chapter, Quran has both types of verses – peaceful as well as violent. When Muhammad was politically weak, he preached peace. These peaceful verses are also known as Makkah verses, as they were believed to have been revealed in Makkah. Moderate Islam derives its support from these verses.

After Muhammad migrated to Madinah and became politically strong, he started preaching aggressiveness against non-Muslims in order to spread Islam by sword. These are known as Madinan verses. Radical Islam derives its support from these verses.

So, Moderate Islam and Radical Islam are not opposite to each other. Rather they are complementary to each other. Each of them is a strategy to spread Islam. The strategy of Moderate Islam works when Muslims are in minority or politically weaker. The strategy of Radical Islam works when Muslims become politically stronger.

**Moderate Islam prepares the ground for islamization of a non-Muslim society. It propagates the myth that Islam believes in tolerance, peace, freedom of thought and expression, democracy and secularism. This lulls the non-Muslims into believing that there is no danger from Islam. Meanwhile Muslims keep on increasing their population by a furious growth of their birth rate. They also organize**

themselves better and become politically more powerful. They take advantage of the democratic, secular and non-discriminatory legal structures of non-Muslim societies to increase their political, economic and numerical strength.

As Muslims grow in strength, their aggressiveness also increases proportionately. Once Muslims become stronger, they seize political power either democratically or militarily. Then, they start implementing Sharia. Apostates and critics of Islam are then put to death. Persecution of non-Muslims starts. Jizya is imposed. Non-Muslims are forbidden to build new places of worship or publicly preach their religion. Resisting non-Muslims (called infidels) are then massacred. Radical Islam has now taken over from Moderate Islam.

Since Moderate and Radical Islam are merely two different strategies to be used under different conditions of political strength of Muslims, they cannot be separated from each other. You cannot defend only one of the two, as both rightly claim to be based on certain verses of Quran.

Quran has both types of verses. A Muslim quotes whatever verse suits his circumstances.

Examples of peaceful verses of Quran:

2.256. Let there be no compulsion in religion ...

5.32. On that account: We ordained for the Children of Israel that if any one slew a person – unless it be for murder or for spreading mischief in the land – it would be as if he slew the whole people ..

16.125. Invite (people) to the way of your Lord with wisdom and good counsel. And argue with them in the best of manners. Surely, your Lord knows best the one who deviates from His way, and He knows best the ones who are on the right path.

42.40. The recompense for an evil is an evil like thereof, but whoever forgives and makes reconciliation, his reward is with Allah. ...

109.6. To you be your religion, and to me my religion

medina

Examples of violent verses of Quran:

9.29. Fight against those who (1) believe not in Allah, (2) nor in the Last Day, .... until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.

8.39. And fight them until there is no more Fitnah (worshiping others besides Allah) and the religion will all be for Allah Alone ...

3.151. We shall cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve, because they joined others in worship with Allah,

9.73. O Prophet! Strive hard against the disbelievers and the hypocrites, and be harsh against them,...

Sahih Bukhari Volume 1, Book 2, Number 24

Narrated Ibn 'Umar:

Allah's Apostle said: "I have been ordered (by Allah) to fight against the people until they testify that none has the right to be worshiped but Allah ...

See how most Muslims are nice in Europe and America, because they are weak there. These Muslims go on repeating the same line day in and day out: Islam is a peaceful religion; Islam is fully compatible with democracy and secularism; Islam respects all other religions and so on.

But see what is happening to minorities in Pakistan, Bangladesh, Iran, Somalia, Nigeria, etc, because Muslims are in majority there. All the Islamic states vigorously implement Sharia. But Sharia is nothing but official, legalized terrorism. Islamic law (Sharia) requires that nobody should be allowed to criticize Muhammad or Allah, no Muslim should be allowed to leave Islam and non-Muslims must pay Jizya tax in Islamic regimes.

No Islamic regime advocates democracy, secularism, freedom of thought and expression, equal human rights for minorities and so on.

So, today's moderate Muslims become tomorrow's radical Muslims ready to kill and be killed. There is seamless transition from one form of Islam to the other.

It is the naïve Westerners who keep on persuading themselves that Radical Islam is bad and separate from Moderate Islam. Muslims do not divide themselves in such artificial groups. For them, Islam is both – Moderate and Radical. Both forms are required to conquer the world. There is no contradiction between the two. Each one is useful in a specific situation.

These naïve Westerners do not realize that both types of Muslims – Moderate and Radical -- believe in the same Quran which preaches elimination of all other religions; hatred against non-Muslims; supremacy of a Muslim over a non-Muslim; polygamy; outpopulating other religions, compulsory veiling of a woman; disciplining and even beating one's wives; putting an apostate to death; putting a critic of Islam to death; cutting the hands of a thief; and such other savage practices.

These beliefs are common among the followers of Moderate and Radical Islam. So, even if Radical Islam (terrorism) is completely eliminated, and only Moderate Islam survives, it would still be too bad for the rest of the world. Moderate Muslims would still be hating non-Muslims and trying to subjugate them in whatever "peaceful" way they can including imposing Jizya tax and increasing their population furiously to islamicise all institutions. They would still be imposing savage punishment to thieves and adulterers. They would still be physically abusing slaves and women.

So, the differences between Moderates and Radicals are only in strategies against non-Muslims

relative to their strength. When they are weak, they preach peace and tolerance and are called Moderate; when they are strong, they become aggressive and are called Radical.

Thus, the distinction between Moderate and Radical Islam is only tactical, not fundamental.

All the myths about the relationship between Islam and terrorism are thus dismantled.

### **The world has no clue how to fight Islamic terrorism**

At present, the world is fighting terrorism in a completely wrong way because it has failed to understand the real cause of terrorism.

Let me explain why terrorism cannot be eliminated by current strategies of the world such as a) by war on terror; b) by imposing democracy on Islamic states; c) by supposed economic development of Islamic states; and d) by appeasement to Muslims.

a) War on terror -- It would not work because terrorism is an integral part of Islam. So, no matter how many terrorists are captured or killed, Islam would keep generating new terrorists. Unless Islam itself is eliminated from this planet, terrorists would be always around. When they are weak, they would go underground. When they become strong, they would come back, fight and kill. Nevertheless, the war on terror must continue for its short-term benefits – killing one terrorist saves hundreds of innocent lives and increases the pain of becoming a terrorist for the potential ones.

b) Installing democratic regimes on Islamic states -- This would also not eliminate terrorism. If overwhelming number of people believe that Islam is a true religion, their elected representatives will also believe the same and hence do everything possible to spread Islam around the world as enjoined in Quran and Hadith. Democratically elected regimes of Hamas, Iran, Turkey, Bangladesh and Pakistan keep on persecuting non-Muslims or at least look the other way when such persecution is done by jihadists. Their human rights records clearly prove this. This means mere democracy is not enough to guarantee freedom of thought, expression and religion. Nevertheless, wherever possible, democracy is always better than Islamic theocracy.

c) Supposed economic development of Islamic states -- This would not make them less Islamic or less prone to terrorism, as some Westerners hope. Rather, that would make them economically more capable of using sophisticated destructive technology. Muslims are becoming terrorists not because of lack of jobs, poverty, illiteracy, ‘unfair treatment’ by colonial powers in the past etc. Their motive is purely ideological.

d) Appeasement to Muslims – Muslim scholars are desperate to manufacture any excuse in order to save Islam. They would blame anything else, but not Islam. They would blame European colonization of Islamic regimes, greed of the West for oil, Islamophobia, ‘persecution of Muslims’ at the hands of other religions or the West, poverty, injustice, lack of education, autocratic regimes such

as Saudi Arabia or Syria, Islamic schools (Madrasas), Sunni-Shia conflicts, political rivalry among Muslim groups, hegemony of the US, etc, etc. None of this is true. The sole motive behind violent jihad is pure ideology sanctioned by Quran, nothing else.

Most of the ignorant non-Muslim intellectuals, who have no understanding of the real nature of Islam, fall in these traps of excuses and start blaming the West for all the problems. The Western governments then start seeing Muslims as victims and start appeasing them by compromising on the basic Western values such as freedom of thought and expression or freedom to criticize any religion/ideology. Appeasement further emboldens the jihadists and then they try to extract even more concessions. This vicious circle, if not checked, would completely destroy all the values of the modern world and would pave the way to Islamic global caliphate where intolerance reigns supreme.

Terrorism springs from purely ideological considerations and hence can be defeated only at ideological level, backed up by overwhelming defeat of terrorists militarily.

Hence, terrorism cannot be eliminated without eliminating Islam. We will discuss how this can be done in chapter 12 [How to get rid of religions].

### **Conclusion:**

Muslims say that Islam means ‘submission to Allah’s Will’. But since Allah is believed to be speaking through Muhammad only, Islam effectively means ‘submission to Muhammad’. But Muhammad taught hatred, plundering and killing of non-Muslims, as he sincerely believed that only under pressure, non-Muslims would convert to Islam which in turn would open the gate of paradise for them.

So, the essence of Muhammad’s teachings is: convert the whole world to Islam by hook or by crook; by persuasion, if possible, by force, if necessary; by imposing Jizya, if possible; by terrorizing & killing, if necessary; by honesty, if possible; by deception, if necessary!

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4B

#### Political & Economic Implications of Islam

##### Political implications of Islam -- Theocracy

According to Islam, Allah is not only the creator and destroyer of this world, but also the supreme authority making rules of conduct for mankind. None of His rules should be even slightly modified, no matter how many Muslims want to modify it.

Muslims believe that Allah's rules for mankind do not pertain only to the matters related to worship, but also about treatment of non-Muslims, treatment of critics of Islam, punishment for crimes, ban on interest, rules of inheritance, dress code, halal food, manner in which common natural resources should be used, manner of greetings etc. None of these rules can be changed even if all Muslims of the world want to do it.

For example, Allah has prescribed in Quran that:

Jihad against non-Muslims must be undertaken by every Muslim to make Islam the supreme and only religion of the world (8.39, 3.85, 9.33)

Non-Muslims should not be made friends (3.28, 3.118, 4.144)

All non-Muslims must be subjugated, taxed (Jizya) and in case of refusal, killed (9.29)

All apostates must be killed (4.89)

All critics of Islam must be killed (5.33)

Punishment for stealing, adultery etc should be cutting off hands, 100 lashes etc (5.38-40, 24.2)

Earning of interest on money is not permitted (2.275)

All adult Muslims must pay Zakat to help the poor (9.60)

Women must cover themselves while in public (24.31)

2 Muslim women witnesses would be equal to 1 male Muslim witness (2.282)

A Muslim man can have up to 4 wives (4.3)

Property of a deceased Muslim has to be distributed to his heirs in a particular way (4.7-12)

Animals should be killed in a particular way before eating their meat; pork should not be

consumed (6.145, 5.3)

These are some of the examples of “Allah’s command” in secular matters, which must be obeyed by all Islamic societies.

Muslims believe that Allah’s command is the final truth given to mankind, hence there cannot be any possibility of changing them by any man-made laws through democracy or autocracy:

Quran 33.36

*It is not open for a believing man or a believing woman, once Allah and His messenger have decided a thing, that they should have a choice about their matter; and whoever disobeys Allah and His messenger, he indeed gets off the track, falling into an open error.*

It is clear by these examples that in an Islamic country, people would have no right to make laws which affect “Allah’s commands”. Non-Muslims especially will have no right to practice and propagate their religions freely, just as Muslims would have no right to leave Islam. There would be complete censorship on criticism of Islam. Non-Muslims cannot form their parties, as it would be treated as an affront to Islam. An Islamic state would be under obligation to follow a foreign policy which aims at maximum expansion of Islam by whatever means.

So, Islam is fundamentally incompatible with democracy. Democracy makes man as the ultimate authority to shape his destiny, while Islam makes a fabricated and false entity “Allah” (read “Muhammad”) to be the highest authority to shape the destiny of man. Democracy can survive only with freedom of thought, expression, association, choosing any religion/no religion and right to equality before the state. Islam has no such concepts.

Muhammad was too obsessed with converting everyone to Islam even by aggression. So, he could not have given any importance to freedom of thought and expression. He could not understand that only such a freedom could ensure emergence of truth and development of science & technology.

However, matters on which “Allah” (read “Muhammad”) has not given commands, can, in principle, be discussed and legislated upon democratically by Muslims in an Islamic state – matters such as economic growth, welfare of the poor, promotion of exports, development of technology and so on. But it would be a very, very limited democracy with zero value for non-Muslims.

Out of the 50 odd Islamic countries of the world, where Muslims are in majority, not a single one fulfils all the criteria of democracy, according to the Democracy Index 2015 prepared by the Freedom House. Even where there is superficial democracy in Islamic countries such as fair elections, the condition of minorities is horrible and freedom of thought and expression and freedom of religion, which are vital components of democracy, are non-existent (as, for example, in Pakistan and Bangladesh). This is a clear proof of undemocratic nature of Islam.

So, ideologically, only Islamic theocracy is compatible with Islam. Democracy is totally incompatible with Islam.

### Islam's economic philosophy: Maximum plunder, minimum work

As I have explained in the previous sub-chapter, Islam aims at establishing Allah's rule in the entire world. This jihadi venture therefore needed a big army, which in turn required mobilization of huge financial resources.

Where would so much money come from?

Money source

So, Muhammad had to develop a detailed economic plan each aiming at collection of maximum money. This plan consisted of the following measures:

1. Booty (Quran 8.41, Hadith of Sahih Bukhari 1.2.35)
2. Jizya (Quran 9.29)
3. Zakat (Quran 9.69, 103)
4. Hajj (Quran 2.196)
5. Ban on interest (Quran 2.275, 278-279)
6. Ban on land renting (Sahih Bukhari 3.39.532 – 534)
7. Ban on comfortable living (Quran 7.31, 17.26, 19.27-31)
8. Emphasis on continuous jihad (Quran 8.39, 3.85, 9.33)

Islamic apologists keep on gloating that Muhammad's economic thoughts were a good balance between capitalism and socialism. They forget that for Muhammad, both capitalism and socialism were completely alien concepts. These concepts developed in Europe after Enlightenment in 18<sup>th</sup> century onwards. So, it is meaningless to compare two completely different paradigms and claim a breakthrough by one paradigm over the other.

Muhammad developed his economic ideas not to achieve efficiency in production and distribution systems (as capitalism and socialism try), but simply to implement his ideology of jihad. This will become clear once I explain all his economic ideas enumerated above. His economic philosophy may be called **Jihadonomics**.

Let me start explaining them one by one:

1. Booty – As explained earlier, there are a number of Quranic verses where Muhammad believed Allah sanctioned booty for him. Booty, for Muhammad, was not just goodies confiscated in the battlefield – it was also goodies collected by daylight robbery of helpless, non-combatant, civilian non-Muslims. There are hundreds of passages in Quran and Hadith about glorification of booty, some of which I have already quoted in the previous sub-chapter. Booty was one of the major sources of

income for Muhammad and his soldiers.

2. **Jizya** - Jizya was imposed by Muhammad for the first time on Jews of Khyber who were required to give half of their agricultural produce. Later, it became a standard Islamic practice to impose Jizya on subjugated non-Muslims. This tax had been devised to pressurize non-Muslims to convert to Islam. This was an easy money extracted for jihadist ventures. This practice also forced non-Muslims to convert to Islam, as they could not bear the financial burden of Jizya. These new converts would later become jihadi fighters, who in turn would torment other non-Muslims.

3. **Zakat** - Zakat was the tax payable by Muslims. This tax was not only for helping the orphans (created by jihadist violence itself), but also for funding more jihadi ventures.

4. **Hajj** - Muhammad continued the old practice of treating Kaaba as a sacred place simply because it brought money. In the past, pilgrims from all over the Arabian lands were coming to this place in Makkah to offer money and sacrifices because the place housed their gods. This was a good source of income for Makkans. Muhammad did not want to lose this money, as it would be used for jihadi ventures. So, he allowed this practice to continue even after he conquered Makkah and even though it was a kind of idol worship.

5. **Ban on interest** - Quran condemns taking interest on money lent to a borrower, but does not offer any justification for this. Islamic scholars defend this concept by arguing that interest is a heavy burden on the borrower – hence it is rightly banned by Allah! But this argument is false.

Suppose, I go to an expensive restaurant because the food there is superb. I know the price of the food items, as it is written on the menu. I fully enjoy the meal. When the bill comes, I start shouting: "Hay, the bill is too high – you guys are exploiting me!!" Then the manager comes and says: "Sir, you knew the price, as it is written in the menu. So, why did you eat when you considered it too expensive?" I however continue shouting and threatening the manager to complain the matter to police!

Am I right? Obviously not. If a borrower knows the price of money (interest) he is borrowing and yet decides to borrow, where is the exploitation? He was completely free not to borrow.

So, the logic of Islamic scholars in condemning interest is completely false.

Since modern economy cannot function without interest, Islam has come out with a hypocritical solution to this problem. They say that it is okay to lend money in lieu of a percentage of profit that may be earned by the borrower with the lent money. But whether you take a fixed amount from the profit (interest) or a fixed percentage of profit (sharing), it amounts to the same – you are benefitting from lent money.

But Muhammad was totally against money lending itself – whether it earned interest or sharing of profit was irrelevant in his thinking. The real reason for this was not that interest was too big a burden

(the argument manufactured by scholars later), but because Muhammad did not want people to enjoy the benefits of accumulated money. He knew that once he allowed people to earn on their saved money, they would never like to part with that money. So, how would he appropriate it for his jihadi ventures?

As I had said in the beginning, all economic ideas of Muhammad had only one goal – collect maximum money for jihadi ventures. By denouncing interest, he ensured that nobody would enjoy the fruits of his saved money in any manner. So, the saved money would become useless, unless the person himself wanted to engage in business. Hence, it became easier for him to persuade the money-owner to part with his money in the form of Zakat or charity for jihad.

6. Ban on land renting – Land is a form of capital which can be given to a prospective landless farmer on rent, which is the equivalent of interest on land. So, Muhammad banned renting of land too for the same reason he had banned interest. He did not want anyone to invest his saved money in land for earning rent, because if such investments and rent earning became very popular, there would be no liquid money left in the hands of people, making it very difficult for them to give more Zakat or charities for jihad.

7. Ban on comfortable living – If savings cannot be invested for earning interest or rent, people would then start spending it for consumption and indulge in conveniences or luxuries. So, Muhammad banned that too, again for the same purpose of appropriating the surplus money for jihadi ventures. Thus, he blocked all the ways where surplus money could flow out so that he could use it for jihadi ventures.

It may be noted here that Muhammad himself never renounced luxuries. He kept scores of wives/concubines. So, he must have a good source of income to maintain them. He must also have a big house, a big kitchen and numerous slaves to do the chores for such a big establishment. This is not the way he preached his followers to live. Muslims could keep at the most only 4 wives, while Muhammad had about a dozen wives! Poor gullible Muslims!!

8. Emphasis on continuous jihad – Jihad was the central strategy around which Muhammad built his entire belief-system. All the taxes and charities from Muslims and all the booty and Jizya from non-Muslims were collected and channelized to fund subjugation of new territories by armed forces. So, jihad was the engine of the Islamic economy. This is why Quran and Hadith have thousands of passages in which jihad has been glorified and made compulsory for all Muslims.

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4C

#### Falsehood of Islam

Muslims believe that Quran is the final message of Allah for the entire mankind and every word of it is eternally true. There is no falsehood, no contradictions, no immorality – in short, no flaw in Quran.

But, the fact is just the opposite: Quran has hundreds of falsehoods.

These falsehoods clearly prove one thing – Muhammad was not a real messenger of some all-knowing, all-powerful creator of the universe. He was just believing that he was God's messenger.

There was very little scientific knowledge about the universe, Earth and human life during Muhammad's time [7<sup>th</sup> century CE]. A lot of myths were prevalent among people about these things. Muhammad simply repeated those myths under the guise of “Allah's words” believing himself to be a “messenger of Allah”. Thus people of that time got impressed. But, now with tons of scientific knowledge freely available, all these falsehood stands exposed!

Islam, like Judaism, believes in the creation of the universe by a personal, omniscient, omnipotent, compassionate and just God. Hence, all the criticism against the doctrine of a personal God as mentioned in sub-chapter 2C [Falsehood of Judaism] applies to Islam too. Here is the link.

Here is a list of major falsehoods found in Quran:

1. Allah created the universe
2. Heavens and Earth were joined before Allah separated them
3. Allah created the universe in 6 days or 8 days?
4. First human pair was created in Paradise and then cast out to Earth
5. Earth is stationary and Sun orbits around it
6. Stars are missiles created by Allah to hit devils to prevent them from hearing deliberations of angels
7. Allah created mountains to prevent Earth from shaking
8. Allah created all living beings in pairs
9. Natural disasters such as famine, earthquake, flood, storm, etc are caused by Allah to punish non-Muslims and test Muslims.

## **10. Muslims will go to Paradise, while all non-Muslims will go to hell.**

Apart from these scientific falsehoods, there are some unique features of Quran which prove that Muhammad was a false prophet. Here are some of those features:

### **11. The grammatical errors in Quran**

### **12. The extreme intolerance of Islam against criticism**

### **13. References to Satanic Verses by historians**

### **14. The ultimate proof -- Quran and Hadith themselves prove that Muhammad was a false prophet**

Let me discuss these falsehoods one by one:

#### **1. Allah created the universe**

The falsehood of this statement has already been discussed in sub-chapter 2C [Falsehood of Judaism]. However, for the sake of easy reference, it is repeated below, while substituting certain words such as 'Judaism' by 'Islam' and 'God' by 'Allah':

Islam, like other Abrahamic religions, holds that Allah created the universe, which consists of heaven and Earth. Heaven is believed to consist of space, stars, Sun and Moon.

First of all, this view presumes that the universe is static and appears today exactly as it was created. This view implies that the universe is not evolving – it is a finished product. It does not grow. It does not become better organized. This view was widely prevalent all over the world, because this is what normal sense experience shows. Even Einstein believed that the universe was static! However, later he realized his mistake and termed it as 'the greatest blunder of his life'.

According to the latest scientific research, the universe is not static, but expanding and growing. Edwin Hubble, an American astronomer, demonstrated in 1929, with the help of his telescope, that there are billions of galaxies other than our Milky Way galaxy and all galaxies are flying away from each other with great speed. Later, it was also found that new galaxies and stars are continuously coming into existence; old galaxies and stars are dying; new planets and moons are getting born; old ones are disappearing; there are also black holes, supernovae, Quasars, and several other types of massive bodies in the "heaven". The universe is becoming bigger every moment. In short, nothing is static in this universe.

So, the Quranic belief that the universe has been created by Allah as a finished and complete product and therefore no change or growth is possible in it has been proved false.

Secondly, since the universe is changing all the time ever since it was born with the Big Bang 13.8 billion years ago, it is meaningless to say that heaven was created in 2 days or 6 days by Allah. There is no fixed heaven; no fixed number of stars, planets and moons, as new ones are continuously coming into

existence and old ones are continuously disappearing; so the question of fixing a time period for the creation of all heavenly objects is meaningless.

Suppose a seed is sown in the ground. It germinates and becomes a plant. After some years, it starts flowering. After some more time, it starts producing fruits. It goes on flowering and fruiting every year for several decades. Now someone asks: how much time did it take to create the plant? This question is meaningless, because a plant is not a finished and unchanging product. The plant has not been created, but grown and is still growing. Creation or production makes sense only in respect of mechanical or material things. The universe is not mechanical or material; it is expanding, growing and changing all the time due to its own internal dynamics. Since it is still growing, the question of 'the time taken for its creation' is meaningless.

Since the universe itself has now been found to be dynamic and the number of its content ever-changing, belief in the creation of a fixed universe in fixed time by Allah is rendered meaningless.

Thirdly, now that the Big Bang theory of the origin of the universe as well as expansion of the universe is widely accepted to be true, apologists of Islam (and all Abrahamic religions) are shifting their stands. Now, they are claiming that Allah is the cause of the Big Bang.

But if Allah is believed to be the cause of the Big Bang, what happens to the Quranic statements according to which Allah created the universe in 6 days? If Allah started the Big Bang, He would have let the dynamics of the Big Bang determine the time taken in evolution of the universe. Then, He would not have said that He 'created' the universe in '6 days', because Big Bang has taken 13.8 billion years to evolve the present day universe and the process of evolution is not finished yet. It may further continue for billions of years. So, obviously, apologists of Islam cannot have both Big Bang and Allah on their side.

Fourthly, the process of Big Bang which started the chain of events leading to our present universe is not a conscious process of a super conscious and super powerful entity called Allah. Though science has not yet understood the forces which triggered our Big Bang, it could be due to a simple cyclical automatic chain of events, e.g., Big Rip/Big Crunch itself triggering the next Big Bang.

To posit Allah as a conscious super empowered being creating the universe in a jiffy and then looking down upon it, controlling it or helping out a particular species called humans on listening to their prayers appears to be absurd for the following reasons:

i) The process of the evolution of the universe involves transformation of simple, undifferentiated matter into complex and more differentiated matter. For example, sub atomic particles combine to form atoms; atoms combine to form molecules; molecules of lighter elements combine to form molecules of heavier elements as in stars; certain organic compounds combine to form rudimentary life; simpler life forms become more complex life forms by integrating certain nutrients and so on. This journey from simpler to more complex life form is still going on.

If we posit Allah as the creator, we would have to assume that He could create energy, matter, plants, animals, humans etc in any sequence, as none of them would need to be causally related and therefore evolve from the lower/simpler to higher/more complex format. Allah could just create anything directly in a jiffy without bothering to wait for the slow process of evolution from one form to another. In fact, this is what is believed to be the case.

But this sort of quick, sequence-neutral, evolution-neutral creation is contrary to scientific findings, according to which right from the time of Big Bang, the universe has been evolving slowly giving rise to one form from another form as cause and effect. The process of evolution starts from dark energy/dark matter to normal energy to quarks/leptons/bosons to atoms to galaxies to stars to planets to simple life forms to plants to animals to humans. The sequence of evolution cannot be changed at all, as they are linked causally.

ii) If a superconscious Allah creates the universe, who creates Allah? If Allah creates Himself, why can't we suppose that the matter/energy itself is programmed by its very nature to cyclically come into existence and go out of existence on its own?

iii) If the creator is assumed to be omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, compassionate and just, it would become impossible to explain the presence of natural and moral evil in this world. Why do creatures of Allah suffer so much – premature death, disease, natural calamities, starvation, poverty, fear of predators, violence, getting killed or getting cheated and so forth? The list of misery is endless. How could such a creator allow living beings suffer so much for no fault of theirs?

It is thus unscientific to explain the origin of the universe in terms of a personal creator.

## **2. Heavens and Earth were joined before Allah separated them**

Quran 21.30 says:

*Have not those who disbelieve known that the heavens and the Earth were joined together as one united piece, then We parted them? And We have made from water every living thing. Will they not then believe?*

According to science, when the Big Bang took place 13.8 billion years ago, space-time and some fundamental content of the universe (dark energy, dark matter, quarks, leptons and bosons) came into existence. So, at that time, there were no heavens (galaxies and stars). The first galaxy/star came into existence after about 300 million years after the Big Bang. Earth came into existence after about 9.3 billion years after the Big Bang. So, Quranic statement that Earth and heavens were joined together is completely false.

Earth did not even exist for 9.3 billion years when galaxies and stars were forming all over the universe! So, the question of Earth and heavens being joined and therefore the need to separate them by

Allah simply did not arise!!

Suppose I heat up some ice cubes in a pan. It becomes water after some time and vapor after some more time. So, have I separated vapor from ice? No, the question of separating vapor from ice does not arise because they were never together as ice and as vapor in the first place. Ice gets transformed into water and water into vapor by absorbing heat. So, one succeeds the other – they exist at different points of time. So, ice and vapor cannot be together at any particular point of time in this example.

The same happened with Earth and heavens. For the first 9.3 billion years, there were only heavens and no Earth. Earth evolved from out of a small portion of heavens, which we call Sun. So, the question of heavens and Earth being joined and later separated by Allah does not arise.

The apologists may however say that this verse simply means that Allah developed differentiated state of matter from undifferentiated state. But the fact of differentiation in itself does not prove the existence of Allah. Differentiation may simply be the nature of matter; this is just the way it behaves. There is no need to presume an outside supernatural agency to explain the fact of differentiation.

Moreover, if there is really an Allah who did the work of differentiation, he should have told Muhammad that:

*From out of pure space-time, I first differentiated dark energy; then out of dark energy I developed dark matter; then developed quarks, leptons and bosons; then atoms and molecules; then galaxy and stars; then Sun; then several planets and moons of Sun out of which one of the planets is Earth.*

Had there been such a statement in Quran made by Allah, there was good reason to believe that Allah was the real creator, as He knew the process of evolution of the universe. Hence, Muhammad was the real messenger of Allah. But Quran has no such statement!

### **3. Allah created the universe in 6 days or 8 days?**

At one place, Quran says that Allah created heavens and Earth in 6 days.

7.54. “*Indeed your Lord is Allah, Who created the heavens and the Earth in Six Days...*”

At another place, Allah is said to have created the world in 8 days – he took 2 days to create Earth, 4 days to develop Earth and 2 days to create heavens:

41.9. “*Say (O Muhammad): "Do you verily disbelieve in Him Who created the Earth in two Days ..."*

41.10. “*He placed therein (i.e. the Earth) firm mountains from above it, and He blessed it, and measured therein its sustenance (for its dwellers) in four Days ...”*

41.12. “*Then He completed and finished from their creation (as) seven heavens in two Days ...”*

So, there is an obvious contradiction here. The universe is created in 6 days or 8 days?

To avoid this contradiction, Islamic apologists have tried very hard, but failed. Their proposals for reconciliation have been discussed below:

### **Reconciliation proposal no. 1**

**Two days taken to create Earth is the same 2 days which was used to create heavens. So, the total time in creation of the universe is 6 days only. Hence, there is no contradiction in Quran.**

So, what apologists are saying here is that heavens and Earth are static and both were created during the same 2 days. They were created full and complete just at one point of time. There has been no change in them since then.

So, the entire universe, according to Quran, was created in 2 days including Earth and it took 4 days of Allah to develop Earth. So, the ratio of time between creation of the heavens (and Earth) and development of Earth would be  $2:4 = 1:2$ .

### **Scientific findings:**

According to science, first galaxies started forming after about 300 million years after the Big Bang. Since then, the process of birth and death of galaxies have been going on till today. Our Earth formed about 9.3 billion years after the Big Bang. It took about 4.5 billion years for Earth to develop to the present state. It is still developing and changing. So, Quranic concept of a static universe and static Earth as on today is completely false.

Secondly, we have to assume that Quran is referring to our galaxy --Milky Way -- as heavens (during 7<sup>th</sup> century CE, nobody knew that there were billions of galaxies, not even 'all-knowing Allah'). If Milky Way – our galaxy -- is taken as heavens, its formation started after 400 million years after the Big Bang. So, this time may be taken as preparatory time (or 'creation' time) to make Milky Way.

Earth has been developing for the last 4500 million years.

So, the ratio between creation time of heavens and development time of Earth would come to  $400:4500 = 1:11$ . So, Quranic ratio of 1:2 is completely false.

Thirdly, inclusion of 2 days of Allah in creating Earth in the 2 days of creation of heavens implies that Earth and heavens were created at the same time. But this is completely false. Earth came into existence after 9.3 billion years after the Big Bang, while Milky Way formed just 400 million years after the Big Bang. So, there is a huge time gap between the formations of the two.

So, the reconciliation proposal no. 1 saves Quran from being contradictory, but lands it into scientific falsehood.

### **Reconciliation proposal no. 2**

**The two days taken in creation of Earth is included in the 4 days of development of Earth.**

This proposal too was offered to save Quran from contradictions. This proposal implies that out of 4 days taken by Allah to develop Earth, 2 days were taken to create it and remaining 2 days were taken to develop it. So, the ratio of time taken to create heavens, Earth and development of Earth is  $2:2:2 = 1:1:1$ .

**Scientific findings:**

If Milky Way is taken as heavens again, its formation (or ‘creation’) time is 400 million years.

Earth emerged after 9.3 billion years of processing of galaxies and stars after the Big Bang. So, the time invested in ‘creating’ Earth could be taken as 9.3 billion years.

Ever since Earth came into existence, it has been developing and changing till today. So, the development time of Earth can be taken as 4.5 billion years.

So, scientifically, the ratio of time taken in formation of heavens: formation of Earth: development of Earth =  $400:9300:4500 = 1:23:11$  (after rounding off). So, this again falsifies Quranic ratio of 1:1:1.

So, it is now clear that no matter how apologists try to stretch the meaning of Quran, it turns out to be scientifically false.

There is another falsehood here: by reading Quranic passages from 41.9 to 41.12, it is clear that Allah created and developed Earth first and heavens later. But the fact is just the opposite. For the first 9.3 billion years, only heavens were there and no Earth!

So, no matter how Islamic scholars stretch Quranic story of creation to reconcile it with scientific facts, it lands in serious trouble – it is either contradictory or false.

#### **4. First human pair was created in Paradise and then cast out to Earth**



Quran:

2.35. *And We said: "O Adam! Dwell you and your wife in the Paradise and eat both of you freely with pleasure and delight of things therein as wherever you will, but come not near this tree or you both will be of the wrong-doers."*

2.36. *Then the Shaitan (Satan) made them slip therefrom (the Paradise), and got them out from that in which they were. We said: "Get you down, all, with enmity between yourselves. On Earth will be a dwelling place for you and an enjoyment for a time."*

2.37. *Then Adam received from his Lord Words. And his Lord pardoned him (accepted his repentance). Verily, He is the One Who forgives (accepts repentance), the Most Merciful.*

It is obvious that Muhammad had taken the concept of fall of man from Bible.

As discussed in the sub-chapter “Falsehood in Judaism”, there are mountains of evidence gathered

by science to show that modern man is the result of millions of years of evolution of the common ancestor of hominids and chimpanzees. The journey from that common ancestor to modern man has been through several major stages such as Australopithecus, Homo habilis, Homo erectus, Neanderthal and Homo sapiens and several minor intermediary stages.

There is no question that just a pair of humans were created one day suddenly out of the blue by God in an exotic place called paradise and then owing to some mistake, this pair was suddenly expelled from paradise and sent down to Earth.

This sort of belief was quite common among the West Asian people 2000 years ago and Muhammad just took it from there believing he had received this “great knowledge” from Allah!

## **5. Earth is stationary and Sun orbits around it.**

People of 7<sup>th</sup> century may be forgiven for believing that Earth was stationary and Sun orbited around it, as this is what common sense observation is. But Allah, the omniscient creator of the universe, should have known that the geocentric model of the solar system is false. But see what Allah is saying in Quran:

36.38. *And the Sun runs on its fixed course for a term (appointed). That is the Decree of the All-Mighty, the All-Knowing.*

36.40. *It is not for the Sun to overtake the Moon, nor does the night outstrip the day. They all float, each in an orbit.*

18.86. *Until, when he reached the setting place of the Sun, he found it setting in a spring of black muddy (or hot) water.*

Sahih Bukhari 4.54.421 too supports the same view:

*Narrated Abu Dharr:*

*The Prophet asked me at sunset, "Do you know where the Sun goes (at the time of sunset)?"* I replied, *"Allah and His Apostle know better."* He said, *"It goes (i.e. travels) till it prostrates Itself underneath the Throne and takes the permission to rise again, and it is permitted and then (a time will come when) it will be about to prostrate itself but its prostration will not be accepted, and it will ask permission to go on its course but it will not be permitted, but it will be ordered to return whence it has come and so it will rise in the west. And that is the interpretation of the Statement of Allah: 'And the Sun runs its fixed course for a term (decreed). That is The Decree of (Allah) The Exalted in Might, The All-Knowing.*

These passages from Quran and Hadith clearly describe how Sun rises in the east and sets in muddy water in the west and mysteriously again reaches east during night to rise again under the command of Allah. So, Sun keeps on orbiting around Earth in a fixed course sanctioned by Allah so that humans can

experience day and night and calculate time.

But Muhammad could never imagine that Earth along with other planets orbits around Sun and far from being the centre of the universe, Earth is just one of the billions of planets and Sun is one of the trillions of stars and our galaxy – Milky Way – is one of the billions of galaxies of the universe!!

## **6. Stars are missiles created by Allah to hit devils to prevent them from hearing deliberations of angels.**

Quran says:

67.5. *And indeed We have adorned the nearest heaven with lamps, and We have made such lamps (as) missiles to drive away devils, and have prepared for them the torment of the blazing Fire.*

37.6. *Verily! We have adorned the near heaven with the stars (for beauty).*

37.7. *And to guard against every rebellious devil.*

37.8. *They cannot listen to the higher group (angels) for they are pelted from every side.*

So, Muhammad believed that mighty Allah had created missiles in the form of stars to hit devils who try to eavesdrop on deliberations of angels!

But stars are not missiles but massive nuclear reactors converting lighter elements into heavier elements and orbiting around their galactic center or some other star in an orbital path. They do not move on a straight/curved line the way a missile does.

If Quran is alluding to a meteor (also called a shooting star) here, not a star, then also it is false. A meteor is nothing but interplanetary debris attracted by Earth's gravity, burning up in air and giving light because of atmospheric resistance. It has nothing to do with "devils".

It is also not clear how a material object like the "missile of star"/meteor can hit an invisible being like devil? Even if, just for the sake of argument, it is accepted that stars are missiles aimed at devils, devils could easily deviate from the path of missiles in such a vast space. In any case, these 'missiles' seem to be ineffective, because they are still following the devils and have not been able to hit or deter a single devil! So, it appears a very poor weapon used by omniscient and omnipotent Allah!! What happened to His omnipotence?

Some Islamic apologists say that this verse of Quran should be interpreted metaphorically to mean that Allah has prescribed punishment for astrologers who link human destiny with position of stars. But, we cannot cherry pick any verse and make it metaphorical or factual at our sweet will.

Besides, stars have been there even before Earth came into existence – so why did Allah create stars "to punish human astrologers" when even Earth was not there, let aside humans or astrologers?

Islam has no answer to these questions.

## 7. Allah created mountains to prevent Earth from shaking.

Quran says:

16.15 And *He has affixed into the Earth, mountains standing firm, lest it should shake with you, and rivers and roads, that you may guide yourselves.*

21.31 And *We have placed on the Earth firm mountains, lest it should shake with them and We placed therein broad highways for them to pass through, that they may be guided.*

So, here Allah is claiming that He has placed mountains on Earth so that Earth does not shake and Earth is navigable for humans!

But mountains do not stabilize Earth – they do not prevent Earth quakes. They are not like pegs of a tent preventing the tent from flying away in high wind. They are also not like stones kept on a big piece of paper to prevent the paper from flying away due to wind.

On the contrary, when two tectonic plates floating on the mantle inside Earth collide, that gives rise to mountains, Earth quakes and volcanoes! Once formed, they have no role to play in “stabilization” of Earth.

In fact, Earth does not need any such stabilizer. Gravitational force of Sun and Moon are enough to keep it moving in its orbit.

So, Quranic statement is completely false.

*False*

## 8. Allah created all living beings in pairs.

Quran unambiguously says that all living beings have been created in pairs by Allah –

51.49: *And of everything We have created pairs, that you may remember (the Grace of Allah).*

36.36: *Glory be to Him, Who has created all the pairs of that which the Earth produces, as well as of their own (human) kind (male and female), and of that which they know not.*

But any high school student of biology would know that asexual reproduction is the primary way of reproduction by single-celled organisms such as archaea, bacteria and protists. There are several well-known organisms such as yeast, algae, fungi, hydra, tapeworms, sea stars, lichens, etc which reproduce asexually. There are no male or female parts or processes involved in asexual reproduction. Asexual reproduction is mainly through fission, budding, vegetative propagation, spore formation or fragmentation.

Besides, there are some organisms called hermaphrodites, such as sponges, snails, sea hare, arrow worms which have both sexes in the same body. So, they cannot be said to have been created “in pairs”.

Thus, this Quranic statement is completely false.

## 9. Natural disasters such as famine, earthquake, flood, storm, etc are caused by Allah to

## **punish non-Muslims and test Muslims.**

Muhammad believed that Allah punishes unbelievers by sending natural disasters like famine, earthquake, flood etc. This scared unbelievers and pleased believers. He assured his followers that Allah will never punish them through natural disasters.

Quran says:

9.51. *Say: "Nothing shall ever happen to us except what Allah has ordained for us..."*

11.117. *And your Lord would never destroy the towns wrongfully, while their people were right-doers.*

28.59. ... *And never would We destroy the towns unless the people thereof are Zalimun (polytheists, wrong-doers, disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah, oppressors and tyrants).*

57.22. *No calamity befalls on the Earth or in yourselves but is inscribed in the Book of Decrees, before We bring it into existence. Verily, that is easy for Allah.*

64.11. *No calamity befalls except by Allah's will.....*

Sahih Bukhari:

Vol. 1, Book 5, Hadith 1244

It was narrated that Abu Hurairah said:

*When the Messenger of Allah raised his head from Ruku' in the Subh prayer, he said: O Allah, tighten Your grip on Mudar, and send them years of famine like the famine of Yusuf.*

But the statement that natural disasters are caused by some supernatural agency like Allah to punish unbelievers has been proved false historically as well as scientifically.

Had it been true, no natural disasters, would have struck Islamic countries during the last 1400 years. But that is not true.

As per historical records noted in WikiIslam, 141 severe natural disasters struck Islamic countries during the last 1400 years including earthquake, flood, stampede, landslides and avalanches. During the last 50 years, out of 10 deadliest earthquakes that struck the world, 6 of the 8 countries affected were Muslim majority countries! Millions of Muslims have died in such disasters. So, why did Allah punish Muslims?

Stampede, fire, collapse of building etc have taken place 13 times causing death of thousands of Muslims during hajj in Makkah during the last 35 years. Could Allah not protect his devout followers even during hajj? Thousands of mosques have been destroyed during earthquakes around the world. Why were they not protected by Allah?

Nowadays, even a school-going student knows how earthquakes, flood, storm, lightening etc happen through natural processes. There is no need to assume the existence of Allah to explain these simple natural phenomena. Now, technology is available to build earthquake proof houses, and flood proof cities. So, even 'Allah' would now be rendered helpless in harming unbelievers through these adversities!

Some Islamic apologists say that Allah sometimes sends natural disasters to Muslims just to test their faith. But this means that all-knowing Allah is not aware which Muslim is how much sincere in his belief and that is why He has to arrange some painful test for Muslims. So, this argument is self-contradictory! Besides, why does Allah then kill small babies, who are too young to have even faith?

Some apologists argue that natural disasters in Islamic countries take place because they are not Islamic enough. But this argument is also false because majority of Muslims of all Islamic countries are following all the basic tenets of Islam – belief in Allah, belief in Muhammad as a messenger of Allah, charity for the poor, fasting for a month and hajj. They are also fighting with unbelievers most of the time (i.e., undertaking jihad). So, whatever is written in Quran is being followed. So, why even such devout Muslims are being punished through natural disasters? Islam has no answer to such questions.

## **10. Muslims will go to Paradise, while all non-Muslims will go to hell.**

This belief is exactly the same as discussed in Judaism under the sub chapter 2C [Falsehood of Judaism]. To read it again, click [here](#).

**Let me now discuss some unique features of Quran which disprove the claim of Muhammad that he was the messenger of God.**

## **11. The grammatical errors in Quran**

Muslims claim that all chapters (Surah) of Quran – i.e., from chapter 1 to 114 – are direct revelation of Allah to Muhammad.

Now, let us examine the first chapter called Surah Al-Fatihah meaning 'The Opening Chapter'. It has only 7 verses and it is a prayer to Allah. It says:

- “1. *In the Name of Allah, the Most Beneficent, the Most Merciful.*
2. *All the praises and thanks be to Allah, the Lord of the mankind.*
3. *The Most Beneficent, the Most Merciful.*
4. *The Only Owner of the Day of Recompense*
5. *You (Alone) we worship, and You (Alone) we ask for help.*
6. *Guide us to the Straight Way*
7. *The Way of those on whom You have bestowed Your Grace, not (the way) of those who earned Your Anger, nor of those who went astray.”*

Now, if this entire chapter was really revealed by Allah to Muhammad, it leads to absurd logical conclusions.

It means Allah Himself is saying:

???

“1. In the Name of Allah, the Most Beneficent, the Most Merciful.

2. All the praises and thanks be to Allah, the Lord of the mankind. And so on.

So, here, Allah is praying to Allah; Allah is praising Allah; and Allah is worshipping Allah and so on. This is absurd. Why would Allah pray, praise and worship Himself?

This absurdity would have been avoided, if this chapter would have started with the word: “Say”, as is done in a number of other chapters and verses. But there is no such word at the beginning of this chapter. That implies that Allah is praying, praising and worshipping Himself!

Islamic apologists, desperate to find a solution to this problem, say that Allah is teaching His believers to pray to Allah! ??

But, then in that case, the opening words of the chapter should have been – “Pray:” or “Say:” But there is no such word.

Secondly, can a prayer be taught word by word? Prayer should come from the heart of a person spontaneously. If Allah is teaching word by word how to pray Him, it is not a prayer, it is a command to be obeyed just like the command “fight them until there is no more Fitnah....” (8.39). A prayer cannot be like any other command. The essence of prayer lies in the freedom to pray or not to pray. If a person has no choice except to repeat words of an authority, it is not a prayer, it is just blind compliance or execution of the order.

In order to avoid this uncomfortable position, apologists make another last effort – they say that just before the first revelation, Gabriel, the representative of Allah, had said to Muhammad: “Read ...”, so this should be notionally applied here as well.

But this solution creates even more problems:

First of all, that word “Read” was with reference to a particular verse as noted in the first 3 lines of chapter 96. It says:

“1. Read! In the Name of your Lord, Who has created (all that exists),

2. Has created man from a clot (a piece of thick coagulated blood).

3. Read! And your Lord is the Most Generous,”

So, the meaning of the word “Read” cannot be blindly applied to the beginning of all other chapters/verses.

Secondly, if “Read” is notionally required to be applied in the beginning of all verses/chapters,

why another equivalent word “Say” has been used before several verses? As for example:

14.31. “*Say (O Muhammad) to (My slaves) who have believed, that they should perform prayer, and spend in charity out of the sustenance ...*”

Thus we find that no matter how it is interpreted, the first chapter of Quran is either not a revelation by Allah or an important word such as ‘say’ or ‘pray’ was forgotten by Allah to be prefixed before the chapter. In the former case, it is a man-made prayer; while in the latter case, Quran has grammatical faults, and therefore cannot be a revelation of Allah in “Pure Arabic”. So, in both cases, the first chapter of Quran is proved not to be a revelation of Allah – but a prayer made by Muhammad. So, the claim that Quran is a perfect revelation is false. It also means that Muhammad himself must have fabricated other chapters, just as he did this chapter.

## 12. The extreme intolerance of Islam against criticism

Criticism of any aspect of Islam was interpreted by Muhammad as a war against Allah and his messenger. The critics were then brutally murdered.

Quran says:

5.33) *The recompense of those who wage war against Allah and His Messenger and do mischief in the land is only that they shall be killed or crucified or their hands and their feet be cut off on the opposite sides, or be exiled from the land. That is their disgrace in this world, and a great torment is theirs in the Hereafter.*

Why was Muhammad so scared of criticism? If he really was Allah’s messenger and whatever he said was under the guidance of the all-knowing Allah, he could not have uttered a single false statement. So, he should have no reasons to worry or be angry at the critics. At the best, he could have laughed at the ignorance of the critics and tried to bring them to truth gently by educating them!

Compare this fearful Islamic psyche with the confidence of today’s science. When somebody criticizes a scientific theory, scientists of the world do not take up arms against him or kill him. They simply counter the points with evidence. If a belief is supported by irrefutable evidence, it is accepted as a fact or a theory. The whole world accepts basics of all sciences, not because scientists are forcing people to accept it at gun point, but because humans naturally seek truth based on evidence. And science provides evidence-based truth. Truth works and it can be used to build technology. So, it is in the interest of everybody to believe in truth or science.

Muhammad was so scared of criticism because deep down, at least sometimes, doubts must be creeping in his mind about his own belief that he was the real messenger of Allah.

This same fear of criticism is nowadays displayed by Muslims when they dub the critics of Islam as ‘Islamophobes’. ‘Islamophobe’ means one who has irrational fear of Islam. So, by manufacturing this

word, Muslims are trying to imply that there is nothing wrong in Islam; that there is something wrong in critics themselves – that they are mentally sick if they have any fear of Islam.

But if there is nothing wrong in Islam, how do they explain disproportionately high number of Muslim terrorists compared to other religions? Why are there thousands of Islamic terrorist organizations? Why are minorities disappearing from Islamic countries? Why is there no freedom of thought and expression in most Islamic countries? Why are most Islamic countries not democratic? What about references of Jizya tax in Quran itself? What about hundreds of aggressive, hateful and terrorism-justifying verses of Quran?

Why is it that we never hear of a Jaina or Buddhist or a Christian suicide bomber exploding in the market place? Why do people not have Jainophobia, Buddhophobia or Christophobia?

So, by coining a word of derision for critics, Muslims are simply acknowledging that they have no answer to these questions and all that they are capable of doing is to blame the critics!

Muhammad could not understand that even if some unbeliever is converted to Islam under the compulsion of Jizya tax or terror, it would still not change his heart. A convert might say outwardly that he believes in Islam, but deep down, he would be resenting it and would continue to believe in his previous world-view.

So, even though Muhammad sincerely believed in Allah and wanted to propagate Islam by force to prevent people from going to hell, it is still counterproductive to force or terrorize someone to accept Islam. A belief is internalized not by force, but by its truthfulness. A true idea cannot be stopped, just as a false idea cannot be sustained by force for long. Popularity of science is an example of this fact.

This extreme intolerance of Islam therefore proves it to be on shaky grounds of falsehood, not on the solid rock of truth.

### 13. References to Satanic Verses by historians

Constant abuse of gods of his fellow tribesmen in Makkah by Muhammad had caused enmity between them. Fed up with this self-generated enmity, Muhammad one day decided to put an end to it by declaring that some of the goddesses of Makkans do exist; that they were actually daughters of Allah and had the power to intercede on behalf of their followers before Allah. This has been mentioned in the following verses of Quran:

53.19 *Have you then considered the Lat and the Uzza?*

53.20 *And Manat, the third, the last?*

*These are the high flying cranes; verily their intercession is accepted with approval.*

This ‘revelation’ naturally delighted Makkans, as this statement of Muhammad improved the relationship between the two.

But, later, Muhammad realized that accepting other gods besides Allah would be a grave sin against Allah. So, he backtracked. The lines “*These are the high flying cranes; verily their intercession is accepted with approval*” were then substituted by him by the following verses:

53.21 *What! For you the males and for Him the females!*

53.22 *This indeed is an unjust division!*

53.23 *They are nothing but names which you have named, you and your fathers; Allah has not sent for them any authority. They follow nothing but conjecture and the low desires which (their) souls incline to; and certainly the guidance has come to them from their Lord.*

But backtracking a verse had disastrous implications: this meant that whatever Muhammad claimed to be the words of Allah were actually not the words of Allah, but Muhammad’s own words, which could be wrong or changed.

Later, Muhammad tried to justify this backtracking by making a story that Satan had put these words on his tongue and Allah subsequently corrected it. So, these verses came to be known as Satanic Verses.

**But, how do we know that Muhammad had backtracked on this point and that Satanic Verses were once part of Quran?**

This is proved by the biographical accounts of Muhammad by Islamic historians themselves such as "Sirat Rasulallah" (The Life of Allah's Prophet) by Ibn Ishaq and by Tabari's "History".

These and several other books confirm the story that Satan had misguided Muhammad to utter verses confirming that these Meccan goddesses existed and had access to Allah for the purpose of intercession on behalf of their followers. These books also state that later Allah rectified the situation and saved Muhammad from committing a grave sin.

Details of this argument may be read on [www.answering-islam.org](http://www.answering-islam.org).

#### **14. The ultimate proof – Quran & Hadith themselves prove that Muhammad was a false prophet**

This is the ultimate proof that Muhammad was a false prophet. This is based on what Quran and Hadith themselves say.

Let us start with Quran 69.44-46:

44. *And if he (Muhammad) had forged a false saying concerning Us (Allah),*

45. *We surely should have seized him by his right hand (or with power and might),*

46. *And then certainly should have cut off his life artery (Aorta),”*

So, assuming that Allah is speaking to Muhammad, here Allah is saying that if Muhammad was a false prophet, He (Allah) would kill him by cutting off his life artery (aorta).

Now, let us see how Muhammad died as described by Islamic sources themselves:

Shahih Bukhari

Volume 3, Book 47, Number 786:

Narrated by Anas bin Malik

*A Jewess brought a poisoned (cooked) sheep for the Prophet who ate from it. She was brought to the Prophet and he (the prophet) was asked, "Shall we kill her?" He said, "No." I continued to see the effect of the poison on the palate of the mouth of Allah's Apostle.*

Volume 4, Book 53, Number 394:

Narrated by Abu Huraira

*..... He (Muhammad) asked, "Have you poisoned this sheep?" They said, "Yes." He asked, "What made you do so?" They said, "We wanted to know if you were a liar in which case we would get rid of you, and if you are a prophet then the poison would not harm you."*

It is clear from these quotes that Muhammad was poisoned by a Jewish woman. This event took place in Khyber, a Jewish settlement, which was attacked by Muhammad and his men. The entire family of this Jewish woman – her father, uncle and husband – had been slaughtered by Muhammad's men. So, naturally she wanted to take revenge by killing Muhammad. However, she also wanted to test whether Muhammad was really a prophet. She thought: if he was really a prophet, his God will warn him before eating the poisoned food, otherwise, he deserves to be killed.

Now, let us see the scene just before death of Muhammad:

Shahih Bukhari

Volume 5, Book 59, Number 713:

Narrated by Ibn Abbas

*.... Narrated 'Aisha: The Prophet in his ailment in which he died, used to say, "O 'Aisha! I still feel the pain caused by the food I ate at Khaibar, and at this time, I feel as if my aorta is being cut from that poison.*

Al-Tabari's 'History of Prophets and Kings', Volume 8, page 124:

*The messenger of God said during the illness from which he died - the mother of Bishr had come in to visit him - "Umm Bishr, at this very moment I feel my aorta being severed because of the food I ate with your son at Khaybar."*

These passages conclusively prove that Muhammad was feeling excruciating pain due to a

severe cut in his aorta or the main artery connecting the heart with the rest of the body due to the effects of poisoning.

Despite his best efforts, Muhammad's condition deteriorated. Finally, under extreme pain and suffering, Muhammad died. His death occurred 3 years after getting poisoned in Khyber.

Now, this incident conclusively proves that Muhammad was a false prophet. Here are the reasons:

Muhammad himself had said in Quran as quoted above that if he was the false prophet, Allah will kill him by cutting his aorta. This is exactly what happened. So, according to Quran itself, Muhammad was a false prophet. But how did this happen? If Muhammad was a false prophet, Quran too was false. So, how could a false book make a true prediction?

For non-Muslims, there is no dilemma. Quran has lots of falsehood, but just by fluke, this statement happened to be true. The real problem is for Muslims: they believe Quran to be 100% true; but if that is so, according to Quran itself, Muhammad is a false prophet!

Muhammad's plundering and slaughtering expeditions had naturally alienated a large number of people who wanted to revenge and kill him. So, it was a common sense that he should not have accepted the dinner offered by the Jewish woman whose entire family had been slaughtered by him. It is a common sense to expect revenge under these circumstances. Now, if Muhammad did not have even this much intelligence, can he be relied on his advice on other matters?

Muhammad claimed to be guided by Allah all the time. So why did Allah not guide him about the poisoned food before he ate the first morsel? In fact, one of his companion, Bishr, died immediately after eating the poisoned food. Why did Muhammad not save him before he touched the food, if he was guided by Allah?

This entire incident clearly proves that Muhammad was a false prophet.

## CONCLUSION:

These are some examples of false beliefs taken at random from Quran. There are hundreds of other examples.

Islamic apologists have been trying very hard to stretch these beliefs to reconcile with modern science, but they have failed. But the very desire to prove that Quran is in harmony with science shows that they have already given a higher status to science in so far as truthfulness of a belief is concerned. So, they have already acknowledged that science is a more reliable source of knowledge than Quran.

No science cares to say that its theory is in conformity with Bible or Quran in order to gain acceptability. Science gives its own hard evidence verified hundreds of times through observation and experiment.

But apologists of Quran (or Bible etc) bend backwards to prove that their beliefs are in conformity with science. This shows their lack of self-confidence and a nagging fear that their beliefs may after all be false and their God may be a figment of imagination of their ‘prophets’. So, the more they try to prove that their beliefs are in conformity with latest scientific research, the more they prove that their religious beliefs are on shaky foundation!

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4D

#### Contradictions in Islam

If Allah is omniscient and Muhammad is His messenger, there should not be a single contradiction in Quran. But Quran has hundreds of mutually contradictory passages.

See some samples:

##### How long does it take Allah to create something?

Instantly:

2.117. *The Originator of the heavens and the Earth. When He decrees a matter, He only says to it: "Be!" And it is.*

Some time:

7.54. *Indeed your Lord is Allah, Who created the heavens and the Earth in Six Days ...*

##### Does evil come from Allah?

Yes:

4.78. *And if some good reaches them, they say, "This is from Allah," but if some evil befalls them, they say, "This is from you." Say: "All things are from Allah."*

No:

4.79. *Whatever of good reaches you, is from Allah, but whatever of evil befalls you, is from yourself.*

##### Who misguides unbelievers?

Allah:

6.25. *And of them there are some who listen to you; but We have set veils on their hearts, so they understand it not*

35.8. *Allah sends astray whom He wills, and guides whom He wills.*

10.100. *It is not for any person to believe, except by the Leave of Allah*

Satan:

15.39. *[Iblis (Satan)] said: "O my Lord! Because you misled me, I shall indeed adorn the path of error for them (mankind) on the Earth, and I shall mislead them all.*

114.4. From the evil of the whisperer (devil who whispers evil in the hearts of men) who withdraws (from his whispering in one's heart after one remembers Allah),

114.5. Who whispers in the breasts of mankind?

4.118. Allah cursed him. And he [Shaitan (Satan)] said: "I will take an appointed portion of your slaves;

4.119. Verily, I will mislead them, and surely, I will arouse in them false desires;

**Unbelievers themselves:**

9.70. So it was not Allah Who wronged them, but they used to wrong themselves.

6.12. Those who destroy themselves will not believe [in Allah, Muhammad, Resurrection, etc.].

30.9. Surely, Allah wronged them not, but they used to wrong themselves.

**Does Allah change his words?**

**No:**

10.64. No change can there be in the Words of Allah

**Yes:**

2.106. Whatever a Verse (revelation) do We abrogate or cause to be forgotten, We bring a better one or similar to it.

**Is intercession possible?**

**No:**

2.123. And fear the Day (of Judgement) when no person shall avail another, nor shall compensation be accepted from him, nor shall intercession be of use to him, nor shall they be helped.

**Yes:**

20.109. On that day no intercession shall avail, except the one for whom the Most Beneficent (Allah) has given permission and whose word is acceptable to Him.

**Did Pagan Makkans get revelation before Muhammad?**

**No:**

34.44. And We had not given them Scriptures which they could study, nor sent to them before you (O Muhammad) any warner (Messenger).

**Yes:**

10.47. And for every Ummah (a community or a nation), there is a Messenger

**Should Islam be forced on all non-Muslims?**

**No:**

2.256. *There is no compulsion in religion*

109.6. *To you be your religion, and to me my religion.*

**Yes:**

8.12. *(Remember) when your Lord inspired the angels, "Verily, I am with you, so keep firm those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes."*

9.29. *Fight against those who (1) believe not in Allah, (2) nor in the Last Day, (3) nor forbid that which has been forbidden by Allah and His Messenger (4) and those who acknowledge not the religion of truth (i.e. Islam) among the people of the Scripture (Jews and Christians), until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.*

**Strength of a Muslim over non-Muslims:**

**1 Muslim = 10 non-Muslims:**

8.65. *O Prophet! Urge the believers to fight. If there are twenty steadfast persons amongst you, they will overcome two hundred, and if there be a hundred steadfast persons they will overcome a thousand of those who disbelieve, because they (the disbelievers) are people who do not understand.*

**1 Muslim = 2 non-Muslims:**

8.66. *Now Allah has lightened your (task), for He knows that there is weakness in you. So if there are of you a hundred steadfast persons, they shall overcome two hundred, and if there are a thousand of you, they shall overcome two thousand with the Leave of Allah.*

So, it is obvious that Quran is full of contradictions. As such, it cannot be a message from some all-wise creator. It is obviously the fabrication of Muhammad who made contradictory statements either to suit his needs under different conditions or he simply did not remember what he had said earlier on the same topic. These contradictions thus expose his false claim of being a prophet.

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4E

#### **Harmful effects of Islam**

Islam has proved to be the most harmful of all religions. All religions are false. But all of them, except Islam and Judaism, are at least peaceful. Christianity and all Indian religions are especially non-violent and all of them promote love and kindness among humans. But Islam is not only false but also extremely violent. Even the word 'harmful' does not express adequately the intensity of pain and suffering which has been caused by it. It is just pure poison, which has caused death of not only millions of non-Muslims but also millions of Muslims during its history of 1400 years. Wherever it has gone, it has wreaked havoc, destruction and death.

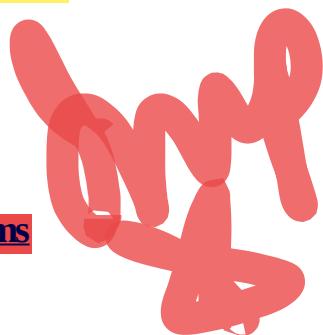
As I have explained in sub-chapter 4A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Islam], Muhammad developed Islam into an aggressive religion, because he sincerely believed that Allah does not like anyone worshipping any other God and He puts such people in hell which is extremely painful. So, Muhammad argued that if he could persuade or even force non-Muslims to convert to Islam, he would be saving them from the greater harm of hell. So, the intention of Muhammad was not bad at all.

Even today, Islamic jihadists are following the same principle. Their deepest intention is to save mankind from going to hell. So, their intention too is not bad. However, Muhammad's basic beliefs in Allah, heaven and hell themselves are false, as I have discussed in sub-chapter 4C [Falsehood of Islam].

But an ideology can be harmful, even if the intention behind it may be noble. In fact, belief in its nobleness gives strength to its followers to commit all sorts of inhuman acts. It also closes their minds. So, they refuse to see even the facts which challenge their beliefs and become even more fanatical. This vicious circle ends up harming the society as well as the propounders/supporters of such ideology.

We may describe the harmful effects of Islam under the following 7 heads:

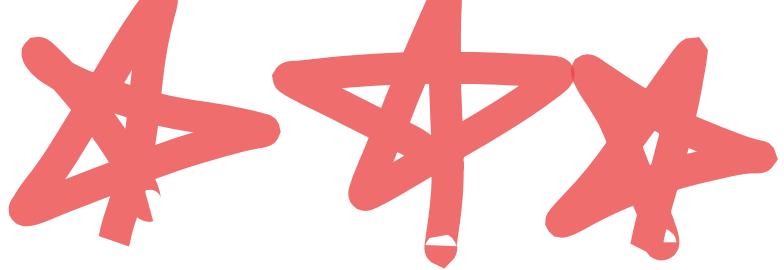
- a) Islam is the most violent ideology of human history**
- b) Islam is against all our modern values**
- c) Obsession with Jihad has destroyed all creativity of Muslims**
- d) Islam has put Muslim women under extreme subjugation**
- e) Islam is against birth-control and hence a major contributor to overpopulation and pollution**



f) Islam sanctions slavery

g) Islam sanctions killing of animals

Let us examine them one by one.



### a) Islam is the most violent ideology of human history

The goal of Islam is to establish rule of Allah in the world –

As we have discussed in sub-chapter 4A, the goal of Islam is to establish rule of Allah in the entire world by fighting with non-Muslims.

Islam teaches to establish the supremacy of Islam by physically fighting, defeating, subjugating, imposing taxes, terrorizing and killing non-Muslims. They call it jihad. There are 164 jihadi verses in Quran that make jihad a central tenet of Islam.

Islam has been fighting with non-Muslims ever since it came into existence --

Muhammad started the plundering and killing campaigns right from the time he shifted from Makkah to Madinah. And this violent activity has been going on from that time till today without any break.

At the time of death of Muhammad in 632 CE, Muslims ruled only in Arabia. Soon thereafter, they launched Jihad on the rest of the world, and wherever they succeeded in conquering a country, they forcibly imposed Islam there and destroyed local culture and religion; as for example, on Palestine (635-636), Syria (638-640), Egypt (639-642), Iraq (635-637), Persia (637-642), Sudan and North Africa (640-711), Spain and Portugal (711-1492), Sicily in Italy (812 -1571), western Chinese border area (650-751), Central Asia (650-1050), Armenia and Georgia (1071 to 1920), India (638 - 1857), Eastern Europe (1444 -1699), Greece (1450 -1853) parts of Ukraine and Southern Russia (1444 – 1918), etc.

Population of all these countries were mainly Christian, Zoroastrian, Hindu, Buddhist, Paganist or Animist, but they were forced to accept Islam under threat of death or to pay exorbitant taxes (Jizya) and in case of refusal to do either, they were mercilessly slaughtered.

In 19<sup>th</sup> and 20<sup>th</sup> century too, their violent campaigns continued unabated. Even after 9/11 (11<sup>th</sup> September 2001) attack on the US, Islamic terrorism has made over 27500 attacks by the end of 2015 in different parts of the world, which is an average of 5 attacks per day  
[<http://www.thereligionofpeace.com/Pages/TheList.htm>].

In fact, today in the year 2016, almost all violent international conflicts are due to the ideology of Islam – whether it is the conflict in Palestine, Middle East, Afghanistan, Pakistan, Xinjiang, Chechnya, Kashmir, Nigeria, Somalia, Sudan, Mali, Thailand, and several other places – it is always because of Islamic jihadi aspirations.

The violent nature of Islam is further proved by the fact that in almost all non-Muslim countries of the world, the percentage of Muslim prisoners is much higher than the percentage of Muslim population in that country. For example, in 2008, the percentage of Muslim prisoners in England and Wales was 12%, while they constituted barely 5% of the population. In India, in 2011, Muslims constituted 13% of the population, but the percentage of Muslim prisoners was 20%.

It is thus clear that so long as there is Islam, there cannot be peace in the world.

Islam does not allow friendship between Muslims and infidels (non-Muslims)

Since Quran teaches Muslims to convert the whole world to Islam by persuasion or aggression, there is no scope of any friendship between Muslims and non-Muslims, who are contemptuously called infidels. See what Quran says:

5.51. O you who believe! Take not the Jews and the Christians for your friends or protectors ...

3.28 Let not the believers take for friends or helpers unbelievers ...

4.101. For the unbelievers are your open enemies .....

Would this world not be a better place if all humans, despite their differences in ideologies, be friendly to each other? But Quran is so full of hatred against unbelievers (infidels) that it would not approve any friendship with them by Muslims.

This explains why Israelis and Palestinians can never live peacefully as friends; this explains why there cannot be any friendship between Hindus of India and Muslims of Pakistan and so forth. But naïve non-Muslim politicians keep on wasting their time in talks and meetings to Muslim politicians in the vain hope of friendship. They do not understand that Quran is interested in eliminating all other religions, rather than making friendship with their followers!

Muslims have no freedom to leave Islam

Let aside non-Muslims, even if Muslims, who are fed up with Islam's obsession with violence, want to leave Islam, they have no freedom to do so. Islam believes that once a person is born as a Muslim or converted as a Muslim, he cannot leave Islam. If he does, he must be killed.

Quran says:

4.89. *They wish that you reject Faith, as they have rejected (Faith), and thus that you all become equal (like one another). So take not Auliya' (protectors or friends) from them, till they emigrate in the Way of Allah (to Muhammad). But if they turn back (from Islam), take (hold) of them and kill them wherever you find them, and take neither Auliya' (protectors or friends) nor helpers from them."*

Sahih Bukhari says:

Narrated Ikrima

*“Ali burnt some people and this news reached Ibn 'Abbas, who said, 'Had I been in his place I would not have burnt them, as the Prophet said, 'Don't punish (anybody) with Allah's Punishment.' No doubt, I would have killed them, for the Prophet said, If somebody (a Muslim) discards his religion, kill him.' ”*

Volume 9, Book 83, Number 17

Narrated 'Abdullah

*“Allah's Apostle said, "The blood of a Muslim who confesses that none has the right to be worshipped but Allah and that I am His Apostle, cannot be shed except in three cases: In Qisas for murder, a married person who commits illegal sexual intercourse and the one who reverts from Islam (apostate) and leaves the Muslims." ”*

Sharia, the Islamic law, therefore clearly provides for death sentence to any Muslim who tries to convert to any other religion. However, Islam is more than happy if a follower of any other religion converts to Islam! See their hypocrisy!!

### **But are all Muslims harmful for the world?**

There are 3 types of Muslims – Type ‘A’, ‘B’ and ‘C’:

Type ‘A’ Muslims (Terrorists/Jihadists) –

They are the most devout followers of Islam. They not only strongly believe in jihad but dedicate their entire life and resources for jihad. They have no personal axe to grind. They are very sincere and selfless. They are not like normal criminals. They are not wicked. They sincerely believe that by pressurizing non-Muslims to accept Islam, they are saving them from going to hell and thus following the command of Allah. So, their intention is pious. Unfortunately, their beliefs are false.

They are ready to kill and be killed for the sake of expansion of Islam. They seriously believe that after death, they will enter paradise and enjoy a blissful and super luxurious life forever in the proximity of Allah. Islam calls them Mujahidin (a true Muslim ready to die in the cause of Allah). The rest of the world calls them terrorists. They are few in number compared to 1.6 billion Muslims of the world. But they are the true representatives and pioneers of Islam. They are the true followers of Muhammad. They are doing exactly what Muhammad wanted all Muslims to do.

Type ‘B’ Muslims (Deceivers) –

They sincerely believe that Quran teaches to establish Allah's rule in the entire world by physically defeating and subjugating non-Muslims. But they do not have the courage or capability to dedicate their entire life for violent jihad. So, they confine themselves to support jihad intellectually, morally, demographically and financially in a discreet manner. These Muslims, when in minority, also say in

public that Islam is a peaceful religion. But they tell this lie deliberately for tactical reasons. They publicly condemn the acts of terrorism, but privately rejoice when non-Muslims are killed in such acts of terrorism.

If you make a survey of Islam through Internet sites written by Muslims, you would find that they are trying very hard to prove that Islam is a peaceful religion and that it is fully compatible with values of freedom, science, democracy and modern civilization. But they are just following deception (*taqiyya*) as sanctioned in Islam. They are quoting only the Meccan verses of Quran to prove that Islam is peaceful. But they remain silent on Medinan verses which have abrogated the Meccan verses and ask Muslims to fight non-Muslims. So, they are propagating only half-truths as truths. They are doing all this to facilitate acceptability of Islam by the rest of the world so that they can get more time to become organizationally and technologically stronger and strike the rest of the world later with full ferocity.

So, Type 'B' Muslims are doing the ground work for Type 'A' Muslims by deceiving the world.

Today, the majority of even non-Muslims including top world political heads believe that Islam is a peaceful religion and that only a few misguided Muslims have become terrorists. The credit for propagating this myth goes to Type 'B' Muslims. It is clear that they have been quite successful in deceiving the world till now.

Of course, now, their deception is getting exposed on Internet. To save themselves from this exposure, they try to silence the critics by calling them Islamophobes, which means: "There is nothing wrong with Islam and it is the critics who are suffering from an irrational fear/hatred of Islam!"

So, this type of Muslims too are silently and discreetly doing jihad in their own ways!

#### Type 'C' Muslims (Naïve ones)

These are ordinary lay Muslims who have either no time or no capability to understand what Quran really teaches. They are ignorant about the real purpose of Islam. They are generally too busy struggling for survival. They want a peaceful life centered on their family. They hear now and then from Type 'B' Muslims that 'Islam is a peaceful religion' and they sincerely believe it to be true. In fact, they want peace and prosperity like any normal person and therefore like to believe that Islam is a peaceful religion. So, they close their eyes when a Muslim commits an act of terrorism and say that such acts cannot be sanctioned by Islam.

However, some of these type of Muslims easily get instigated by Type 'A' or Type 'B' Muslims and become willing to die for Islam in the hope of getting paradise. With some training, they can be easily converted into Type 'A' or Type 'B'.

Majority of Muslims belong to this category. They are not dangerous for the rest of the world, but they can be deadly any time by converting into Type 'A' or Type 'B' at a moment's notice.

Both Type 'A' and Type 'B' Muslims are equally dangerous for the civilized world which believes in freedom of thought, expression, free enquiry and fair competition among ideas. Both types of Muslims, on the other hand, believe in authoritarian imposition of their ideologies on everybody by force.

However, Type 'B' Muslims are more dangerous than Type 'A' because the former can easily befool non-Muslims by his deception. Non-Muslims already know how to handle Type 'A' Muslims, but they get deceived easily by the friendly and smooth talk of Type 'B' Muslims. Only by exposing the deception created by Type 'B' Muslims, the civilized nations can unite, fight, defeat and eliminate Islam.

These three types not only represent all Muslims, but also all Muslim organizations.

There are thousands of jihadist organizations in almost all countries. They are already waging jihad by fighting, killing, extorting money subduing and so forth. IS, Al-Qaeda, Taliban are some of the tips of the iceberg of this jihadi network. They all represent Type 'A' Muslims. These jihadi organizations are directly or indirectly supported by several Islamic governments.

Islamic organizations representing Type 'B' are most of the Islamic regimes themselves. Publicly, they say Islam is a peaceful religion; but behind the curtain, they provide all possible support to these jihadi organizations. Publicly, they condemn terrorism against non-Muslims, but privately they rejoice at the success of jihadis! They get upset only when terrorists turn against these regimes themselves!!

For example, Saudi Arabia is publicly a partner of the West to fight the War on Terror, but it also funds worldwide construction of mosques and Islamic schools where jihadists are educated and nurtured.

Pakistan is another example. It says it is fighting with terrorism and gets billions of dollars from the US as a military aid in the name of fighting terrorism. But it keeps on supporting terrorists covertly. It sheltered Osama bin Laden and Mullah Umar while declaring in public that they were never in Pakistan!

Most of the non-Islamic regimes naively believe that there is nothing wrong with Islam. The credit for deceiving the 'infidels' (non-Muslims) goes to these Islamic regimes.

Let us now go to the next harmful effect of Islam.

### **b) Islam is against all our modern values**

Islam is against all freedom of thought and expression or freedom to choose any religion/no religion. This implies that it is against any non-Islamic ideology. This goes against all our modern values according to which every individual must have freedom to profess, propagate, criticize and practice any ideology, subject to the condition that he does not use physical force against any other individual or group of individuals. Without such freedom, no growth of individuals or society can be possible.

Freedom is the foundation of the modern civilization. Without freedom to pursue knowledge, no scientific understanding of the universe (which goes against Islam and all other religions) is possible. Without freedom to develop new ideology based on the scientific understanding of the universe, no

improvement in human condition is possible. Without freedom, there can be no human rights, secularism or democracy. Without freedom, there can be no creativity.

But Islamic countries are against freedom of thought and expression. OIC (Organization of Islamic Co-operation), which is an alliance of all the 57 Muslim-majority countries, adopted a human rights declaration in Cairo in 1990. This declaration clearly makes freedom of thought and expression subject to the approval of Sharia. Article 22 of this declaration says:

(a) Everyone shall have the right to express his opinion freely in such manner as would not be contrary to the principles of the Shari'ah.

(b) Everyone shall have the right to advocate what is right, and propagate what is good, and warn against what is wrong and evil according to the norms of Islamic Shari'ah.

(c) Information is a vital necessity to society. It may not be exploited or misused in such a way as may violate sanctities and the dignity of Prophets, undermine moral and ethical values or disintegrate, corrupt or harm society or weaken its faith.

This clearly proves that the mind set of Muslims has got stuck with their 7<sup>th</sup> century ideology – they cannot think that their ideology can ever be false or harmful. So, instead of pushing themselves up and upgrading their ideology, they want to pull down others to their ideology. They fail to understand that without freedom of thought and expression, humans can never grow intellectually or materially

Thus, Islam is totally against all possible growth of human consciousness. This is not at all acceptable.

### **c) Obsession with Jihad has destroyed all creativity of Muslims**

Islam was, and still is, so much obsessed with jihad that it has completely closed itself. Even today, almost no Muslim can even think that Quran can ever have any false or socially-harmful statement. Jihad is basically a very destructive ideology – it has driven Muslims to be obsessed with only one thing -- **how to destroy others' religions, institutions, property and life.** Ever since Islam was born, Muslims have done nothing except killing, raping, burning and destroying.

**Islam does not promote how to be constructive -- how to create science, technology, art, music, better institutions, better processes, better products and so forth. Muslims have contributed almost no scientific theory or technology of any standing.**

Muslims have not produced a single major technological device such as electricity, car, high rise buildings, train, telephone, airplane, computer, internet and so forth. But they have destroyed thousands of cars, buildings and airplanes in jihadi violence.

The so-called achievements in science and technology of Muslims during their 'golden period' (900 – 1300 CE) are essentially copies or minor improvements of Greek, Roman, Egyptian, Chinese and Indian

knowledge of pre-Islamic times. The claims to Islamic invention of algebra, camera, gunpowder, crank-shaft, fountain pen, flying, carpets etc are all misleading, as their original inventors were not Muslims at all. This claim has been refuted very systematically by Wikiislam ([https://wikiislam.net/wiki/How\\_Islamic\\_Inventors\\_Did\\_Not\\_Change\\_The\\_World](https://wikiislam.net/wiki/How_Islamic_Inventors_Did_Not_Change_The_World)).

In fact, Islam is obsessed with only jihad, nothing else – no science, no technology, no social engineering, no art, and no music. Not a single verse of Quran teaches or encourages to do independent enquiry to understand how nature behaves. If the most ideal goal of life is to convert the world to Islam, why would any Muslim care to spend his life in studying stars, planets, matter and energy unless it serves some religious purpose?

So, whatever little mathematics, geography and astronomy were really developed by Muslims aimed at finding accurate time of prayer, the date of Eid, direction of Makkah from the place of prayer, calculation of zakat, sharing of hereditary property and stuff like that. Such limited perspective naturally could not develop science at the scale post-Enlightenment Europe could do. If any Muslim has got genuinely interested in science, it was because of his personal motivation and despite Islam, not because of Islam.

Imagine a Muslim scientist contradicting the Quranic statements about the creation of the world in 6 days, separation of Earth from heavens by Allah, Sun orbiting around Earth, rains coming from heaven, all living beings existing in pairs, and so forth, as discussed in sub-chapter 4C [Falsehood of Islam]. As per Quran, any human challenging any Quranic statement must be put to death for insulting Allah or Muhammad. So, how can a Muslim be a scientist and still alive? It is thus proved that a Muslim doing science cannot logically follow Islam!

This close-mindedness of Muslims has harmed them much more than others. Muslims have lost the ability to think rationally. They, especially Type 'A' and Type 'B' Muslims, are continuously boiling within themselves. They are full of hatred against the whole world. If they had the power, they would have killed all non-Muslims long ago. This intense hatred has made them mentally sick. Medical science says that negative emotions poison our bodies making us more vulnerable to diseases.

So, while the rest of the world keeps on making progress in social engineering, science and technology, Muslims continue to be stuck to a hateful and false world-view of 7<sup>th</sup> century! They are burning with hatred and thus poisoning their own lives. The sheer pace of growth of the rest of the world stresses and depresses Muslims to no end. They are suffering hell right now here on Earth! This is why they are so much interested in going to paradise after death. A happy person does not care about an after-life or some imaginary paradise. His paradise is right here on Earth!

Muhammad kept on promising Muslims that in paradise, they would get fresh drinking water, fruits, honey, milk, wine, silk clothes, gold ornaments, virgins and so on. But these things are available right here

on Earth. However, Muslims cannot enjoy all this, because they have been brainwashed that they must first strive to convert the whole world to Islam. Only then, after death, they would go to paradise and enjoy those goodies. So, they keep on wasting their life in this futile exercise, while the rest of the world goes its own way and cares a damn!

#### **d) Islam has put Muslim women under extreme subjugation**

Islam openly believes that women are inferior to men and that Muslim women must be ruled and subjugated.

See some of the passages where Quran and Hadith prescribe inferior status of women and authorize beating and subjugation of women:

Women are inferior to men:

**Quran:**

4.34. *As to those women on whose part you see ill-conduct, admonish them (first), (next), refuse to share their beds, (and last) beat them, but if they return to obedience, seek not against them means (of annoyance).*

[Notice that wives have not been given corresponding rights to admonish or beat their husbands, if they misbehave!]

2.228. ... *but men are a degree above them (women).*

[Men have been made superior to women by the creator – ‘compassionate and just’ Allah!]

4.3. *And if you fear that you shall not be able to deal justly with the orphan-girls, then marry (other) women of your choice, two or three, or four but if you fear that you shall not be able to deal justly (with them), then only one or (the captives and the slaves) that your right hands possess. That is nearer to prevent you from doing injustice.*

[Men can marry up to 4 women at a time, but a woman is not allowed to marry more than one man at a time! How can a man ever do justice with more than one wife? Permission to have 4 wives are linked to the concept of jihad. During jihadi campaigns, married non-Muslim males were killed in large numbers and their wives were seized and appropriated by jihadists. Permission to marry 4 women facilitated jihadists to marry those grieving widows (with or without their consent)!]

2.282. *And get two witnesses out of your own men. And if there are not two men (available), then a man and two women, such as you agree for witnesses, so that if one of them (two women) errs, the other can remind her*

[1 man = 2 women for the purpose of witnessing!]

4.11. *Allah commands you as regards your children's (inheritance); to the male, a portion equal*

to that of two females

[1 man = 2 women for the purpose of inheritance!]

2.223 Your wives are a tilth for you, so go to your tilth (have sexual relations with your wives), when or how you will

**[A woman is only an item of sexual consumption – her husband can consume her whenever he likes in whatever way he likes – her consent is irrelevant!]**

Sahih Bukhari Hadith: Volume 1, Book 2, Number 28

Narrated by Ibn 'Abbas

*The Prophet said: "I was shown the Hell-fire and that the majority of its dwellers were women who were ungrateful." It was asked, "Do they disbelieve in Allah?" (or are they ungrateful to Allah?) He replied, "They are ungrateful to their husbands and are ungrateful for the favors and the good (charitable deeds) done to them. If you have always been good (benevolent) to one of them and then she sees something in you (not of her liking), she will say, 'I have never received any good from you.'"*

[See how Muhammad is demonizing the nature of all women! Are men too not ungrateful to women? So, why have men also not been sent to hell?]

A girl, even before puberty, may be married off to an old man:

Islam permits marriage of child girls who have not even attained puberty. Muhammad himself had had sex with Aisha, when she was just 9 and Muhammad was 53. Sahih Bukhari says:

Volume 7, Book 62, Number 64:

Narrated by 'Aisha

*That the Prophet married her when she was six years old and he consummated his marriage when she was nine years old, and then she remained with him for nine years (i.e., till his death).*

A Muslim may argue that Aisha must have attained the age of puberty even by 9; so consummation with her by Muhammad was lawful. But Hadith itself admits that Aisha had not attained puberty at 9.

Sahih Bukhari says:

Volume 8, Book 73, Number 151

Narrated by 'Aisha

*I used to play with the dolls in the presence of the Prophet, and my girlfriends also used to play with me. When Allah's Apostle used to enter (my dwelling place) they used to hide themselves, but the Prophet would call them to join and play with me. (The playing with the dolls and similar images is*

*forbidden, but it was allowed for 'Aisha at that time, as she was a little girl, not yet reached the age of puberty.) (Fateh-al-Bari page 143, Vol.13)*

It is these Islamic sanctions which support rampant girl child marriages in Islamic countries to this day.

#### Women must remain in veil when outside home:

It is this male chauvinism of Muhammad which made him pronounce veiling of women under the façade of ‘Allah’s injunctions’ in Quran:

*33.59. O Prophet! Tell your wives and your daughters and the women of the believers to draw their cloaks (veils) all over their bodies.*

*24.31. And tell the believing women to lower their gaze, and protect their private parts and not to show off their adornment except only that which is apparent, and to draw their veils all over their bodies, faces, necks and bosoms, etc. and not to reveal their adornment.”*

But why did Muhammad make veiling of women a fiat of ‘Allah’?

This is because veiling is a direct consequence of the logic of jihad. Muhammad realized that if an army of jihadists is to be formed, young men are to be recruited. But if they are to be taught jihad and groomed to hate and fight non-Muslims, they have to be kept away from the sight of girls, otherwise they may fall in love and lose their interest in fighting. When you are denied sex, you can be brainwashed to be aggressive more easily. This is why army men across the world are generally not allowed to have physical contacts with women. Sex makes one calm and loving. Deprivation of sex makes one aggressive.

Besides, veiling was a way of controlling women. This practice was prevalent even among pre-Islamic Arabia. Its purpose was to protect them from the prying eyes of potential sexual partners/rapists and to ensure that there was less temptation to molest a woman. Muhammad simply continued the practice.

But veil is an insult to a woman’s dignity. It degrades her to be an item of sexual consumption which must be covered just as a sweet is to be covered to protect it from flies. It is also an insult to a man, because it presumes that he is a sexual demon ready to pounce upon a woman as soon as he sees her.

Veil is also physically harmful. Due to veil, Muslim women get less exposure to sunlight and hence most of them suffer from deficiency of vitamin D, which is crucial in absorption of calcium. So, its deficiency causes weak and brittle bones leading to osteoporosis and other bone diseases. Forcing women to be caged within homes most of the time has led to obesity and other health problems among Muslim women.

Muslim apologists justify such veiling of women on the plea that veils protect women from evil gaze and sexual advances of lustful men.

This is a false argument. In the entire non-Muslim world, women are not veiled and yet they are not

being molested or raped whenever they come on road. In most of the developed countries, nobody even notices how women are dressed. Sexual crime against women in such countries is not unusually high. So, Islamic justification of veiling women is false.

The pathetic condition of women in Islamic countries – beating, rape, sexual molestations, child marriages, honor killing, murder in case of protests by women against ill-treatment by husbands – is well known. All this is due to the inferior status of women given in Islam.

This is further proved by the fact that in Saudi Arabia, which follows Islam most strictly, and is a role model for other Islamic regimes, women till date are forced to cover their faces in public. They cannot drive, go out alone, vote, participate in elections, choose most of professions, inherit at an equal rate to men, and so on.

Most Muslim women have been brainwashed right from childhood that veiling is good for them. So, even they cannot think of coming out of this mental slavery and even they justify their own slavery!

This is why France and Belgium have banned wearing veils by Muslim women in public places. There is a widespread support for such action in all Western countries.

#### **e) Islam is against birth-control and hence a major contributor to overpopulation and pollution**

Why do people want birth-control? It is mainly because they want to bring up their children with best possible facilities – nutritious food, good clothing, good schools, good health care and so forth. But what if they are assured that there is some agency which would take care of all such needs of children? Then, there would be no incentive for birth-control.

This is precisely what this agency – God – of all Abrahamic religions including Islam assures:

Quran 17.31:

*Do not kill your children for fear of poverty. We provide sustenance to them and to you, too. Killing them is a great sin indeed.*

Quran 42.49

*To Allah, belongs the kingdom of the heavens and the Earth. He creates what He wills. He bestows female (offspring) upon whom He wills, and bestows male (offspring) upon whom He wills.*

So, Allah has assured Muslims not to worry about their children, as He will take care of them. In fact, it is He who bestows children – male or female. So, naturally, He will provide all the facilities for their upbringing too.

Naturally, Muslims do not have to resort to birth-control for better upbringing. Even primitive techniques such as withdrawal just before ejaculation to avoid risk of pregnancy (called ‘azl’ in Arabic) was considered unnecessary by Muhammad. If this argument is followed today, use of even condoms

would be denounced by Muhammad, because his argument would be: if Allah wants to gift a child, why should humans stop it?

Sahih Muslim

Book 008, Number 3376:

*Abu Sa'id al-Khudri (Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Apostle was asked about 'azl, whereupon he said: There is no harm if you do not do that, for it (the birth of the child) is something ordained. Muhammad (one of the narrators) said: (The words) La 'alaykum (there is no harm) implies its Prohibition.*

Book 008, Number 3381:

*Abu Sa'id al-Khudri (Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger was asked about 'azl, whereupon he said: The child does not come from all the liquid (semen) and when Allah intends to create anything nothing can prevent it (from coming into existence).*

But this argument of Muhammad is not only false but also extremely dangerous.

Millions of Muslim children live a life of destitution and deprivation around the world. Forget about schools – they do not have even assured food. So, why is Allah not taking care of them? Why is Allah not building schools, hiring teachers, providing lunch in schools and motivating parents to send children to schools? We do not see any action of Allah on the ground.

Secondly, if humans want, they can stop creation of a child, irrespective of whether Allah wants it or not. Use of condoms or other contraceptives have indeed stopped unwanted pregnancies. Allah (if He exists) is powerless before this technology.

Obviously, this was merely a pious belief of Muhammad and it has nothing to do with reality. In fact, he wanted more children so that he has more jihadis at his/his successor's command who would endeavor to complete his mission of converting the world to Islam.

Muslims are blindly following this false belief and therefore reproducing at a very high rate causing human population to explode exponentially. Worldwide, Muslims have the highest birth rate. In fact, they proudly claim that Islam is the fastest growing religion. But they forget that this growth is not because the rest of the world is converting to Islam, but because of their high reproductive rate. They do not realize that this population explosion will destroy their own families and Islamic states first by increasing unemployment, crime, poverty, degradation of natural resources and pollution to an unprecedented level.

As I have argued in previous chapters, all Abrahamic religions believe that God gives children and provides means for their upbringing. But while majority of Jews and Christians have juked this false belief, majority of Muslims are still following it.

f) Islam sanctions slavery

Even in pre-Islamic Arabia, plundering other tribes for wealth and women was practiced. Women were considered as property by Arabs at that time. But, **Muhammad gave a divine sanction to this primitive animal-like behavior.**

So, after attacking unbelievers (Jews, Christians and Pagan farmers and traders), Muhammad and his men would kill husbands and fathers and take their wives and daughters as slaves along with their property. Later, they would distribute those female slaves among themselves and rape them as per their sweet will. This 'war booty' was one of the biggest temptation for Muslims because it provided them with almost unlimited variety in sexual indulgence.

Enslaving women of unbelievers is thus an integral part of Islam. Without this provision, the number of men joining Islam in its infancy would have been much less. So, Muhammad very intelligently included female slaves in war booty and dubbed it as 'bounty of Allah'.

Of course, during jihadi campaigns, men were also taken as captive and used as slave to do all the hard and monotonous household and other chores.

Quran and Hadith happily confirm this practice without mincing their words. See some samples here:

Quran:

*33.50. O Prophet! Verily, We have made lawful to you your wives, to whom you have paid their Mahr (bridal money given by the husband to his wife at the time of marriage), and those (captives or slaves) whom your right hand possesses - whom Allah has given to you....*

[Here Allah is confirming that He has made it lawful for a Muslim to have sex with his wives and female slaves captured in jihadi war against unbelievers ('right hand possesses' means those taken as captives during war)]

*4.24. Also (forbidden are) women already married, except those (captives and slaves) whom your right hands possess.*

[Here Allah is prescribing that a Muslim should not have sex with other married women except female slaves]

Sahih Bukhari:

Volume 3, Book 41, Number 598

Narrated Jabir

*A man manumitted a slave and he had no other property than that, so the Prophet cancelled the manumission (and sold the slave for him). No'aim bin Al-Nahham bought the slave from him.*

[Here Muhammad not only approves slavery, but also gets revoked the freedom granted to a slave and helps in selling that slave so that the person who owned the slave gets money to pay off his debt]

Volume 3, Book 34, Number 432

Narrated Abu Said Al-Khudri

*That while he was sitting with Allah's Apostle, he said, "O Allah's Apostle! We get female captives as our share of booty, and we are interested in their prices, what is your opinion about coitus interruptus?" The Prophet said, "Do you really do that? It is better for you not to do it. No soul that which Allah has destined to exist, but will surely come into existence."*

[Here some men wanted to sell their female slaves but in order to get better price, they did not want to make them pregnant. So they were practicing *coitus interruptus*, i.e., they were not ejaculating inside vagina. But Muhammad advised them to do full blown sex even if those females could become pregnant. His argument was that if Allah wanted to give birth of a soul, He would do it anyway, irrespective of whether ejaculation was done inside or outside vagina!!]

Volume 3, Book 47, Number 765

Narrated Kurib

*The freed slave of Ibn 'Abbas, that Maimuna bint Al-Harith told him that she manumitted a slave-girl without taking the permission of the Prophet. On the day when it was her turn to be with the Prophet, she said, "Do you know, O Allah's Apostle, that I have manumitted my slave-girl?" He said, "Have you really?" She replied in the affirmative. He said, "You would have got more reward if you had given her (i.e. the slave-girl) to one of your maternal uncles."*

[Here again, Muhammad is against manumission (setting free of a slave). He would rather give her to some relation so that she could be exploited for some more time!]

It is thus clear that Islam not only continued the practice of slavery, but also gave divine justification for it. The pathetic condition of foreign maids and manual workers in Islamic countries even today is a logical outcome of this internalization of slavery into Islam.

### **g) Islam sanctions killing of animals**

Just like Bible, Quran too assumes that Allah has made certain animals for food for humans. Quran says:

5.1. *O you who believe! Fulfil (your) obligations. Lawful to you (for food) are all the beasts of cattle except that which will be announced to you...*

5.5. *...The food (slaughtered cattle, eatable animals, etc.) of the people of the Scripture (Jews*

*and Christians) is lawful to you and yours is lawful to them.....*

To slaughter an animal with the name of Allah with thanks to Him is like killing a human child for food on Earth by an alien thanking his robot for tracking and catching the ‘prey’. Would we like our child being killed for food by the alien? Would we be able to see our child’s throat being slit so that he dies slowly in excruciating pain, while his blood is oozing out? But exactly the same treatment is prescribed for animals by Quran.

Have we asked animals whether they feel happy when they are slaughtered? According to Quran, they should be happy because Allah has made them only for human consumption and Allah is “just and compassionate” for his created beings! But the pain and cry of animals before and during slaughter does not provide any evidence for this.

Killing animals for food pulls us down to the level of predatory animals who have no other option to survive except killing their prey. Can we humans not be a little more intelligent, a little more considerate, a little more loving towards our ancestors – animals?

Killing animals for food is not only cruel, ugly and insensitive, but also unnecessary. Vegetarian food including eggs has all the nutrients required by humans. Vegetarian food is also eco-friendly. It causes less diseases. The increasing incidence of obesity, diseases, global warming, and wastage of energy – is all partly caused by meat eating.

It has been calculated that producing one calorie from animal protein requires 11 times as much fossil fuel input—releasing 11 times as much carbon dioxide—as does producing a calorie from plant protein. Feeding massive amounts of grain and water to farmed animals and then killing them and processing, transporting, and storing their flesh is extremely energy-intensive. Besides, animal manure also releases large quantities of carbon dioxide.

It may be argued that even vegetarian food involves killing of plants/seeds. That is true. But plants have much less sensitivity for pain compared to animals. The choice for humans in this world is not between violence and non-violence, but between violence causing more pain and violence causing less pain.

Quran has played a big role in creating cruelty against animals. Hundreds of billions of animals are killed every year in the world for food and other uses. Unless people stop believing in these archaic religious world-views, it would be impossible to stop this legalized murder of helpless animals.

### **To sum up:**

Islam has proved to be the most harmful, most poisonous, most violent and most intolerant religion. There cannot be peace in this world until Islam is completely eliminated.

## Chapter 4 -- Islam

### Sub-chapter 4F

#### Summary of Islam

Judaism had propounded its doctrine of fall of man from heaven due to disobedience of God's order, but had no answer how mankind will regain entry into heaven. Its concern got limited to the aspirations of a particular community – Israelites.

Christianity attempted a solution to the problem by holding that mankind must repent for the sin committed by Adam and Eve, acknowledge the martyrship of Jesus who was kind enough to die to atone the sin of mankind and follow his teachings in order to gain entry into heaven.

Islam rejected the solution of Christianity arguing that the sin committed by Adam and Eve was their personal problem – so mankind need not repent for that. Muhammad held that if a) we simply worshipped one God and no other gods and b) make all others accept the teachings of Quran, God would be very pleased and would happily take us back into heaven.

The most fundamental features of Islam – Monotheism and intolerance of communities worshipping any other God are the same as those of Judaism. But Islam goes ten steps further – it applies intolerance of God for non-Muslims of the entire mankind, in place of Judaic application of the doctrine only to local non-Israelites. In this sense, Islam is a fully-grown tree of the seed of terrorism sown by Judaism.

Muhammad tried to bring the entire mankind to Islam, not because he had a secret personal agenda or he was a wicked person or he hated the world but because he sincerely believed that this is what Allah wanted and this is what Allah had asked him to do. He was simply trying to help mankind regain heaven and avoid hell. He was trying to help mankind with compassion in his own way.

So, today, when jihadists are trying to establish Islamic rule over the entire world by whatever means, they are doing this under the pious belief that they are helping mankind to follow the right path and finally go to Paradise! Jihadists are killing out of compassion, not out of personal wickedness!!

But modern scholarship has discovered that Quran has hundreds of false statements and contradictions. This could not have been the case, if Quran was really a message of the real creator of the universe. This logically implies that Muhammad's belief that he was the messenger of the real creator of the universe was false. This means he was living under an illusion of being a messenger of Allah, but in reality, he was expressing his own personal thoughts about the world.

Thus his entire venture of Islam has now been proved to be his personal venture and it has nothing to do with the real creator of the universe (if any).

Islam is not only completely false, but it is extremely poisonous from the point of view of the peace, prosperity and freedom of the world.

Only when individuals are free to harbor, develop, propagate and practice new ideas, there is a competition among them and the best of them survive and thrive. Best ideas are those which correspond to facts and hence can be used to develop technology that can solve man's problems. False ideas fade away and die. But, if under an authoritarian rule (like that of Muhammad or his followers), a set of ideas (like Islam) is forcibly imposed on people, the competition among ideas disappear and a false and harmful idea (like Islam) starts ruling over people bringing disaster for the whole society. This is what the false ideology of Islam has done.

Islam stunted the intellectual growth of Muslims, as it eliminated all questioning and enquiry of mind. It brought death and destruction for non-Muslims who were so innocent they could not believe a religion could be so savage, brutal or inhuman.

Islam has proved to be the most poisonous of all religions. It has not contributed anything good for humanity. Wherever it has spread, it has only promoted fanaticism, irrationality, intolerance, hatred, humiliation, inhumanity, destruction and death.

The unfulfilled dream of Muhammad is still trying to become a reality by way of destructive activities of jihadists/terrorists around the world.

The sooner the world gets rid of Islam, the better it is for the sake of freedom, peace and prosperity. All civilized nations must expose its violent character.

## Chapter 5

### Hinduism

#### An Introduction

I define Hinduism as the religion propounded in Vedas, especially in the last part of Vedas – Upanishads, which are also known as Vedanta (culmination or end of Vedas).

Vedas and Upanishads are compilation of verses about the ultimate reality and its relationship with man and the world. They were composed in Sanskrit and their statements are very cryptic.

Detailed belief systems were therefore developed based on interpretation of those verses. These are called philosophies. Nyaya-Vaisesika, Samkhya-Yoga, Samkaracharya, Ramanujacharya, Vivekananda, Sri Aurobindo and several others developed different philosophies based on Upanishadic insight. These are also part of Hinduism.

On the basis of certain interpretation of Vedic and Upanishadic verses, a detailed code of conduct was developed for individuals, society and the state. They were codified in Manu Smriti, Yagyavalkya Smriti and several other Smritis. They are also part of Hinduism.

The abstract concept of ultimate realities expressed in Upanishads had to be communicated to the masses. So, those abstract concepts were simplified, anthropomorphized and converted into the form of mythologies. Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas express these mythologies. They are also part of Hinduism.

#### History of Hinduism

There are broadly 3 phases in Hinduism, each with a different world-view, though all logically inter-connected. There is an underlying continuity in them.

These 3 phases of Hinduism are:

**Vedic Hinduism as expressed in early Vedas [1500 – 800 BCE]**

**Upanishadic Hinduism as expressed in Upanishads [800 - 600 BCE]**

**Classical Hinduism as expressed in Smritis, Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas [600 BCE – 1200 CE]**

Let me briefly summarize each phase:

**Vedic Hinduism**

This is the first stage of Hinduism. It was expressed in Vedas, which are composed in Sanskrit.

They are the oldest texts of Hinduism. There are 4 Vedas – Rig, Yajur, Sam and Atharva. Rig Veda is the oldest of them and is generally believed to have been composed orally about 1500 BCE, as writing was not known at that time.

All the Vedas are mainly collection of prayers with a glimpse of some world-view interspersed casually here and there.

Orthodox Hindus believe that Vedas including Upanishads are the direct revelation of God to some sages and cannot be false. God was called by different names such as Brahman, Purusha, Atman, etc.

## **Upanishadic Hinduism**

This was the second and the foundational phase of Hinduism. It is based on Upanishads, which are the last part of Vedas and therefore also called ‘Vedanta’ (literally meaning ‘culmination of Vedas’). They were most probably composed around 800-600 BCE. There are hundreds of Upanishads, but ten of them are the most authentic and known as principal Upanishads. They are also the oldest. They are – Isha, Ken, Katha, Prasna, Mundaka, Mandukya, Taittiriya, Aitareya, Chandogya and Brihadaranyaka. I have quoted only from these 10 principal Upanishads.

Upanishads describe direct intuitive experience about a new dimension of consciousness. This consciousness was described as distinct from mind. This was called Atman or Brahman. Atman was believed to be an extremely blissful state of consciousness, experience of which was regarded as the ultimate goal of human life. This experience uplifted human consciousness and freed one from all misery usually associated with normal human life. This experience is the foundation of Upanishadic Hinduism and all its subsequent development.

Upanishads also propound a clear world-view and a code of conduct. They propound doctrines of cyclic nature of creation and destruction, divinity of all beings, importance of self-realization, identity of self and the ultimate reality of the universe and condemnation of material desires.

They repudiated Vedic obsession with material goals – wealth, sons, victory in battles, cure of diseases, long life etc – and emphasized the importance of detachment, asceticism, renunciation and meditation in order to experience the real nature of self as Atman.

Upanishads were not systematic treatises. They were cryptic poetic expressions of the intuitive experiences interspersed with insights about how the universe operates. So, attempts were made to cull out these pearls of insights, systematize them in a logically coherent way and develop a complete philosophy out of it with the help of reasoning.

This gave rise to different schools of philosophy such as Nyaya-Vaishesika, Samkhya-Yoga and Vedantic (Badrayana, Shankaracharya, Ramanujacharya etc) from 400 BCE onwards. So, they may be treated as extension of Upanishads.

## Classical Hinduism

Classical Hinduism tried to synthesize the Vedic aspirations for material gains and Upanishadic aspiration for liberation. It also developed code of conduct for individuals, castes and kings. Attempts were also made to communicate the abstract concepts of Upanishads to the masses with the help of anthropomorphic mythologies.

Ideas of Classical Hinduism were expressed in the following set of books:

20 Smritis – Manu Smriti (5<sup>th</sup> century BCE) and Yagyavalkya Smriti (3<sup>rd</sup>-5<sup>th</sup> century CE) are the most famous out of those 20 Smritis.

2 Epics – Ramayana (500 BCE – 100 BCE) written by Valmiki and Mahabharata (completed around 4<sup>th</sup> century CE) written by Vyasa. Gita is a part of Mahabharata – it is from chapter 25 to 42 of Bhishma Parva section of Mahabharata.

18 main Puranas -- Vishnu Purana (4<sup>th</sup> century CE) and Bhagavata Purana (somewhere between 4<sup>th</sup> and 10<sup>th</sup> century CE) are the most famous out of these 18 Puranas.

Smritis are books of rules of Hindu society designed in order to implement the concepts of caste and ideals laid down in Upanishads. They form the basis of Hindu customary law. They are called Smritis (memories) because they embody wisdom passed on from Upanishadic period from one generation to the next on the basis of memory. They were written roughly between 500 BCE and 500 CE. They were influenced most by the early Vedic animosity between Aryans and local inhabitants (called 'Shudras' later). Hence, they are very stern against Shudras. They mostly represent Hinduism of the early Vedic period but they also try to include the Upanishadic ideals.

The two epics – Ramayana and Mahabharata – are the stories of incarnation of God in human form in order to defeat the evil and establish morality and spirituality in the world. They provide a role model for Hindus.

Puranas are stories about anthropomorphic gods. They tell stories of incarnations of Bhagwan to protect goodness and to eliminate evil, battles between gods and demons, method of worshipping gods and making temples, pilgrimage centers associated with various gods, descriptions of heaven and hell, and so forth. They were written roughly between 300 CE and 1200 CE. However, much of their content is mythological and not factual. They tried to propagate Upanishadic ideals to the masses through stories, as the concept of formless and transcendental Brahman could not be comprehended by the masses. They are closer to Upanishadic ideals than Smritis.

Almost all the features of Classical Hinduism have persisted during medieval period, modern period and even to this day.

## Sects of Hinduism

There are several sects in Hinduism such as Vaishnavites, Shaivites, Arya Samajis, Kabir Panthis, etc. But they differ primarily because of different methods used to attain the same supreme goal -- liberation or self-realization. This is why there is no rivalry or conflict among these followers.

Some take the path of meditation to attain the same goal. They do not worship any God/Bhagwan, but do meditation on Self. They follow different forms of Yoga.

Some take the path of devotion to God in various forms such as Shiva, Rama, Krishna, Kali, Durga etc.

Most of the Hindus however worship their God/Goddess to gain material favors too. This is the hangover of Vedic Hinduism.

### **Number of Hindus**

Today Hinduism is the 3<sup>rd</sup> largest religion of the world with about 1 billion followers mostly residing in India, Nepal and Mauritius. Substantial Hindu population also live in Bangladesh, Indonesia, Pakistan, Sri Lanka, USA, Malaysia and UK.

## Chapter 5 – Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism

##### **Doctrine of the divine origin of Hinduism is unacceptable**

Devout Hindus, like the followers of all Abrahamic religions, believe that all their basic religious books – Vedas, Upanishads, Smritis, Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas – are direct revelations of God and hence they cannot be false.

They also believe that only in India, God/Bhagwan took several births in human form to guide mankind by establishing a model way of living. Rama and Krishna were the most popular incarnations of Bhagwan. They believe that Hinduism is a complete way of life which the entire humanity must adopt to ensure peace and happiness in the world.

But if this belief was true, there would have been no falsehood or contradictions in Hindu scriptures. As I will demonstrate in the sub- chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism], all the Hindu scriptures are full of falsehood and contradictions.

So, how else can we explain the origin and development of Hinduism?

We can do it scientifically if we first understand who started Hinduism, why was it done and what were the factors leading to its change and development.

##### **Who started Hinduism?**

The origin and development of Hinduism can be traced back to Indo-Aryans who developed a religion we now call ‘Hinduism’. Historically, India has been the place of residence of 2 different races.

##### 1<sup>st</sup> race was Australoids (Dravidians):

It has been scientifically established that modern humans (*Homo sapiens*) first evolved in eastern Africa about 200,000 years ago. Due to adverse changes in living conditions, they started migrating to other parts of the world about 60,000 years ago. The first wave of such migrations moved through coastal routes from east Africa to Yemen to coastline around Persian Gulf to the coastlines of India, Sri Lanka, Andaman islands, Thailand, Indonesia and finally to Australia. They are called Australoids. They had dark skin with wavy hair and large brow ridges. In India, they evolved into a distinct ethnic group we now call Dravidians.

It is these Dravidians – the first occupants of Indian land -- who must have developed Indus Valley

Civilization or Harappa Civilization between 4000 BCE and 2000 BCE on the banks of Indus and Sarasvati rivers. However, due to drying up of Sarasvati River and other catastrophic climatic changes, Indus Valley Civilization declined and disappeared. After decline, the upper echelons of this Civilization moved to other places, mostly to south India. The left-overs remained in north-west India, who were defeated later by invading/migrant Aryans and were called Shudras.

### 2<sup>nd</sup> race was Caucasoid (Aryans):

Caucasoid were nomadic tribes living in and around the area between Caspian Sea and Black Sea roughly corresponding to the area of modern south-western Russia, Georgia, Armenia, Azerbaijan and northern Turkey.

They had come from Africa in the second wave of migration of humans from out of Africa taking the land route from eastern Africa to Caucasus region.

Caucasoids are divided in three main branches on linguistic grounds – Aryans, Abrahamic and Hamitic. Aryans spoke Indo-European languages (Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, Germanic etc) and they populated Europe and India; Abrahamic ancestors spoke Afro-Asiatic languages (Hebrew, Aramaic, Syriac etc) and populated north-west Asia; and Hamitic ancestors spoke Hamito-Semitic languages (Arabic, Berber, Somali etc) and populated north Africa and Arabian Peninsula.

It is the Indo-Aryan branch of Caucasoid which came to India about 4000 years ago from the present at a time when the Indus Valley Civilization had already declined.

### **The Caucasian origin of Indo-Aryans can be proved on the basis of the following facts:**

#### Linguistic similarities

Scientific study of the spatial dispersion of Indo-European languages has proved that a proto Indo-European language was spoken in the Caucasian region about 8000-9500 years ago. Gradually, branches of this tribe started moving in different directions in Asia and Europe. One branch moved to the south east covering present day Iran and then to Indian sub-continent.

There is a striking similarity between pronunciation and meaning of certain widely used words within Indo-European languages such as Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, Germanic, Persian, Russian etc.

To illustrate this point, let us take the English word ‘mother’. It was called ‘Matr’ in Sanskrit; ‘Mitera’ in Greek; ‘Matrem’ in Latin; ‘Mutter’ in Germanic; ‘Madar’ in Persian; ‘Mat’ in Russian and so on.

Take another word ‘horse’. It was called ‘Asva’ in Sanskrit; ‘Pegasos’ in Greek; ‘Pegasus’ in Latin; ‘Ross’ in Germanic; ‘Asb’ in Persian; ‘Ioshad’ in Russian and so on.

Take the word ‘cow’. It is called ‘Go’ in Sanskrit, bous in Greek, bos in Latin, ‘Ko’ in Danish, ‘kuh’ in Germanic, and ‘gau’ in Persian and Afghani.

Take the word ‘god’. It was called ‘dev’ in Sanskrit; ‘theos’ in Greek; ‘deus’ in Latin; ‘gudan’ in Germanic; ‘Khuda’ in Persian and so on.

These striking similarities in words in different Indo-European languages clearly prove common place of origin. This proves beyond any doubt that Aryans, Europeans and Middle Easterners diverged from a common place.

The fact that Dravidian languages are very different from Aryan’s Indo-European languages also proves that Aryans and Dravidians could not be living together right from beginning.

### Similarity of views about Earth and global flood

There is a striking similarity between early Vedic and Biblical views about Earth. Both -- early Vedas and Bible – say that Earth has been made stationary or fixed with the help of pegs.

Rig Veda (7.99.3) says:

*Both these worlds, Vishnu, you have stayed asunder, and firmly fixed the Earth with pegs around it.*

Psalm 104:5 says:

*You established the Earth on its foundations  
so that it will never ever fall.*

This striking similarity proves that Aryans diverged from a common point where Biblical ancestors also lived.

Belief in a massive global flood by Aryans (as mentioned in Smritis and Puranas) as well as Bible writers also points to their common origin.

### Events described by early Vedas

All the early Vedas are essentially prayers, offers of food and sacrifices to their imagined gods for gaining material favors such as wealth, sons, cattle, booty, victory in battles, death/defeat of enemies, cure of diseases and so forth. The enemies were called dasas, dasyus etc. Vedas use words such as ‘foe’, ‘dasa’(slave), ‘dasyus’(thieves/thugs), ‘slay’, ‘defeat’, ‘booty’, ‘wealth’ thousands of times. This shows that Aryans were constantly fighting with enemies – local inhabitants of north-west India. This fight can be explained only if we assume that Aryans came from outside and locals opposed their intrusion.

### Skin color

The people whom Aryans later called ‘Shudras’ (literally meaning ‘petty-minded’) are dark colored, while other 3 castes are fair-colored. If it is presumed that Aryans and Shudras were living together in India right from the time of arrival of Australoids in India, differences in their skin color cannot be explained. Once we assume that Aryans came from Caucasus area much later, while ‘Shudras’

were those who came to India much earlier as Australoids, everything gets explained. Fair color of Aryans must have developed during their long sojourn in Caucasian area, where climate was very cold.

### Lactose tolerance

Proto-Indo-Europeans / Aryans had found cows extremely useful in steppe of Caucasian area.

During their foraging and hunting stage, they must have used cows initially for their meat. Once they learnt to domesticate and herd cattle, they started consuming cow's milk. But in the beginning, humans had no power to digest milk. Gradually, they developed lactose tolerance through mutation of their genes. This mutation of gene was extremely useful for their survival. However, all humans have still not developed this ability.

When Aryans came to India, they naturally brought cows with them. According to a survey, it has been found that 34% North Indians (predominantly Aryans) could digest milk, while only 18% South Indians (predominantly Dravidians) could digest milk. In Punjab, a north Indian state, per capita expenditure on dairy products is much more than in Tamil Nadu, a south Indian state.

This discrepancy can be explained by the fact that Dravidians did not know cows before their interaction with Aryans. So, naturally, they could not develop lactose tolerance as much as Aryans could do.

This usefulness of cows must have been the basic reason why cows were treated with reverence and worshipped by Aryans during the early Vedic age. They were killed only for offering food to gods, as they were considered sacred enough to deserve to be offered to gods.

### Genetic analysis

DNA analysis of genes of various Indian groups by a team led by David Reich, a geneticist at Harvard Medical School at Boston in 2009, has proved that there are two distinct ancestry of Indians. They called it 'Ancestral North Indians (ANIs)' and 'Ancestral South Indians (ASIs)'. It was found that ANIs share DNA patterns with the Caucasians / Turkics / Europeans, while ASIs do not share such patterns. All modern Indians are mixtures of these two ancient groups, each contributing around 40-60% of the DNA.

However, it was also found that the proportion of ANI DNAs were higher in Indians of 'upper castes' speaking Indo-European languages (Hindi, Marathi, Bengali, Punjabi, Gujarati etc), while that of ASI genetic marker was relatively higher among Dravidians. It was also found that genes of ASIs were mostly common with inhabitants of Andaman and Nicobar Islands.

This genetic analysis has proved beyond any doubt that Aryans came from outside India.

While European indologists and historians had proposed the theory of Aryan invasion /migration on linguistic and Vedic textual grounds hundreds of years ago, the genetic evidence as discussed above has

conclusively proved it now.

### Caste system

The origin of caste system cannot be explained if it is assumed that all inhabitants of India have been living together right from beginning.

The clash of fair-skinned Aryans with local dark-skinned Dravidians during early Vedic period had laid the foundation of the caste system. Due to the hostility between these two different races, two broad divisions arose in the beginning – Aryans, who called themselves Dwijas (twice-born – first born biologically and second time initiated as aspirant for liberation which is like second birth) and locals who were inimical to Aryans and did not believe in their religion – they were called Shudras. ‘Shudras’ in Sanskrit literally means petty-minded.

There were vast differences in these two races. Their skin color, language, religious beliefs, rituals, means of livelihood, warfare skills, eating and dressing habits – all were completely different from each other. Even after initial hostility was over, they must be disliking each other for quite some time. So, it is expected that their friendly assimilation into each other in the first generation of interaction was impossible. This historical hostility is the root cause of all subsequent bad treatment of Shudras at the hands of Aryans.

### Conclusion

Thus, the belief of many orthodox Hindus that ancestors of all modern Indians were only one race and had been living in India itself peacefully for millions of years is completely false.

It is now clear that Hinduism was founded by Aryans who came from out of India about 4000 years ago.

Of course, over the last 3000 years, Aryans and Dravidians have been mingling with each other and now they form one homogenous culture defined by Hinduism. There is complete harmony and unity between the two races as both draw their core beliefs and values from the same Hinduism.

Some Hindu scholars do not accept this theory. They ignore all the evidences mentioned above and maintain that all ancestors of Indians have been living in India right from beginning. Perhaps they do so to be politically correct or to ensure unity among Indians. But political expediency cannot change facts.

### What is Hinduism?

As noted earlier, there are 3 distinct phases of Hinduism and each of them needs a separate explanation. The three phases are:

#### Vedic Hinduism as expressed in early Vedas [1500 – 800 BCE]

#### Upanishadic Hinduism as expressed in Upanishads [800 - 600 BCE]

## Classical Hinduism as expressed in Smritis, Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas [600 BCE – 1200 CE]

I will discuss these 3 phases of Hinduism under Section A, B and C respectively.

### **SECTION A**

#### **Vedic Hinduism as expressed in early Vedas [1500 – 800 BCE]**

##### **Vedas – the first books of Hinduism**

We know about this first phase of Hinduism through Vedas, the first and the most ancient religious book of Hinduism as well as of the world.

Aryans did not invade India at one go with full preparations for battles in a planned way. They did not destroy Indus Valley Civilization. In fact, they came to India when Indus Valley Civilization was already on decline or probably already vanished. They trickled in groups. Their migrations took place over several centuries.

When Aryans came to India, they depended mainly on pastoral economy with a little bit of agriculture. So, sheep, goat and cattle rearing was their main occupation.

They sometimes fought against the local people – when disputes arose over use of resources such as land, cattle, forest and river. Finally, they won. It is quite possible that some locals moved from north-west India to east and south India or in deep forests, while others stayed put where they were and gradually got absorbed in the Aryan society under the caste of Shudras. However, some elements of local Dravidian culture must also have been absorbed by Aryans during this long interaction.

Aryans must have also fought among themselves. The reference of a battle between King Sudas with other ten chieftains proves this.

We get a first glimpse of their religion in Rig and other Vedas. These books are mainly collection of their prayers to various nature gods like fire, sky, dawn, Sun, intoxicating plants etc. They also offered food to these gods. The sole purpose of their prayer and offering of food to gods was to gain material favor.

See some samples of their prayers:

Rig Veda

*1.1.3. Praying to gods though Agni, the Angel Priest, may we the worshippers obtain valiant offspring, prosperity and glory!*

*1.92.8 O Dawn ... May I gain wealth, renowned and ample, brave sons, troops of slaves, far-famed horses!*

1.33.7 Whether they weep or laugh, you have overthrown them, O Indra (rain god), on the sky's extreme limit. You have burnt from heaven Dasyu (the locals scornfully addressed as 'thugs') and welcomed the prayer of him who pours the juice and lauds you.

7.19.5 These were your mighty powers that, Thunder-wielder, you swiftly crushed nine-and-ninety castles:

*you captured the hundredth in your onslaught; you slew Namuci, you slew Vrtra.*

8.16.12 As such, O Indra, honor us with gifts of booty, further us, and lead us to felicity!

Sam Veda

1.2.3.4. Agni, Give your invoker, wealth in cattle, lasting, rich in marvels!

*To us be born a son and spreading offspring.*

Yajur Veda [Shukla]

2.15 May Agni-Soma drive off him who hates us; drive off the man whom we detest! By impulse of sacrificial food, away I drive him. After the victory of Indra-Agni, may I obtain the victory!

10.20 Prajapati, you only comprehend all these created forms, and none beside you. Fulfil our heart's desire when we invoke you! May we be lords of rich possessions!"

Atharva Veda

I. 23. Leprosy to be cured by a dark plant.

1. Born by night are you, O plant -- dark, black and sable! You are rich in color, do stain this leprosy, and the grey spots!

2. The leprosy and the grey spots drive away from here -- may your native color settle upon it -- the white spots cause to fly away!

VI. 24. Heart-disease and other maladies to be cured by flowing water.

1. From the Himalaya Mountains, water flows forth, in Sindhu River. May this water cure my heart-ache!

2. The pain that hurts me in the eyes, and that which hurts in the heels and the fore-feet, this water, the most skilled of physicians, shall cure!

3. O rivers, whose queen is Sindhu, grant us the remedy for pain: through this remedy may we derive benefit from you!

Aryans not only wanted wealth and cure of diseases, but also destruction of their rivals and appropriation of their rival's cattle as booty. There are hundreds of passages where Aryans are praying to gods for fulfilment of these desires. See some samples:

*Goddess Cow, act against the Brahmin's tyrant, criminal, niggard, blasphemer of the gods, With hundred-knotted thunderbolt, sharpened and edged with razor-blades,*

*Strike off his shoulder and the head.*

*Snatch the hair from off his head, and from his body strip the skin;*

*Tear out his sinews, cause his flesh to fall in pieces from his frame.*

*Crush his bones together, strike and beat the marrow out of him.*

*Dislocate all his limbs and joints.*

*From Earth, let the Carnivorous Agni drive him, let Vayu burn him from mid-air's broad region.*

*From heaven, let Sūrya drive him and consume him.*

Yajur Veda (White) 13.12

*Rise up, O Agni, spread out before us, burn down our foes, as you possess sharpened arrows.*

*Blazing Agni! Consume them who have worked us mischief like dried-up stubble.*

Yajur Veda (White) 15.15

*Biting animals are his weapon, homicide his missile weapon; to them we pay homage: may they protect us, may they have mercy upon us.*

*In their jaws we place the man whom we hate and who hates us.*

Rig Veda 1.176.4

*Slay everyone who pours no gift; who, hard to reach, does not delight you.*

*Bestow on us what wealth he has; this is what the worshipper wants.*

Rig Veda 10.84.2

*Flashing like fire, O conquering Manyu; O Victor, our army's leader!*

*Slay our foes, distribute their possessions; show forth your vigor, and scatter those who hate us.*

Rig Veda 10.84.7

*For spoil let Varuṇa and Manyu give us the wealth of both sides gathered and collected;*

and let our enemies with stricken spirits, overwhelmed with terror, slink away defeated.

## So why did Aryans pray and worship gods?

Aryans, like any other primitive men, could not understand the forces of nature. They thought that everything has a spirit which controlled its behavior. The benevolent spirit was called 'god' (Deva) by them.

When Aryans saw storm, thunder and lightning, they were terrified and thought that the god in charge of sky is angry at them. So, they started praying to sky god to forgive them for their 'misdeeds' and stop storm, thunder and lightning. They also prayed to sky god for plentiful rain. They called sky god 'Indra'.

When night came, Aryans were scared of wild animals, cold and their inability to see. So, when Sun dawned, they were overjoyed. So, they started praying to Sun god to express their gratefulness. They called this god 'Surya'.

During night, fire protected Aryans from wild animals and cold. It also gave light. So they started praying to fire god to express their thankfulness. They called fire god 'Agni'.

When rivers flooded, Aryans were scared again and so they started worshipping water god who was called 'Varuna'.

In their anxiety to please gods, Aryans wanted to offer them their best food, which included meat of cows and the intoxicating herb Soma. They had observed that whenever they put anything in fire, it vanished. So they concluded that Agni god must be carrying their food to other gods! So, they made rituals to lit fire and pour food in it to send it to gods. So, Agni became their messenger god.

Aryans also sincerely believed that all these gods were also capable of bestowing them other benefits such as wealth in the form of cattle and land, sons who could assist them in fighting and farming, victory against enemies, cure of diseases and so forth.

The desperate calls of Aryans to various gods – Agni, Indra, Varuna, Sun etc – to slay or defeat their enemies – called 'dasas' or 'dasyus' -- clearly proves that Aryans were fighting tough battles with locals. So, most of their prayers contained wish for victory against these local enemies.

A prayer is essentially a passionate request to some supposedly caring super father or super mother one believes to be real to protect one from adversities of life in the same way children plead for toys or money from their parents.

Such polytheistic worship of gods to gain their favor was prevalent almost all over the world in primitive times. This is what animism and polytheism are all about. Even all the organized religions (except Buddhism and Jainism), recommend prayer and worship as a principal tool to gain divine favors. This belief is based on the fear of the uncertainties and adversities of life.

## **But why did Aryans worship so many gods rather than only one God?**

Initially, across the world, people believed in several gods (Animism, Paganism) because that was easier to understand to the primitive, undeveloped mind. Primitive people must have observed that human body has different organs performing different functions – eyes see, ears hear, legs move and so on. Similarly, they must have observed that in nature too, different objects perform different functions – Sun brings day, cloud brings rain, rivers bring water and so on.

Based on this analogy, it was logical for them to believe that different gods were in charge of different functions – Agni (Fire god) carried food to gods; Indra (Sky god) made rains and lightening; Surya (Sun god) produced day; Varuna (Water god) was in charge of sea and rivers and so on.

### **Vedic world-view**

Early Vedic Aryans were too preoccupied with daily struggles of life, as is clear from the overwhelming number of hymns composed to appease gods to gain material favors. However, Purusha Sukta of Rig Veda (10.90) does mention the process of creation of the universe. It says that there is only one ultimate reality – called Purusha – which creates the universe. Everything including all gods, animals, humans and castes emanates from Him.

They believed in living a natural life. Survival, prosperity, security, cure of diseases, lots of children and victory against enemies – these are the things they wanted. They did not know anything about liberation which later became the central theme of Upanishadic and Classical Hinduism.

### **Are Vedas expressions of ‘eternal truths’ revealed to the sages composing these hymns of prayer?**

The claim of Hindus that Vedas are revelation of words of God or expression of eternal truths revealed to meditating sages is meaningless. A prayer cannot be any of these. A prayer is simply a wish expressed by an insecure person. A prayer is not even a statement of fact; it is merely an emotive expression of wish. So, the question of its being even true or false does not arise. The declaration of these ordinary prayers as ‘eternal truths’ is therefore meaningless.

Such prayers are found in almost all religions of the world. Each religion has its own set of gods and its own wish-list. So, there is nothing special about Aryans’ prayers.

Aryans may be believing that their victory in the battles against the locals was due to blessings of gods they worshipped, but the fact is that they must have won because of their use of horses, chariots and weapons made of metals. It is this better battle technology and strategy, which gave them successes against the locals, though they ascribed their success to gods.

### **Influence of Dravidian religion on Hinduism:**

The initial hostility between Aryans and Dravidians gradually gave way to intermingling of their

religions. Dravidians were basically animists -- nature-worshippers. They worshipped several animals such as snakes, monkeys, elephants etc. The reason for such worship has been the same all over the world – to please the spirits believed to be residing in objects of nature to gain their favors.

Hinduism gradually internalized this animal worship of Dravidians. So, after a few centuries, these animals formed part of Hindu mythology, spiritualized and started being revered.

For example, Hanuman (a form of monkey) was made a devoted and capable servant of Bhagwan Rama, God who is believed to have taken birth in the human form. In fact, Tamil word for male monkey is *anmandi*, which became *Hanuman* in Sanskrit. Snake became the bed of Bhagwan Vishnu and became a part of the mythology of ocean churning (Samudra-manthan) described in Puranas where it was used as a tool to churn the ocean to get nectar. The bull became the vehicle of Bhagwan Shiva. The head of Elephant became the head of god Ganesha and so on.

With popularization of these myths, worship/special reverence of snakes, monkeys, elephants etc became part and parcel of Hinduism.

The concept of Bhagwan Shiva itself evolved from a prototype god of Dravidians. The famous seal of Indus Valley Civilization which shows a deity with three faces and a pair of horns over his head sitting in ‘yogic posture’ with animals on each side is most probably the precursor of Bhagwan Shiva, who was called by Hindus Pashupati (lord of animals).

Excavations of Indus Valley Civilization sites revealed stone images of male and female sex organs indicating that Dravidians worshipped spirits for fertility. This concept was adopted by Hinduism in the form of worship of Shiv lingam with a spiritualized meaning of union of individual soul and universal soul or energy and universal soul.

Let us now move to the next phase of Hinduism.

## SECTION B

### **Upanishadic Hinduism as expressed in Upanishads [800 - 600 BCE]**

Upanishads are the last part of Vedas and were most probably written around 800-600 BCE. There are hundreds of Upanishads, but ten of them are the most authentic and known as principal Upanishads. They are also the oldest. They are – Isha, Ken, Katha, Prasna, Mundaka, Mandukya, Taittiriya, Aitareya, Chandogya and Brihadaranyaka. I have quoted only from these 10 principal Upanishads.

Though the oldest Upanishads such as Brihadaranyaka and Chandogya at some places, do show some hangover of Vedic ideas (caste distinctions, rituals to gain material results etc), most of them express completely new ideas.

In these Upanishads, there is no prayer, no offering of food to gods, no cursing of enemies, no

begging for wealth, sons or victory in battles. All gods just disappear. Upanishads openly condemn material pursuits, worships, sacrifices and rituals of early Vedas.

In Upanishads, there is a sudden big U-turn in the direction of life's pursuit of happiness. Composers of early Vedas desired nothing but material happiness. Composers of Upanishads desired nothing but self-realization.

Unlike early Vedas, Upanishads deal with philosophical issues deeply. They propound doctrines of cyclic nature of creation and destruction of the universe, divinity of all beings, importance of self-realization, oneness of self and the ultimate reality and condemnation of material desires.

In Upanishads, there is a joyful expression about discovery of a new dimension of consciousness – called the most blissful state, innermost self, Atman or Brahman.

See some examples of what Upanishads say:

Mundaka Upanishad

I-i-4. *To him he said, “There are two kinds of knowledge to be acquired – the higher and the lower”; this is what, as tradition runs, the knowers of the import of the Vedas say.*

I-i-5. *Of these, the lower comprises the Rig-Veda, Yajur-Veda, Sama-Veda, Atharva-Veda, science of pronunciation, code of rituals, grammar, etymology, metre and astrology. Then there is the higher (knowledge) by which is attained the Imperishable.*

I-ii-10. *The deluded fools, believing the sacrificial rites to be the highest, do not understand the other thing (that leads to) liberation. They, having enjoyed (the fruits of actions) in the abode of pleasure on the heights of heaven, enter this world or an inferior one.*

III-ii-9. *Anyone who knows Brahman becomes Brahman.*

Katha Upanishad

1-II-23. *The Self cannot be attained by the study of the Vedas, nor by intelligence nor by much hearing. Only by him who seeks to know the Self can it be attained. To him the Self reveals its own nature.*

Brihadaranyaka Upanishad:

III-v-1. *That which transcends hunger and thirst, grief, delusion, decay and death -- knowing this very Self, the Brahmins renounce the desire for sons, for wealth and for the worlds, and lead a mendicant's life.*

Ken Upanishad -

II-4. *When Brahman is known as the inner Self in every state of consciousness, one attains immortality. Through one's own Self is attained strength and through knowledge is attained*

*immortality.*

Katha Upanishad

*2-III-14. When all longings that are in the heart vanish, then a mortal becomes immortal and attains Brahman here.*

**So, what happened suddenly? Why did Upanishads take such a big U-turn?**

It appears that perhaps by accident, Aryans of this period discovered the core nature of their own consciousness.

The only clue Upanishads give about the way this heightened state of consciousness could have been attained is this:

Katha Upanishad

*1-II-20. The Self that is subtler than the subtle and greater than the great is seated in the heart of every creature. One who is free from desire sees the glory of the Self through the tranquility of the mind and senses and becomes absolved from grief.*

*2-III-10. When the five senses of knowledge are at rest together with the mind, and the intellect is not active, that state they call the highest.*

But how did Upanishadic sages discover that stillness of mind and senses results in the realization of the true nature of consciousness? It must be by chance!

At the time Aryans settled down in India, deep in the forest, everything must be very quiet. Someday, an Aryan shepherd or farmer, sitting in a deep forest, might have suddenly got overawed by the great silence and magnificence of nature. The coolness of the forest and the freshness of the air might have made him feel calm. His thoughts might have stopped for a while in awe. During this brief period of silence and solitude, he would have felt tremendously joyous.

So, he would have tried to be in that silent state of mind again next day. Then again and again. And then one day, he might have suddenly got a glimpse of a different level of self-consciousness through prolonged period of silence of mind. He would have then felt limitless bliss. Then, he would have naturally wanted to experience that state again. So, he would have practiced silence of mind again and again. The process would have been repeated for months and years.

And then suddenly, one day, some implosion in the brain might have occurred when he could experience the ultimate innermost self in its purest – thoughtless -- state. He must have felt as if he has touched the very center of his ‘I-ness, the very core of his existence. This state must have been indescribably ecstatic and blissful.

Such a self-realized person would have naturally told his experience to his family members and

friends. Then, they too must have practiced it and experienced the same grandeur of inner consciousness. Gradually, knowledge about this discovery would have spread like wild fire.

This was the first discovery in human history about the possibility of attaining an exceedingly blissful higher state of consciousness which could be attained by any human right in this very life.

This experience is the foundation of all Indian religions. The world-views and ethics developed by Indian religions are all based on this foundation.

Countless people in India abandoned everything to experience this exotic state of consciousness. They came back with the same experience, confirming that by stilling the mind, a new window in consciousness opens.

However, today there is a need to develop an inner science which systematically studies this exotic inner phenomenon, understands its bio-neural processes and finds out what exactly happens in the brain which these people have called core consciousness or self-realization or state of liberation.

### **What is the ethics of Upanishads?**

While during Vedic period, there was hatred and violence against non-Aryans; during Upanishadic period, there is a realization that all beings are expressions of the same self – hence nobody should be hated or injured. So, Upanishadic ethics is based on universal non-violence. See some examples of this new ethics of the Upanishadic Hinduism:

Isha Upanishad

*6. He who perceives all beings in the Self alone, and the Self in all beings, does not entertain any hatred on account of that perception.*

Chandogya Upanishad

*8.15.1 .... he who withdraws all his senses into the Atman, who practices non-injury to all beings except in places specially ordained, he who behaves thus throughout his life reaches the world of Brahman and does not return again.....*

It is this insight of Upanishads which logically culminated in an ethics of non-violence and compassion for all living beings.

### **What do Upanishads say about the origin of the universe?**

Upanishads also give their insights about the process of the origin of the universe and its final destiny. They say that essentially the universe originates from Brahman and again merges into Brahman cyclically:

Tattiriya Upanishad

*II-vi-1. He (the Self) wished, “Let me be many, let me be born”. He undertook a deliberation.*

Having deliberated, he created all this that exists. That (Brahman), having created (that), entered into that very thing. And having entered there, It became the formed and the formless, the defined and the undefined, the sustaining and the non-sustaining, the sentient and the insentient.

### Mundaka Upanishad

I-i-7. As a spider spreads out and withdraws (its thread), as on the Earth grow the herbs (and trees), and as from a living man issues out hair (on the head and body), so out of the Imperishable does the Universe emerge here (in this phenomenal creation).

II-i-1. As from a fire fully ablaze, fly off sparks in their thousands that are akin to the fire, similarly, from the Imperishable originate different kinds of creatures and into it again they merge.

However, Upanishads do not give the same account of the sequence of created objects. Different Upanishads give different versions.

As, for example:

### Brihadaranyaka Upanishad

1.2.1: *There was nothing whatsoever here in the beginning. It was covered only by Death (Hiranyagarbha), or Hunger, for hunger is death. He created the mind, thinking, 'Let me have a mind'. He moved about worshipping (himself). As he was worshipping, water was produced. ...*

1.2.2: *water solidified and became this Earth. When that was produced, he was tired. While he was (thus) tired and distressed, his essence, or luster, came forth. This was Fire. ”*

[Summary: Brahman > Mind> Water > Earth > Fire]

### Brihadaranyaka Upanishad

1.4.1. *In the beginning there was Self alone, in the shape of a person (Purusha). He looking round saw nothing but his Self.*

1.4.3. *But he felt no delight. Therefore a man who is lonely feels no delight. He wished for a second. He was so large as man and wife together. He then made this his Self to fall in two, and thence arose husband and wife.*

1.4.4. *She thought, 'How can he embrace me, after having produced me from himself? I shall hide myself.....She then became a cow, the other became a bull and embraced her, and hence cows were born. The one became a mare, the other a stallion; the one a male ass, the other a female ass. He embraced her, and hence one-hoofed animals were born. The one became a she-goat, the other a he-goat; the one became an ewe, the other a Rama. He embraced her, and hence goats and sheep were born. And thus he created everything that exists in pairs, down to the ants.*

[Summary: Brahman > split into 2 halves (husband and wife) > other pairs of animals]

## Tattiriya Upanishad

2.1.1. *From that Brahman, which is the Self, was produced space. From space emerged air. From air was born fire. From fire was created water. From water sprang up Earth. From Earth were born the herbs. From the herbs was produced food. From food was born man. That man, such as he is, is a product of the essence of food.*

[Summary: Brahman > space > Air > Fire > Water > Earth > Plants > Food > Humans]

## Chandogya Upanishad

VI-ii-3. 'That Being willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth." It created fire. That fire willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth". It created water. Therefore whenever a man grieves or perspires, then it is from fire that water issues.

VI-ii-4. 'That water willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth." It created food. Therefore wherever it rains, abundant food grows there; it is from water that food for eating is produced.

[Summary: Brahman > Fire > Water > Food]

It is thus clear that Upanishads do not give one account of the process of creation.

## So, what finally is Upanishadic world-view?

The realization of core consciousness by a few fortunate Aryan sages must have been so blissful that it would have triggered in them a desire to understand the entire process of realization. Such an understanding could help others experience similar states of consciousness. This desire resulted in the development of Upanishadic world-view.

According to Upanishads, Brahman -- the fundamental content of the universe, the ultimate reality -- somehow manifests Himself as matter and living beings in some sequence (human mind cannot understand this process, because mind itself is a product of this manifestation). Again, somehow, Brahman forgets about His real nature; identifies Himself with creatures and starts running after desires in the hope of getting happiness. But He fails, because fulfilment of desires cannot give Him real satisfaction.

Upanishadic sages must have discovered that when mind is detached, it becomes still; when it is still, the deepening of consciousness happens; when that happens, the bliss is experienced. So, they concluded that the real happiness lies in getting detached.

Once, fully self-realized, all desires vanish and one remains contented with innermost bliss. That is the real happiness. Till this is realized, souls go on taking rebirth as plants, animals and humans according to their good or bad deeds (karma).

This cycle of birth and death is called bondage and freedom from this cycle is called liberation.

There is no purpose in undertaking this cycle of creation and destruction. It is just the nature of

Brahman to do this. Doing something for fun is the closest human activity to this act of Brahman.

Only at human level, one can escape from the cycle of birth and death. This becomes possible by rediscovering the real nature of one's core self as different from mind-body. Realization of one's own real, core self is very, very blissful and it is like coming home after a long and stressful journey. Since this state of self-realization is beyond space-time, it is untouched by death. Death can happen only to mind-body, which operates within space-time.

This state of Self-realization was called Moksha, Enlightenment or liberation from the cycle of birth and death.

Since this state liberated a person from all sufferings and death and bestowed the deepest possible wisdom, it was naturally recommended to be the most desirable goal of human life. All Upanishads and all post-Upanishadic Hindu religious texts unanimously glorify it as the noblest pursuit of human life. Humans must endeavor to achieve only Self-realization in this life, nothing else. Then alone, they can be blissful under any circumstances.

Just as a person who has fallen into a well, wants desperately to come out of the shallow muddy water of the well immediately, in the same way, the soul should desperately want to detach itself from the sorrow-giving mind-body system and go back to its original state of blissful consciousness.

The state of liberation can be attained in this very life by practicing the following –

Reflect on the impermanent, miserable nature of human life.

Minimize desires or attachment to worldly objects. It means one should make efforts for bare survival of the body. It means no running after sex, sensual pleasures, comfort, wealth, status or power.

Meditate on the real core self. Experience the core self and be established in it. Various techniques have been developed for doing this. Yoga is a complete practical system to achieve this goal.

Treat others as your own self, because everybody is the manifestation of the same reality. This implies that one should be non-violent, truthful and kind to others. Vegetarianism too follows from this doctrine.

These beliefs constitute the core of Hinduism till today.

Superficial writers keep on harping that Hindus do not have any common belief system. This stance is completely false. The world-view described above is the common thread which binds all Hindus.

Upanishads are to Hindus, as Quran is to Muslims and Gospels are to Christians. Upanishads are the ultimate reference point of Hinduism. Nobody can challenge the basic experience mentioned in Upanishads and still remain a Hindu.

Indian philosophy, Gita, Ramayana, Mahabharata, Smritis, Puranas, books written during Bhakti Movement and all the modern Hindu religious literature are merely interpretations, elaborations, commentaries or ideas for implementation of the Upanishadic experience.

### **Emergence of other interpretations of Upanishadic experience**

Upanishads are not only a statement of the experience of self-realization, but also an interpretation of that experience or a world-view explaining that experience. Nobody has challenged the experience part, but some sages/thinkers developed an alternative interpretation of the Upanishadic experience.

The exotic experiences mentioned in Upanishads about the nature of self was found to be true by countless other Aryan sages. So, they too, like Upanishadic sages, tried to interpret their experiences and develop a coherent world-view. This resulted in several world-views (philosophies), which are different from Upanishadic philosophies.

Let me give a brief description of these alternative philosophies:

**Samkhya** -- Samkhya philosophy is attributed to Kapila. Unfortunately, his book 'Samkhya-Sutra', in which the philosophy of Samkhya was originally propounded, has been lost completely.

Our knowledge about Samkhya philosophy is now derived from Ishvarakrishna's Samkhya-Karika which was written in the 5<sup>th</sup> century CE. Ishvarkrishna claimed himself to be one of the disciples of Kapila in the long chain of disciples.

According to this philosophy, there are two types of fundamental realities – Prakriti (Matter) and Purusha (Consciousness).

Prakriti is constituted of 3 Gunas (elements) – Sattva (Goodness-oriented), Rajas (Activity-oriented) and Tamas (Passivity-oriented). These Gunas are not properties of Prakriti – they are its essence. Different material objects, which are evolutes of Prakriti, are formed due to different ratios in which these 3 Gunas combine. Stars, Earth, water, air, fire, ether, intellect, ego, mind, five senses, five motor organs and their further combinations etc are all products of Prakriti. Prakriti is devoid of any intelligence, will or consciousness.

According to Samkhya philosophy, out of Prakriti, the following objects evolve in the order noted below:

Prakriti > Cosmic Intellect >

Sattvik individuation > human mind > 5 sense organs (eyes, ears, skin, tongue and nose) + 5 organs of action (responsible for speaking, holding, moving, reproducing and evacuating)

Tamasik individuation > 5 subtle elements (sight, sound, touch, taste and smell) + 5 gross elements (Earth, water, air, fire and ether)

In the beginning, Prakriti is in undifferentiated state in which its Gunas are in perfect equilibrium. When the equilibrium of Gunas is disturbed, it starts evolving. Then it gives rise to intellect, ego, mind, senses, body and the rest of the material world. When the Gunas become balanced, Prakriti is dissolved. Evolution and dissolution of Prakriti takes place cyclically.

Purusha is pure consciousness and it exists eternally in huge numbers. All individuals have separate consciousness. It is the self of all conscious beings. It is different from intellect, ego, mind, senses or body. It is the pure witness, immutable, indifferent, unchangeable and beyond space-time. It does not fall in bondage, does not attain liberation and does not undergo rebirth.

Purusha is somewhat similar to Upanishadic Brahman or Atman, but not identical. Upanishadic Brahman pro-actively manifests itself in the universe, suffers, enjoys and finally frees itself from the bondage. But Purusha is too passive to do all that.

When Purusha and intellect are in each other's presence, the intellect reflects Purusha. This makes the intellect think that it is Purusha. This misidentification creates ego which leads to bondage and suffering. When intellect realizes its mistake and disidentifies itself from Purusha, it destroys the ego and hence liberated. In reality, Purusha is never in bondage or liberation – it is ever free and pure witness.

**Yoga** – Yoga philosophy is based on Yoga-Sutras of Patanjali who compiled it around 400 CE. It accepts the philosophy of Samkhya in totality, but it complements it by developing practical ways to attain liberation.

Its 8-step guide is claimed to lead aspirants on the path of liberation systematically. These 8 steps are: Self-restraint (practice of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, celibacy and non-possessiveness), Rules of self-improvement (cleanliness, contentment, training of the senses, self-study and let-go attitude), Relaxed posture, Slow breathing, Withdrawal of mind from objects, Concentration (focusing mind on Self), Meditation (uninterrupted attention to the Self) and Samadhi (state of deep absorption of mind into the Self when there is no awareness of even the distinction between the two). Samadhi is the state of complete self-realization.

**Vaishesika** – The Vaishesika philosophy was propounded by Kanad, a sage of 2<sup>nd</sup> century CE. According to this philosophy, there are 7 fundamental realities, which combine to make all things of the universe. They are – Substance, Quality, Action, Generality, Particularity, Inherence and Non-being.

Substance is the substratum where Qualities and Actions reside. There are 9 types of Substances: Earth, Water, Fire, Air, Ether, Time, Space, Mind and Soul. The first 4 Substances refer not to the objects we perceive, but to indivisible atoms which combine to give rise to those objects. Ether is not atomic but infinite. Each of the first 5 Substances possess a peculiar Quality: smell, taste, color, touch and sound respectively. The 5 sense organs which sense these 5 Qualities are made of those respective Substances, as e.g., the sense of taste is made of the element of Water and so on.

Time and Space are also indivisible, infinite and eternal.

Mind is also atomic, but it does not give rise to any other compound objects. It is the internal organ through which a soul comes in contact with objects or internal states. Each soul has a mind.

There are innumerable souls. They are all independent and individual. They are the substratum of the qualities of consciousness, desires, will etc. Unlike Upanishads and Samkhya-Yoga, Vaishesikas believe that consciousness is an accidental and separable quality of soul.

Quality is that which inheres in a Substance. It cannot exist independently of a substance. Smell, taste, touch, color etc are qualities.

Action too inheres in a substance, but while a quality is static, action is dynamic and transitory. Upward movement, contraction and expansion are examples of action.

Generality is the name given to common characteristics of a group of individuals. It is not a subjective concept of our mind, but exists independently and eternally in substances, qualities and actions.

Particularity is the distinguishing feature which makes every atom unique. It is that which makes one atom different from another atom. Particularities reside in individual souls, minds and atoms of Earth, water, fire and air.

Inherence is inseparable relationship between any two fundamental realities, such as between a substance and a quality, between an atom and a particularity, between a cause and an effect etc. It exists independently and eternally.

Non-existence is also given the status of a reality. For example, suppose a clay pot is made by a potter. Before its production, the pot was non-existent. After its destruction, the pot will again become non-existent. So, non-existence of an object, too, begins or ends. So, this too, according to them, must be real!

With this background, now we can explain Vaishesika's account of the process of beginning and dissolution of the universe as well as bondage and liberation of souls.

Beginning and dissolution of the universe – To kick-start the beginning of the universe, Vaishesikas assume the existence of God. God does not create atoms, souls or minds, nor does He interfere in the law of karma. He simply gives the first motion to the atoms to begin the process of combination of atoms, which eventually evolves into the universe we experience today. Thereafter, souls continue to live according to their knowledge and enjoy or suffer in accordance with their actions. The cycle of birth and death continues for a long time. Then, just to give rest from this cycle, God pauses the operation of the universe for some time. This is dissolution. After some time, He again starts from the same stage it had been dissolved. Souls thus start their life as before, as if they had gone asleep for a while. This cycle goes on.

**Bondage and liberation** – When God kick-starts the beginning of the universe, souls come in contact with mind which is ignorant. So, souls too become ignorant. Out of this ignorance, they get attached to objects of the world and try to consume them or avoid them through their actions. This brings pleasure or pain to the soul. Pleasure motivates souls to do further actions, which brings more pain or pleasure. This cycle of experiencing pleasure and pain, birth after birth, is bondage.

When the soul learns not to get attached with external objects, and realizes its true nature, it is liberated.

Since in the liberated state, soul becomes detached from mind and body, it does not feel any consciousness, bliss, pleasure or pain. In this condition, soul becomes what it is – pure existence, devoid of any quality or action.

In the liberated state, actions are not performed due to attachment or aversion, but for well-being of other souls. So, they do not bind the soul.

**Nyaya** – Nyaya philosophy was propounded by Gautam in around 150 CE. It accepts the metaphysics of Vaishesika completely and complements it with its theory of knowledge. Nyaya accepts 4 methods to acquire knowledge – perception, inference, comparison and authority and deals with them in details.

### **New philosophies continued to emerge**

Attempts to interpret Upanishadic spiritual experiences in terms of logically coherent philosophies continued throughout the history of Hinduism. After these 4 well-known philosophies of ancient times, some later famous philosophies built on Upanishadic insights are those of Shankaracharya, Ramanujacharya, Vallabhacharya, Kabir, Nanak, Vivekananda, Mahatma Gandhi and Sri Aurobindo. All these philosophies are merely different interpretations of the Upanishadic experience of Atman. Unfortunately, it is not possible to discuss their world-views here for lack of space.

## **SECTION C**

### **Classical Hinduism as expressed in Smritis, Ramayana, Mahabharata, and Puranas [600 BCE – 1200 CE]**

Early Vedic Aryans lived a natural life dedicated to material prosperity, offspring and victory over their local enemies. Vedic prayers were expressions of their concerns over these issues. The overwhelming majority of Aryans continued to live this sort of life.

But the sudden explosion of Upanishadic experience of Atman/Brahman attracted the elite layers of the Vedic society towards renunciation, asceticism and detachment.

These two opposite sets of values – Vedic and Upanishadic – had therefore to be reconciled, as

they must have started pulling the society in opposite directions. Classical Hinduism tried to reconcile this contradiction by developing necessary theoretical concepts.

In this process, Classical Hinduism undertook 3 basic operations:

It attempted to fill up the gaps of knowledge left by Upanishads, especially in cosmology, doctrine of karma and concept of rebirth. This task was performed by some Puranas.

It attempted to reconcile the opposite values of early Vedic period and Upanishadic period and develop a reconciled code of conduct for the practical day-to-day living for individuals and the society. This task was performed by Smritis. They also developed theoretical framework to perform this task.

It tried to explain the abstract concepts of Upanishads to the masses through religious stories or mythologies. This task was performed by Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas. The aim was to reduce the gap in spiritual awareness between the masses and the religious pioneers.

The core concepts of Classical Hinduism may be summarized as follows:

**1. Cyclical origin and dissolution of the universe**

**2. Geocentric model of the universe**

**3. Four values of human life**

**4. Liberation-oriented moral code**

**5. Vegetarianism**

**6. Doctrine of karma and rebirth**

**7. Three types of personal qualities**

**8. Birth-based caste system**

**9. Lower status of women**

**10. Idol Worship**

**11. Incarnation of Bhagwan**

**12. Cycle of 4 ages of declining religiosity**

**13. Rise of Bhakti**

Let me explain each belief in some details.

## 1. Cyclical origin and dissolution of the universe

Early Vedas believed in gods who would respond to their prayers and accept their sacrifices.

Upanishads, on the other hand, propounded the doctrine that the universe originates from and dissolves into the ultimate reality -- Brahman. This Brahman however was essentially a fundamental element of the universe and it simply followed its nature while bursting into creation or withdrawing into dissolution. This Brahman did not take any special interest in human affairs. He did not respond to their prayers.

Thinkers of Classical Hinduism tried to reconcile these two opposing beliefs about God. They propounded a doctrine according to which Brahman is the ultimate reality, but even then He does care for humans, answers their worship, rewards their penance, upholds Hindu social and political order and defends His devotees from the mischief-makers by taking incarnations in human or animal forms.

The logic behind this reconciliation was this: Humans are creations/manifestations of Brahman. So, they are like children of Brahman. If human parents care for their children, Brahman too must be caring for His children. So, He must be responding to human prayers and worship.

Bhagwan was believed to have 3 aspects – as creator of the world, He was called Brahma; as preserver of the world, He was called Vishnu and as destroyer of the world, He was called Mahesha or Shiva.

The cyclical nature of the origin and dissolution of the universe, as proclaimed by Upanishads, was fully accepted by Classical Hinduism. For example, in Gita, Bhagwan Krishna says:

*7.6 All created beings have their source in these two natures. Of all that is material and all that is spiritual in this world, know for certain that I am both the origin and the dissolution.*

As to the order in which various objects of the world originate, there is no unanimity among thinkers of this period.

Most of them roughly follow Samkhya's description of evolution of matter and then combine the final evolutes of matter with souls to explain the origin of the world.

## 2. Belief in geocentric model of the universe

Neither Vedas nor Upanishads say anything on the physical structure of the universe. This gap was filled up by Classical Hinduism.

Like Abrahamic religions, propounders of Classical Hinduism too believed in Earth-centered universe. They believed that Sun is above Earth, Moon is above Sun, stars are above Moon, and other celestial spheres where gods and sages reside are above stars. Below Earth, it was believed, were planets which are more like hells and where demons and sinners live.

Classical Hinduism believed that all the stars and planets revolved around pole star called Dhruv. Dhruva, it is told by Vishnu Purana, was a child who did difficult penance to see God Vishnu, the Operator of the universe. Finally, Bhagwan Vishnu appeared before him and made Dhruva immortal by blessing that after death, he would become the pole star!

Bhagwat Purana 5.23.3

*.... all the planets and all the hundreds and thousands of stars revolve around the polestar, the planet of King Dhruva, in their respective orbits, some higher and some lower. Fastened by Bhagwan to the material nature according to the results of their attachment-induced acts, they (planets and stars) are driven around the polestar by the wind and will continue to be so until the end of creation....*

It was believed that these planets and stars orbited around the pole star by the power of wind!

However, Bhagwat Purana also says that Sun orbits around Earth; Moon is farther than Sun from Earth and Moon moves faster than Sun:

5.22.7

*The Sun-god has three speeds -- slow, fast and moderate. The time he takes to travel entirely around the spheres of heaven, Earth and space at these three speeds is referred to, by learned scholars, by the five names .....*

5.22.8.

*Above the rays of the sunshine by a distance of 100,000 yojanas [800,000 miles] is the Moon, which travels at a speed faster than that of the Sun.*

Perhaps, Hindu thinkers presumed that Earth and pole star were perfectly aligned in one vertical straight line so that all stars and planets could orbit both of them simultaneously.

Vishnu Purana says that Sun can light up all the places of the entire world. This means that during this period, Hindu thinkers believed that Earth was flat. Vishnu Purana says:

1.2.8

*Sun lights up all the places in the entire world except Brahmaloka (residential place of creator Brahma). Sun's rays that reach Brahmaloka return back as rendered ineffective by the radiance of Brahma.*

Vishnu Purana knew how rains are made, but could not figure out how snow and dew in winter formed:

1.2.8

*Sun keeps on evaporating the water for eight months in a year. This evaporated water then rains for four months and nourishes the soil and produces different kinds of cereals for the nourishment of*

the entire world.

*The water that is evaporated by the Sun also nourishes the Moon. But the Moon itself does not consume that water. Instead it gives that water to the clouds. During winter season, this water released by the Moon falls on Earth as snow and dew.*

Vishnu Purana also believes that sometimes rains come from the Milky Way:

*Sun draws water from Akashganga (Milky Way galaxy) also and causes it to rain on Earth at once. That water is so sacred that mere touch of it destroys all the sins.*

Bhagwat Purana has also mentioned the size of Sun and Moon, their speed of movement, distance of various planets and stars from Earth, cause of eclipses etc. For example, they say that Moon is bigger in size than Sun; Jupiter is only around 10 million miles from Earth and so on.

Coming to the geography of Earth and Indian sub-continent, Puranas are full of wild speculation. They say that seven seas were created by the chariot of a king who was chasing the Sun; that Indian sub-continent called Jambudwipa, which was in the middle of the Earth, was 8 million miles in length and breadth; that one Sumeru mountain, which was in the middle of Jambudwipa was made of gold and was 672,000 miles tall from the surface of Earth; there are oceans of liquor and butter; and so on.

Just read some samples of their wild imagination which constitutes the so-called geography of Indian sub-continent [1 yojana = 8 miles]:

Bhagwat Purana

5.16.5

*The planetary system known as Bhu-mandala (Earth) resembles a lotus flower, and its seven islands resemble the whorl of that flower. The length and breadth of the island known as Jambudwipa (Indian sub-continent), which is situated in the middle of the whorl, are one million yojanas [eight million miles]. Jambudwipa is round like the leaf of a lotus flower.*

5.16.7

*Within Ilavrta-varsa is Sumeru Mountain, which is made of gold. The mountain's height is the same as the width of Jambudwipa or, in other words, 100,000 yojanas [800,000 miles]. Of that, 16,000 yojanas [128,000 miles] are within the Earth, and therefore the mountain's height above the Earth is 84,000 yojanas [672,000 miles]. The mountain's width is 32,000 yojanas [256,000 miles] at its summit and 16,000 yojanas at its base.*

5.20.13

*Outside the ocean of liquor is another island, known as Kusadvipa, which is 800,000 yojanas [6,400,000 miles] wide, twice as wide as the ocean of liquor. As Salmalidvipa is surrounded by a*

*liquor ocean, Kusadvipa is surrounded by an ocean of liquid ghee (butter) as broad as the island itself.*

It is obvious that propounders of Classical Hinduism had almost no scientific knowledge about the physical universe.

These beliefs will be examined in the sub chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism], where we will expose the falsehood of Hinduism.

Now, we come to the next belief held by Classical Hinduism.

### **3. Four values of human life**

In early Vedas, fulfilment of material desires for wealth, children, security against enemies, long life, cure of diseases etc was the goal of life.

According to Upanishads, liberation is the ultimate goal of human life. During the Upanishadic period, some sages might have experienced the heightened state of consciousness. However, this vision was too difficult to attain by the masses. So, Upanishadic vision did not influence the masses in the beginning.

The masses must have continued to be concerned only with natural desires for food, clothes, housing, security, children etc. This was summed up under the heads of 3 Hindu ideals – wealth (Artha), procreation (Kama) and social order based on morality and Hindu world-view (Dharma).

But Upanishadic vision was so powerful that it could not be ignored for long by the Hindu society. So, liberation (Moksha) was gradually accepted as the supreme goal of life and the remaining three came to be considered as only means to attain the goal of liberation. So, at least, in principle, Vedic worldly goals were replaced by Upanishadic ideal of liberation.

All Epics, Puranas and Smritis unanimously endorse liberation as the ultimate goal and treat social order, wealth and procreation as valid means to achieve that goal.

Liberation became the most common theme of all the Puranic stories. Again and again, their message is: ‘detach from sense objects and immerse in meditation to attain liberation; abandon hankering for material enjoyments and move inward to experience the real self, which alone can make you ever blissful and really wise.’ There are countless stories on this theme. Some examples are those related to Prikshit, Priyavrata, Rishabhdev, Bhrtrihari, Jadabharat, Dhruva, Prahlad, and so forth mentioned in Bhagwat and Vishnu Puranas.

Let me explain these 3 means to liberation:

Wealth (Artha) -- Early Aryans wanted wealth, sons, victory against rivals, cure of diseases and so forth. Upanishadic Hinduism wanted abandonment of all desires in order to attain the state of liberation of soul. These two opposite perspectives must have collided for a few hundred years and then they must have started melting into one homogenous goal.

This fusion was attained gradually. With liberation (Moksha) still the supreme goal, materialistic tendencies of early Vedic period were channelized as means to achieve the supreme goal of liberation.

Wealth was considered a valid means, because without it, human body cannot survive, without which no efforts to attain liberation was possible. So, Classical Hinduism permits acquisition of wealth (Artha), but with the caveat that it should be used only as a means to facilitate attainment of liberation, not sense enjoyments. The word ‘Artha’ is important – it does not mean wealth, it means “means”. This is why Hinduism does not use the word ‘Dhana’, which literally means ‘wealth’. It uses the word ‘Artha’, whose literal meaning is ‘means’.

So, wealth was permitted as means, but just enough to meet the bare needs of survival. Anything more than that was considered “desires”, pursuit of which was condemned as wastage of time and energy.

**Procreation (Kama)** – Early Vedas wanted lots of children, especially sons so that they could assist their fathers in fighting local enemies and cultivating forested lands.

Upanishads wanted to ensure that before one dies, one should leave behind one’s children so that the chain of spiritual evolution is not broken. Belief in the doctrine of karma, which we will discuss soon, required that opportunity of a birth of a soul should be created, so that the soul continues to make a steady spiritual progress towards liberation.

So, recognizing procreation (Kama) as a desirable objective of life served both worldly as well as spiritual sentiments.

**Social order (Dharma)** -- Social order was obviously also a means to attain other 3 values. If there is no law and order or morality in a society, the entire society would lapse into jungle rule where everybody would be fighting with everybody for survival and nobody could achieve any higher purpose – whether it is material or spiritual pursuits. So, maintenance of social and moral order (Dharma) too became one of the desirable objectives.

### **Minimalism – the ideal of minimum wealth and minimum sex**

Though Classical Hinduism does permit acquisition of wealth and use of sex for reproduction, it is clearly for minimization of these pursuits. I call this tendency ‘Minimalism’.

The argument in favor of Minimalism is that if a Hindu were to create, acquire or enjoy maximum possible wealth, he would be left with no time and energy to pursue liberation. So, every Hindu must remain contented with the minimum possible wealth, just enough to keep him and his family survive. Maintenance of bare life is what is permitted. Anything beyond that, according to Hinduism, is wastage of time and energy, as it is not required for attainment of liberation.

The same goes for sex. Hinduism believes that sex should be undertaken only and only for procreation – that too within marriage. Sex should never be undertaken for pleasure. So, masturbation,

wet dreams, homosexuality, pre-marital sex, extra-marital sex and sex for pleasure even within marriage is forbidden. Hinduism believes that one, who indulges in sexual pleasure whenever the desire hits him, loses his vital energy, becomes weak, falls sick frequently and dies early. Hence, to translate one of the Purusharthas – Kama – as sexual pleasure, as some writers do, is completely wrong. In fact, Kama (lust), Krodha (anger), Lobha (greed) and Moha (attachment) are treated by Hinduism as the 4 biggest sins.

It is this vision which led to the concept of 4 stages of life – during the first stage, a Hindu is to learn Upanishadic wisdom from a teacher in a place away from home; in the second stage, he is to come back home and marry in order to beget children; in the third stage, when his sons are ready to enter the second stage, he should gradually withdraw from the worldly activities and focus on social and spiritual development and in the last stage, one must renounce everything including wife, children, home, wealth etc and become a wandering monk who survives only on alms and strives for spiritual development most of the time.

Desire for big wealth and indulgence in sexual pleasure has been condemned throughout in Epics, Smritis and Puranas. See some examples:

#### MAHABHARATA

Vana Parva, [Book 3, Section 2] --

*Then a learned Brahmana, Saunaka by name versed in self-knowledge, addressed the king (Yudhishthir), saying:*

*“The thirst of wealth can never be assuaged. Contentment is the highest happiness; therefore, the wise regard contentment as the highest object of pursuit. The wise knowing the instability of youth and beauty, of life and treasure-hoards, of prosperity and the company of the loved ones, never covet them. Therefore, one should refrain from the acquisition of wealth, bearing the pain incident to it. ....”*

#### GITA

2.71. *The man attains peace, who, abandoning all desires, moves about without longing, without the sense of mine and without egoism.*

3.34. *Attachments and aversions for the sense objects remain in the senses. One should not come under the control of these two, because they are two major stumbling blocks, indeed, on one’s path of Self-realization.*

#### MANU SMRITI

2.13. *The knowledge of the sacred law is prescribed for those who are not given to the acquisition of wealth and to the gratification of their desires; to those who seek the knowledge of the sacred law, the supreme authority is the revelation (Sruti).*

12.38. *The craving after sensual pleasures is declared to be the mark of Darkness [Tamo Guna],*

*the pursuit of wealth is the mark of Activity [Rajo Guna], the desire to gain spiritual merit is the mark of Goodness [Sato Guna]; each later named quality is better than the preceding one.*

## BHAGWAT PURANA

1.2.10. *Life's desires should never be directed toward sense gratification. One should desire only a healthy life, or self-preservation, since a human being is meant for inquiry about the Absolute Truth. Nothing else should be the goal of one's works.*

11.18.43. *A householder may approach his wife for sex only at the time prescribed for begetting children. Otherwise, the householder should practice celibacy, austerity, cleanliness of mind and body, satisfaction in his natural position, and friendship toward all living entities. Worship of Me is to be practiced by all human beings, regardless of social or occupational divisions.*

## GARUDA PURANA

16.50. *People are destroyed every day by the desire for great wealth. Alas! Fie upon the foods of the senses, which steal away the senses of the body!*

16.55. *All those beings who are attached to their bodies, wealth, wife and other things, are born and die deluded by ignorance!*

## PATANJAI

Yoga-Sutras –

2.3 *The five afflictions are ignorance, egoism, attachment, aversion, and the desire to cling to life.*

## SHANKARACHARYA

Vivekchudamani –

78. *One who is liberated from the terrible bonds of desires for sense objects, so very difficult to renounce, is alone fit for liberation and none else, even if well-versed in all the six schools of philosophy.*

These passages of Hindu religious texts on wealth and sex conclusively prove that Hinduism is dead against creating and enjoying opulence and luxury. It is also against enjoyment of all pleasures, especially sexual, by a person seeking liberation.

This feature of Hinduism is so fundamental that it continued to be preached even during medieval and modern period. Throughout this period, Hindu saints kept on condemning desires, wealth and sexual pleasure for the sake of liberation. See some examples:

## KABIR [1440-1518 CE]

*Give me only so much, O God, which is just sufficient to feed my family, me and visitors.*

*People live on hope and go on trying to accumulate wealth, but only that person is liberated who is free from it.*

*Eat simple food and drink cold water*

*Do not look at the buttered bread of others and long for it.*

**Chaitanya Mahaprabhu [1486 – 1534 CE]**

**Shikshastaka**

*4. O almighty Lord, I have no desire to accumulate wealth, nor do I desire beautiful women, nor do I want any number of followers. I only want your causeless devotional service birth after birth.*

**RAMKRISHNA PARAMHANSA [1836-1886 CE]**

**Sri Ramakrishna Upadesh –**

*So long as you are attached to Kamini and Kanchan (woman and wealth), you cannot do sadhana.*

*If you have even the slightest passion, you cannot realize God.*

**DAYANAND SARASWATI**

**Satyarth Prakash (Page 50) –**

*It is only those, who stand aloof from the headlong pursuit of both wealth and carnal pleasures, can ever attain a knowledge of true religion.*

**SWAMI VIVEKANANDA [1863-1902 CE]**

**Complete Works of Swami Vivekananda, Vol 2, Chapter 3 -**

***Maya and Illusion***

*There comes a time when the mind awakes from this long and dreary dream — the child gives up its play and wants to go back to its mother. It finds the truth of the statement, "Desire is never satisfied by the enjoyment of desires, it only increases more, as fire, when butter is poured upon it."*

**MAHATMA GANDHI**

**Hind Swaraj (page 56) –**

**13. WHAT IS TRUE CIVILIZATION?**

*We notice that the mind is a restless bird; the more it gets the more it wants, and still remains unsatisfied. The more we indulge our passions the more unbridled they become. Our ancestors, therefore, set a limit to our indulgences. They saw that happiness was largely a mental condition. A man is not necessarily happy because he is rich, or unhappy because he is poor. The rich are often*

seen to be unhappy, the poor to be happy. Millions will always remain poor.

SWAMI PRABHUPAD BHAKTIVEDANT: Founder of ISKCON [1896-1977 CE]

Commentary on Bhagavata Purana 3.2.11

*The conditioned souls in the material world are all trying to satisfy their senses in various ways, but they have failed to do so because it is impossible to be satisfied by such efforts. The example of the fish on land is very appropriate. If one takes a fish from the water and puts it on the land, it cannot be made happy by any amount of offered pleasure. The spirit soul can be happy only in the association of the supreme living being, the Personality of Godhead, and nowhere else.*

SRI SRI RAVI SHANKAR: [Founder of Art of Living; born 1956 CE]

[From official website of Sri Sri Ravi Shankar -- <http://www.artofliving.org/wisdom-q-a-31-march-2014-qa-1>]

*All that you need to do, is to know that the mind is getting clogged by desire after desire after desire. This bombardment of desires does not allow you to see the clear sky that you are. So, throw the desires....*

*So lessen your desires. Got it? Now you may ask, 'How can I lessen my desires?*

*Know that everything is going to finish! That's all. This is renunciation, and you don't need any practice for this.*

*Everything is going to finish! This one thought is an antidote for desires. Everything is going to be finished. This is meditation. Without renunciation, meditation is next to impossible!*

To sum up:

In Hinduism, liberation (Moksha) remains the ultimate goal of human life; wealth (Artha) is considered just a means for bare survival. Sex (Kama) is considered just a means for procreation. Dharma, social and moral order, is considered just a means to achieve Artha, Kama and Moksha.

### **Consequences of Minimalism**

Condemnation of wealth and sex led to subsistence economy, poverty, sexual repression etc. I will discuss these harmful effects in detail in sub-chapter 5E [Harmful effects of Hinduism].

Now, we come to the next belief.

### **4. Liberation-oriented moral code**

Attainment of liberation, according to Hinduism, was possible only through meditation/devotion coupled with observance of a moral code of conduct. The moral code has been explained in almost all texts of Classical Hinduism. They are: non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, celibacy and minimum possession. They were considered absolutely necessary for every Hindu wanting to live a pure (religious-

spiritual) life.

Patanjali's Yoga Sutras:

2.30 *Self-restraint in actions (Yama) includes abstention from violence, from falsehoods, from stealing, from sexual engagements, and excessive possessions.*

Manu Smriti says:

10.63. *Abstention from injuring (creatures), truthfulness, abstention from unlawfully appropriating (the goods of others), purity, and control of the organs, Manu has declared to be the summary of the law for the four castes.*

Apart from these 5 basic moral principles, Hinduism also condemns Kama (lust), Krodha (anger), Lobha (greed), Moha (attachment), Mada (pride) and Matsar (jealousy).

These 7 emotions are called Vikaras (defilements) in Hinduism (in fact, by all Indian religions).

See how they have been condemned by Hindu scriptures:

Gita

16.21 - *Lust, anger and greed are the three gates of hell leading to the downfall (or bondage) of the individual. Therefore, one must learn to give up these three.*

Adi Shankaracharya:

Vivekchudamani –

112. *Lust, anger, avarice, arrogance, spite, egoism, envy, jealousy, etc., -- these are the dire attributes of Rajas, from which the worldly tendency of man is produced. Therefore Rajas is a cause of bondage.*

However, these emotions are not only natural, but also desirable. I will evaluate the harmful effects of condemnation of these emotions in sub-chapter 5E [Harmful Effects of Hinduism].

## 5. Vegetarianism

Hinduism has gradually evolved from the stage of meat eating to vegetarianism. This is yet another example how Classical Hinduism slowly synthesized the opposite currents of thoughts of Vedic and Upanishadic Hinduism.

Vedas have hundreds of references of offering food to gods by way of animal sacrifices or eating meat. See some examples:

Rig Veda 5.29.8

*When (Indra) had eaten three hundred buffaloes' flesh, and drunk, as Maghavan, three lakes of Soma,*

*All the gods raised a shout of triumph to Indra because he had slain the Dragon.*

Rig Veda 1.162.12

*They who observing that the horse is ready, call out and say, the smell is good; remove it; And, craving meat, await the distribution; ....*

Atharva Veda 6.71.1-2

*Whatever food I eat of varied form and nature, food whether of horse, sheep, goat or bullock, Whatever gift I have received, may Agni the Hotar make this sacrifice well-offered.*

However, with the emergence of Upanishadic vision of divine oneness of all beings, the doctrine of non-violence started becoming popular. The transition was slow. In one of the earliest Upanishads such as Brihadaranyaka, the hangover of Vedic violence against animals is still there. See here the prescription of eating bull's meat in order to have a good son:

Brihadaranyaka Upanishad 6.4.18

*He who wishes that a son should be born to him who would be a reputed scholar, frequenting the assemblies and speaking delightful words, would study all the Vedas and attain a full term of life, should have rice cooked with the meat of a vigorous bull .... Then they would be able to produce such a son.*

But latter Upanishads clearly denounce animal sacrifices and meat eating. As for example:

Mundaka Upanishad

I-ii-10. *The deluded fools, believing the sacrificial rites to be the highest, do not understand the other thing (that leads to) liberation. They, having enjoyed (the fruits of actions) in the abode of pleasure on the heights of heaven, enter this world or an inferior one.*

Isha Upanishad

6. *He who perceives all beings in the Self alone, and the Self in all beings, does not entertain any hatred on account of that perception.*

But the Upanishadic vision was so profound and mysterious that Vedic people could not assimilate it immediately. So, in the books of Classical Hinduism, we find references justifying both the ideas, though Upanishadic vision gradually became more dominating.

I will illustrate my point with reference to examples of Ramayana, Mahabharata, Manu Smriti and Bhagwat Purana.

Ramayana:

First composed by Valmiki, it is one of the earliest texts of Classical Hinduism and hence it openly

supports eating meat through its hero Rama, who is supposed to be an “incarnation of God in human form”. There is not a single verse in this book condemning meat-eating. This makes sense because during those primitive times, meat eating was absolutely normal across the world. The people of this period does not feel any impact of Upanishadic mysticism.

See some examples of Valmiki Ramayana:

2.52.89

Sita promising Ganga meat-rice on safe return:

*“Oh, goddess! After reaching back the city of Ayodhya, I shall worship you with thousand pots of spirituous liquor and jellied meat with cooked rice well prepared for the solemn rite.”*

2.55.33

Rama and Lakshmana eating meat in the forest

*Thereafter having travelled only a couple of miles the two brothers Rama and Lakshmana killed many consecrated deer and ate in the river-forest of Yamuna.*

2.56.25-28

Rama and Lakshmana offering meat to god in the forest

*“O gentle Lakshmana! Dress this meat. We will offer sacrifice to the presiding deity of this hut. This moment indicates stability. Haste up.”*

*Then, Lakshmana, the valorous son of Sumitra, having killed a black antelope pure enough for a sacrifice, cast it in a well-kindled fire.*

*Having observed that it is well-boiled, drained off the blood and cooked well, thus said Lakshmana to Rama, the best of men:*

*“This black antelope with all the limbs is completely well-cooked. As such O! Divine sir, you may offer sacrifice to Vastu devata. You are proficient in doing such acts.”*

3.47.22b-23

Sita says to Ravana when he had come to abduct her in the guise of a Brahmin:

*“Be comfortable for a moment, here it is possible for you to make a sojourn, and soon my husband will be coming on taking plentiful forest produce, and on killing stags, mongooses, wild boars he fetches meat, aplenty.”*

However, after the abduction of his wife Sita, Rama continuously grieved and stopped eating meat.

This is what his messenger Hanuman conveys to Sita after she was found by him in the demon Ravana's garden in Lanka:

*“Rama is not eating meat, nor indulging even in spirituous liquor. Every day, in the evening, he is eating the food existing in the forest, well arranged for him. With his mind wholly devoted to you, Rama is not even driving away forest-flies from his body, nor mosquitoes nor insects nor reptiles from his body.”*

Hindu apologists quote this verse to prove that Rama did not eat meat. But they do not explain this verse in proper context -- Ram had stopped eating meat only temporarily due to his grief over the abduction of his wife. The very sentence “Rama has stopped eating meat” or “Rama is not eating meat” indicates that Rama used to eat meat earlier. They also do not quote other verses where Valmiki has clearly described Rama eating meat.

### Mahabharata

By the time of composition of Mahabharata, Upanishadic ideals of non-violence had started changing the minds and hearts of the Hindu society from top down. So, Mahabharata, while acknowledging the fact of meat eating by its righteous characters such as Pandavas and Brahmins, also holds that avoiding meat earns spiritual merits.

Let us first see the examples of meat-eating:

2.4

*Vaisampayana said -- "Then that chief of men, king Yudhishtira, entered that palatial meeting room having first fed ten thousand Brahmins with preparations of milk, rice mixed with clarified butter, honey, fruits, roots, pork and meat of deer.*

3.3

*.... as long as Panchali will hold this vessel, without partaking of its contents, fruits, roots, meat and vegetables cooked in your kitchen, these four kinds of food shall from this day be inexhaustible.*

3.50

*And the king himself wending towards the east, and Bhima, towards the south, and the twins, towards the west and the north, daily killed with bow in hand the deer of the forest, for the sake of meat.*

But the same Mahabharata also denounces meat-eating. It appears that Mahabharata first described the prevalent practice of meat-eating in the society, while it sincerely wanted to change this savage practice in the light of Upanishadic vision. There are hundreds of instances where meat-eating has been strongly condemned in Mahabharata. See some examples:

12.90

*They that abstain, from their birth, from honey, meat and intoxicating drinks, succeed in overcoming all difficulties.*

13.57

*By abstaining from meat and fish, one gets long-lived children.*

13.114

*[Bhishma said] The meat of other animals is like the flesh of one's son. The foolish person, stupefied by folly, who eats meat is regarded as the vilest of human beings. .... Well-dressed, cooked with salt or without salt, meat, in whatever form one may take it, gradually attracts the mind and enslaves it.*

Manu Smriti

Manu Smriti too denounces meat-eating, but it also approves meat-eating in some specific cases such as on the occasion of Vedic sacrifices. We can thus easily notice opposite pulls of materialistic vision of Vedas and spiritual vision of Upanishads on Manu Smriti.

The principle governing meat-eating has been described by Manu Smriti as follows:

5.31. 'The consumption of meat (is befitting) for sacrifices,' that is declared to be a rule made by the gods; but to persist (in using it) on other (occasions) is said to be a proceeding worthy of Rakshasas (demons).

Examples where Manu Smriti approves meat-eating:

5.16. (But the fish called) Pathina and (that called) Rohita may be eaten, if used for offerings to the gods or to the manes; ...

5.18. The porcupine, the hedgehog, the iguana, the rhinoceros, the tortoise, and the hare they declare to be eatable; likewise those (domestic animals) that have teeth in one jaw only, excepting camels.

5.27. One may eat meat when it has been sprinkled with water, while Mantras were recited, when Brahmins desire (one's doing it), when one is engaged (in the performance of a rite) according to the law, and when one's life is in danger.

Examples where Manu Smriti denounces meat-eating:

5.48. Meat can never be obtained without injury to living creatures, and injury to sentient beings is detrimental to (the attainment of) heavenly bliss; let him therefore shun (the use of) meat.

5.49. Having well considered the (disgusting) origin of flesh and the (cruelty of) fettering and slaying corporeal beings, let him entirely abstain from eating flesh.

## Bhagwat Purana

By the time Bhagwat Purana was composed, justification for killing animals for meat-eating had completely stopped in Hinduism. There is not a single reference in support of meat-eating in Bhagwat Purana, which condemns it unconditionally:

*11.5.14. Those sinful persons who are ignorant of actual religious principles, yet consider themselves to be completely pious, without compunction commit violence against innocent animals who are fully trusting in them. In their next lives, such sinful persons will be eaten by the same creatures they have killed in this world.*

*11.5.11. In this material world the conditioned soul is always inclined to sex, meat-eating and intoxication. Therefore religious scriptures never actually encourage such activities. Although the scriptural injunctions provide for sex through sacred marriage, for meat-eating through sacrificial offerings and for intoxication through the acceptance of ritual cups of wine, such ceremonies are meant for the ultimate purpose of renunciation.*

Thus, Vedas fully justify offering meat to gods and eating meat. However, Upanishadic philosophy of oneness of self of all beings gradually led to non-violence and compassion for all living beings. Buddhist and Jaina emphasis on non-violence also must have influenced post-Upanishadic thinking in favor of compassion. This new thinking, however, took time to sink into the Hindu psyche.

So, while the earliest epic Ramayana justifies meat-eating, the latter books such as Mahabharata and Manu Smriti appear to be in dilemma, though leaning more towards condemnation of meat-eating. The spiritualization process reaches its culmination in Bhagwat Purana, where there is not a single verse favoring meat-eating and there is a clear condemnation of meat-eating.

## **6. Doctrine of Karma and rebirth**

Hinduism very strongly supports doctrine of karma (also known as ‘law of karma’), according to which, what a person suffers or enjoys in this life is the consequence of his past actions (karma). Doctrine of karma would be logically tenable only if rebirth is possible. This doctrine is found in seminal form in Upanishads. Classical Hinduism elaborates on this and uses it extensively.

The doctrine of karma was developed by Hinduism to explain a very widely prevalent “discrepancy” in the society. This discrepancy was: why does a good person suffer disease, pre-mature death, extreme poverty, untimely death of a close family member and similar tragedies? And, why does a bad person often enjoy health, wealth and no pre-mature death among his family members?

Hinduism considers a person good if his behavior is in accordance with the principles of Hinduism. In other words, if a person does not kill, injure or cheat other humans, speaks truth, does not steal, does not marry outside his caste, is contented and strives for liberation, he is considered good.

Thus, according to the doctrine of karma, if a person is suffering from a disease in this life even though he is a good person, it is because he had done some bad karma in his previous birth. Similarly, if a

person is enjoying health and wealth, even though he is a bad person in this life, this is because he had done some good karma in his previous birth. Going to heaven or hell based on good or bad karma till one is reborn is also a part of this doctrine of karma.

Seeds of this doctrine are found in Upanishads.

Mundaka Upanishad says:

III-ii-2. *He who covets the desirable things, while brooding (on the virtues), is born amidst those very surroundings along with the desires. But for one who has got his wishes fulfilled and who is Self-poised, all the longings vanish even here.*

Katha Upanishad says:

2-II-7. *Some creatures enter the womb for assuming bodies; others go into the unmoving, in accordance with their karma and with their knowledge.*

The Upanishadic ideas underlined above highlight the doctrine of karma. They are in effect saying that one's destiny – heaven, birth in lower species or birth in a particular caste or surroundings -- is linked with one's actions in the previous life.

Krishna also says in Gita:

16.18. *These malicious people cling to egoism, power, arrogance, lust, and anger; and hate Me who dwells in their own bodies and those of others.*

16.19. *I hurl these haters, cruel, sinful, and mean people into the cycles of rebirth in the womb of demons again and again.*

This, according to Gita, is the doctrine of karma – bad action leading to birth in the family of demons (wicked and miserable persons).

## 7. Three types of personal qualities

Upanishadic Hinduism had divided all people of the world in two categories – those who seek liberation and those who do not.

Classical Hinduism refines this division further. They say that there are basically 3 types of qualities or tendencies (*Gunas*) with one type prominent in every person. These are –

- (i) Tendency to seek and propagate spiritual knowledge (***Sato Guna***); we may call people with such tendency '**Liberation-oriented**'
- (ii) Tendency to seek improvement in external conditions by getting into governance process or acquiring wealth (***Rajo Guna***); we may call people with such tendency '**Passion-oriented**'

(iii) Tendency to remain satisfied with fulfillment of bare necessities of eating and mating (**Tamo Guna**); we may call people with such tendency '**Un-oriented**'.

Out of these 3, a Liberation-oriented person is considered to be the best qualified to attain the state of liberation and hence is most respectable. The next lower is the Passion-oriented person and the lowest is the Un-oriented person.

Manu Smriti says:

*12.38. The craving after sensual pleasures is declared to be the mark of Darkness [Tamo Guna], the pursuit of wealth is the mark of Activity [Rajo Guna], the desire to gain spiritual merit is the mark of Goodness [Sato Guna]; each later named quality is better than the preceding one.*

Majority of the people in the world belong to the Un-oriented group. They work to earn a simple livelihood and are happy if their basic needs are fulfilled. They have no passion to become a billionaire or a Prime Minister or an enlightened sage.

Passion-oriented people are full of passion and energy. They want to acquire wealth, rule the country, reform society, invent new technologies, and so forth. They are generally leaders in their chosen field of passion. Political and corporate leaders, technocrats, social reformers, and the like come under this group. They are much less in number than those in the Un-oriented group.

But some people want to understand who they are, why they have come in this world, what is the purpose of life, what is this world all about and so on. They look inward and seek enlightenment. They are meditators, thinkers, researchers and writers. They are the creators of new religions, philosophies, and sciences. They were called Liberation-oriented by Hinduism. They are very few in number compared to the first two groups.

Thus, concept of gunas is a concept of categorizing people on a hierarchical scale on the basis of their levels of purity. If a person's energy is directed towards liberation, he is considered the purest; if his energy is directed towards improving external conditions of family and society, he is less pure; and if his energy is directed only in personal enjoyment of pleasures of eating and mating; he is the least pure.

## 8. Birth-based Caste System

### What is the caste system?

Caste system may be defined as a social system in which one's social status and profession are fixed by birth. Members of a caste were required to marry within their caste only.

So, all the members of each of the 4 castes were supposed to possess through inheritance a particular type of Guna (tendency), required to follow a particular profession, marry within their caste and follow certain social rules of interaction with other castes.

### What is the historical context for the origin of caste system?

The clash of fair-skinned Aryans with local dark-skinned Dravidians during early Vedic period laid the foundation of the caste system. Due to the hostility between these two different races, two broad divisions arose in the beginning – Aryans, who called themselves Dwijas (twice-born – first born biologically and second time initiated as aspirant for liberation which is like second birth) and locals who were inimical to Aryans and did not believe in their religion – they were called Shudras. ‘Shudras’ in Sanskrit literally means petty-minded.

There were vast differences in these two races. Their skin color, language, religious beliefs, rituals, means of livelihood, warfare skills, eating and dressing habits – all were completely different from each other. Even after initial hostility was over, they must be disliking each other for generations. So, neither of them wanted to assimilate the other. This historical hostility was the root cause of all subsequent bad treatment of Shudras at the hands of Aryans.

However, the emergence of Upanishadic vision -- that the same Self manifests in different beings -- implied non-hatred and non-violence for everyone. With the Upanishadic vision, how could Aryans hate Shudras, if they have the same Self?

Gita (13.27-28) says:

*He who sees that the Lord of all is ever the same in all that is -- immortal in the field of mortality -- he sees the truth. And when a man sees that the God in himself is the same God in all that is, he hurts not himself by hurting others. Then he goes, indeed, to the highest path.*

The institution of caste system emerged from these two conflicting perspectives.

The Vedic trend explains the bad treatment given to Shudras such as discrimination in matters of education, choice of profession or marriage partner, legal discrimination, prevention from earning wealth etc while Upanishadic trend explains gradual assimilation of Shudras into Aryan society culminating in declaration by Hindu thinkers of Bhakti Movement and modern Hinduism that even Shudras can attain the highest goal of life – liberation and that there should be no social, political or legal discrimination against them in any aspect of life.

So, Classical Hinduism tried to give a spiritual meaning of the caste system, while Vedic prejudices persisted in discriminatory treatment of Shudras.

Initially, there must have been only these two castes – Dwijas and Shudras.

But further differentiation must have followed among Dwijas over a period of time dividing them in 3 distinct groups – priests (Brahmins), warriors and justice providers (Kshatriyas) and common people doing cattle grazing, farming and trading (Vaishyas).

The broad contour of this fourfold division of Indian people during the Vedic period based on occupation is expressed in the hymn of Purusha Sukta of Rig Veda (assuming it is not an interpolated

verse, which is more likely), where it is mentioned that Brahmins originated from the mouth, Kshatriyas from shoulders, Vaishyas from thigh and Shudras from feet of God (Purusha). The rest of the population of the world was also included in Shudras.

This metaphor is repeated again and again in Smritis and Puranas too.

### How does Classical Hinduism explain and justify caste system?

A world-view logically leads to certain values, which in turn leads to a code of ideal conduct. Then, a hierarchy emerges – those who follow the ideal code of conduct most closely, start commanding maximum respect, while those who are indifferent to the code or flout it, get the least respect from the society in question.

When Hinduism set liberation as the goal of all Aryans, it too logically gave rise to a hierarchy. Those who strived hardest to attain liberation (Brahmins) were given maximum respect, while those who were indifferent to it (Shudras) were given least respect. Kshatriyas and Vaishyas came in the middle.

The concept of gunas – different levels of spiritual purity in different persons -- as discussed above, also was the logical outcome of this concept of hierarchy.

This is why gunas got associated with their corresponding professions -- *Sato Guna* got associated with the profession of Brahmins; *Rajo Guna* got associated with Kshatriyas and Vaishyas; and *Tamo Guna* got associated with Shudras.

Brahmins came at the top of the hierarchy first because they were the priests during Vedic period who were believed to communicate to and appease gods in order to gain material favors for the society. After Upanishadic period, they again rose to prominence because they became the most serious aspirants of liberation as they were ready to live a life of austerity, purity, meditation and contentment. This ascetic tendency or qualities among Brahmins was called *Sattvik*. Their natural profession was teaching Vedas and Upanishads and performing religious services.

Kshatriyas were number two, because they were ready to sacrifice even their life to defend the people from external aggression and internal crimes. They had the quality to do self-sacrifice, show courage and skill in warfare, maintain a moral and social order in the society by a punishment system and facilitate Brahmins to focus on the pursuit of liberation. This quality was called a mixture of *Sattvik* and *Rajasik*. Their natural profession was governance and warfare.

Thus unlike Buddhism and Jainism which later developed a doctrine of non-violence even in the face of aggression, Hinduism supports violence to defend one's life, dignity and social justice through the institution of Kshatriyas. Hinduism praises Kshatriyas who were willing to kill the enemy and die in the battlefield in any war fought to defend Dharma (justice). Even gods were constantly fighting with demons to punish them for their sins in Hindu mythologies. In Gita, Bhagwan Krishna asks Arjuna, a Kshatriya, to

fight against his cousin brothers to punish them for the injustices committed by them.

Vaishyas were accorded 3<sup>rd</sup> position, as they showed the quality of perseverance, enterprise, wealth creation and donation to Brahmins and Kshatriyas to enable them to pursue their functions. These qualities were called a mixture of *Rajasik* and *Tamasik*. Their natural profession was farming, cattle rearing and trade.

Shudras were those who were believed to have desire for neither liberation nor warfare nor creation of wealth. They were simply hunter-gatherers content with fulfilment of basic needs of eating and mating. This type of tendency was called *Tamasic* by Aryans. So, if they had to be a part of Aryan society, they had to simply sell their manual labor to Aryans. So, they were given the 4<sup>th</sup> position in the society.

**Manu Smriti** explains why Brahmins were treated as the highest caste:

1.96. *Of created beings the most excellent are said to be those which are animated; of the animated, those which subsist by intelligence; of the intelligent, mankind; and of men, the Brahmins;*

1.97. *Of Brahmins, those learned in the Veda; of the learned, those who recognize the necessity and the manner of performing the prescribed duties; of those who possess this knowledge, those who perform them; of the performers, those who know the Brahman.*

2.155. *The seniority of Brahmins is from sacred knowledge, that of Kshatriyas from valor, that of Vaishyas from wealth in grain (and other goods), but that of Shudras alone from age.*

### **Why did caste system become birth-based?**

If the concepts of spiritual quality and profession were the only factors giving rise to caste system, it would have been hierarchical, but not birth-based. For example, any Shudra, Vaishya or Kshatriya capable of pursuing austerity to attain liberation would then have been treated as a Brahmin and thus would have raised his caste status during his lifetime itself.

But there is another doctrine of Hinduism which made caste system based on birth. That was doctrine of karma.

Birth-based caste system is a logical outcome of doctrine of karma.

According to the doctrine of karma, the present state of a person is the consequence of his actions of previous births.

So, according to this doctrine, if a soul, for example, has taken birth in a Vaishya family, it means that his actions of previous birth had generated certain tendencies and qualities in him – as for example, desire to earn money (*Rajo Guna*), keeping proper accounts, habit of saving money, etc -- which match the tendencies of the Vaishya couple giving birth of this soul.

This logically implies that a soul would be having almost the same tendencies as his parents have

and the soul would be liking the conditions in which he is born. This means every child is born with the best possible conditions available in the world for his unique needs for spiritual development. So, it follows that by nature, he would like to follow the occupation of his parents. Another good reason for following his father's occupation is that he would be benefitted by the knowledge of and practical training from his father.

Based on this logic, the law makers of the period of Classical Hinduism made it a rule that sons must follow the occupation of their fathers. In other words, sons of Brahmins would follow the occupation of Brahmins, those of Kshatriyas would follow the occupations of Kshatriyas and so forth. This is exactly what birth-based caste system is.

But, it may be argued that even if it is presumed that the newly-born soul would have the natural tendency to follow his father's occupation due to his past life karma, should he not be given freedom to change his occupation in the present life, if he wants?

Thinkers of the period of Classical Hinduism believed that this should not be allowed, because they believed that the doctrine of karma would not make any mistake – the very fact that a child is born from a father whose occupation is 'X', means that the inherent tendencies and qualities of the soul based on his karma of the previous birth, was matching exactly with the requirements of occupation 'X'.

Suppose, an army commander has 100 soldiers. An aptitude test is conducted for all the soldiers about the kind of warfare they like most. As a result, 4 groups emerge. Each of these groups like one particular type of warfare most. The first group likes operation of tanks, the second group likes operation of surface-to-air missiles, the third group likes digging trenches and the fourth likes to take care of the communication network between the commander and soldiers on battle front. They are all trained accordingly.

One day, the fight with the enemy starts. Each group of soldiers was assigned duties as per their training. Now, in the middle of the battle, the third group wants to do the work of the first group. Should that be allowed? Will changing the role of groups not create chaos and defeat?

Similarly, thinkers of this period were not in favor of changing occupations in this life, once the soul has chosen parents on the basis of past karma, capabilities and qualities. They believed that it would not be right to interfere in the operation of the natural laws of karma, which was made by God (Bhagwan). But this argument was wrong. We will discuss why this argument was wrong under the sub-chapter 5E [Harmful effects of Hinduism].

### **What happened when a profession was not in demand or had become outdated in the then economy?**

Caste system was flexible enough to change according to the demands of the economy. In adverse situations, Brahmins were allowed to take up the professions of Kshatriya and Vaishyas; Kshatriyas were

allowed to take up the professions of Brahmins and Vaishyas; Vaishyas were allowed to take up the profession of Kshatriyas and Shudras and Shudras were allowed to take up the profession of Vaishyas.

Mahabharata (Shanti Parva, Section 295) says:

*When the Shudra is unable to obtain his living by service of the three other orders, then trade, rearing of cattle, and the practice of the mechanical arts are lawful for him to follow....*

Bhagwat Purana says:

11.17.47 *If a Brahmin cannot support himself through his regular duties and is thus suffering, he may adopt the occupation of a Vaishya (merchant) and overcome his destitute condition by buying and selling material things. If he continues to suffer extreme poverty even as a merchant, then he may adopt the occupation of a Kshatriya, taking sword in hand. But he cannot in any circumstances become like a Shudra, accepting an ordinary master.*

11.17.48 *A king or other member of the royal order (Kshatriya) who cannot maintain himself by his normal occupation may act as a Vaishya, may live by hunting or may act as a Brahmin by teaching others Vedic knowledge. But he may not under any circumstances adopt the profession of a Shudra.*

### **Were Shudras allowed to worship Bhagwan and be devoted to Him?**

Of course! Hinduism has always wanted that maximum people, irrespective of their castes, should pray, worship and be devoted to Bhagwan or seek liberation.

Gita says clearly:

9.32. *For, taking refuge in Me, they also, who, O Arjuna, may be of sinful birth -- women, Vaishyas as well as Shudras -- attain the Supreme Goal!*

Bhagwat Purana says:

3.33.6 *To say nothing of the spiritual advancement of persons who see the Supreme Person face to face, even a person born in a family of dog-eaters immediately becomes eligible to perform Vedic sacrifices if he once utters the holy name of the Supreme Personality of Godhead or chants about Him, hears about His pastimes, offers Him obeisance or even remembers Him.*

7.7.54 *O my friends, O sons of demons, everyone, including you (the celestial musicians and demons), the unintelligent women, Shudras and cowherd men, the birds, the lower animals and the sinful living entities, can revive his original, eternal spiritual life and exist forever simply by accepting the principles of bhakti yoga (path of liberation through devotion to Bhagwan) .*

In fact, during Bhakti Movement, several men, though born in a Shudra family, were revered for their enlightenment, as for example – Namdev, Dadu, Raydas, Charan Das, Garib Das, Maluk Das, Gadge Maharaj, Kanaka Das, Rajjab etc.

## Arguments of apologists to defend Hinduism against the allegations of mistreatment of Shudras under the caste system:

Hindu apologists feel uncomfortable that Hinduism has got associated with the unethical and inhuman institution of caste system. So, they come up with several arguments to defend Hinduism for its caste system, such as –

Caste system was a product of ‘culture’, not Hinduism;

Caste system was simply a division of labor based on one’s quality and profession – unfortunately it slid into birth-based practice due to greed of Brahmins;

But both the arguments are false. Let me refute them.

**As to the first argument**, even in Rig Veda, there are numerous references of enmity with the local Dravidians and Vedas are nothing but prayers to gods to punish those enemies. It was this hostility which later was philosophized and converted into caste system with the help of other fundamental beliefs of Hinduism – belief in liberation, immortality of soul, rebirth and doctrine of karma. This is why all the basic Hindu religious texts are replete with references to and justifications for the hierarchical caste system. So, while the beginning of hostility of Aryans with Dravidians might have been instinctive and a part of general human culture, it was soon transformed into a Hindu institution by Vedas, Smritis, Puranas and other texts. Thus, caste system became very much a part of Hinduism. It therefore cannot be brushed aside as a part of culture alone.

**As to the second argument**, Hindu apologists quote the following verse of Gita to say that caste system was basically a simple division of labor based on personal qualities and occupation, not on the basis of birth:

Gita 4.13

*The fourfold Varna has been created by Me according to the differentiation of one’s quality and occupation; though I am the author thereof, know Me as the non-doer and immutable.*

But if the caste system was merely a division of labor based on one’s quality and occupation only without any implication of spiritual hierarchy, why does Gita itself regard the castes of Vaisyas and Shudras as sinful? Read the following verse of Gita (9.32):

*For, taking refuge in Me, they also, who, O Arjuna, may be of sinful birth -- women, Vaishyas as well as Shudras -- attain the Supreme Goal!*

So, here, ‘Bhagwan’ Krishna is saying that the very caste of Vaishyas and Shudras are sinful, but they too can, in principle, attain liberation by devotion to Bhagwan.

All the Hindu scriptures of the Classical period – from Ramayana to Mahabharata to Smritis to

Puranas -- are full of references to a hierarchical system of caste in which Brahmins were the most respected and Shudras were looked down upon. A mere division of labor based on only one's action and quality cannot lead to such concept of hierarchy.

Caste system was also not the creation of a few selfish Brahmins – in fact, they themselves were subject to caste restrictions. Brahmins remained extremely poor, as they were supposed to live a contented life with just bare necessities fulfilled. This is what Manu Smriti says about possessions of a Brahmin:

*4.7. He may either possess enough to fill a granary, or a store filling a grain-jar; or he may collect what suffices for three days, or make no provision for the morrow.*

*4.8. Among these four Brahmin householders, each later-named must be considered more distinguished, and through his virtue to have conquered the world more completely.*

So, making no provision for tomorrow was the best ideal for a Brahmin.

Besides, Manu Smriti (4.4 to 4.6) lays down for a Brahmin the following order of means of livelihood (from best to worst): 1. gleaning of corn from the field after harvesting, 2. accepting charities which are given to him unasked, 3. begging, 4. agriculture, and 5. trade and money-lending.

With such extremely modest means of livelihood, how can one allege that Brahmins created caste system for selfish interests such as for wealth or power?

In fact during the last two stages of life – Vanprastha and Sanyas Ashram – Brahmins (as well as the other two ‘upper’ castes) – were supposed to live the life of an ascetic. So, how can we say that they were driven by greed or ego to harass Shudras?

Economically and politically, Brahmins have always been very weak. It was their commitment to spirituality which earned them respect from the society. They had no vested interests in birth-based caste system. They simply worked out the doctrine of karma propounded by Upanishads, which logically led to the caste system. Of course, in practice, some Brahmins must have exploited their privileged position to make money, but in principle, this sort of practice was never sanctioned by any scripture.

### **But, was such a birth-based caste system fair to Shudras?**

Hindu thinkers believed that such a system would be fair for everyone. This is because everyone had the freedom to do good karma in the present life. The reward of better birth was expected to follow automatically in the next birth. This is why Manu Smriti says:

*9.335. A Shudra who is pure, serves his superiors, is gentle in speech, free from pride, and always seeks refuge with Brahmins, attains in his next life a higher caste.*

Similarly, if a Brahmin was doing bad karma in the present life, he would be born in a lower caste in next life.

But the fact is that caste system was not fair to Shudras. They were looked down upon; one segment of Shudras (hunters, dead body disposers) were made even untouchable; they were denied education; they were not allowed to have wealth; they were given harsher punishment than other castes for the same crime; they were not allowed to marry women of other castes and so on.

All this was due to the hangover of the hostility between Aryans and Shudras. This hangover lingered for centuries. But as Upanishadic vision sank into the psyche of the masses, the caste-based hostility gradually got moderated over a period of time. The period when Smritis were composed was closer to the period of composition of Vedas. Hence, Smritis are relatively harsher on Shudras. Puranas were written later. Hence Puranas are relatively softer on Shudras and they emphasize more on liberation, devotion and asceticism.

### **Caste system during Bhakti Movement and Modern period**

During Bhakti Movement, several men from Shudra caste became enlightened and they were revered by all castes of Hindu society – as, for example, Namdev, Dadu, Raydas, Charan Das, Garib Das, Maluk Das, Gadge Maharaj, Kanaka Das, Rajjab, etc.

All poet-saints of this period and of later period declared that a person of any caste could attain liberation by devotion to God; and that differences in profession do not make anyone superior or inferior.

This is what some well-known thinkers of Modern Hinduism have said on caste system:

Swami Vivekananda [in “Swami Vivekananda on India and Her Problems” -- CASTE PROBLEM IN INDIA]:

*In religion there is no caste. A man from the highest caste and a man from the lowest may become a monk in India and the two castes become equal. The caste system is opposed to the religion of Vedanta....*

*The plan in India is to make everybody Brahmin, the Brahmin being the ideal of humanity. By the Brahmin ideal what do I mean? I mean the ideal Brahmin-ness in which worldliness is altogether absent and true wisdom is abundantly present. That is the ideal of the Hindu race.*

*The son of a Brahmin is not necessarily always a Brahmin; though there is every possibility of his being one, he may not become so. The Brahmin caste and the Brahmin quality are two distinct things.*

So, Vivekananda denounces birth-based privileges of castes. He clearly says that even if one is born in a Brahmin family, one may not have the quality of Brahmin-ness. He also condemns the hierarchical structure of caste system implying superiority of one caste over the other.

According to Vivekananda, if just birth-based hierarchy associated with caste system is removed, it becomes an efficient system of division of labor. In this form, caste system is natural and good.

But as I have demonstrated earlier, hierarchy is the essence of the caste system. Without it, the

original idea behind this institution – that the whole society should be motivated to strive for attainment of liberation by giving maximum respect to Brahmins – would become meaningless.

In fact, Vivekananda's condemnation of hierarchy is very superficial, as he himself advocates that all non-Brahmins should strive to become like a Brahmin. Only if one caste is considered superior to others, others will strive to become like the superior caste. This is hierarchy! So he brings the hierarchy from the backdoor, when he says [in "Swami Vivekananda on India and Her Problems" -- CASTE PROBLEM IN INDIA]:

*To the non-Brahmin castes I say, wait, be not in a hurry. Do not seize every opportunity of fighting the Brahmin, because as I have shown; you are suffering from your own fault. Who told you to neglect spirituality and Sanskrit learning? What have you been doing all this time? Why have you been indifferent? Why do you now fret and fume because somebody else had more brains, more energy, more pluck and go than you? Instead of wasting your energies in vain discussions and quarrels in the newspapers, instead of fighting and quarrelling in your own homes - which is sinful - use all your energies in acquiring the culture which the Brahmin has, and the thing is done. Why do you not become Sanskrit scholars? ...The moment you do these things, you are equal to the Brahmin! That is the secret power in India.*

So, Vivekananda's views on caste system is self-contradictory! He condemns hierarchy, but praises the profession of one caste over those of others!!

Mahatma Gandhi too condemned the hierarchy of the caste system:

Young India, 4-6-1931, page 129

*Assumption of superiority by any person over any other is a sin against God and man. Thus caste, in so far as it connotes distinctions in status, is an evil.*

All contemporary Hindu thinkers such as Sri Sri Ravi Shankar, Swami Ramdev etc have also condemned the concept of birth-based or profession-based superior or inferior status of a person.

But none of them have realized that so long as the concept of hierarchy of the 3 gunas and doctrine of karma is believed, caste system with its birth-based hierarchical structure would logically follow. They do not want to touch the fundamentals of Hinduism (doctrine of Guna and karma), but want to dismantle its logical outcome – the caste system!! This merely exposes their superficial understanding of Hinduism.

## 9. Lower status of women

According to Hinduism, the supreme goal of human life is to attain liberation. Nothing is dearer than liberation for a Hindu. So, Hinduism tried to design a society whose all laws and institutions motivate every Hindu to keep on moving towards liberation. By the same logic, any person or institution which

obstructed the journey towards liberation was condemned.

Hindu thinkers must have observed that women are generally not interested in actively pursuing liberation as their goal; they are too much involved in local and immediate issues – management of house, sex, children, security, comfort, entertainment and so on. Women were also not observed pondering in solitude on the meaning of life and liberation. They hardly ever doubted or challenged the concept of liberation Hindu men were so obsessed with.

Hindu thinkers also realized that association with women leads to attachment, sex and family, all of which were obstacles in the way to liberation.

Moreover, Hindu society remained poor due to its anti-wealth attitude, as explained earlier in this sub-chapter while explaining the four values of life. In a poor patriarchal society, the economic value of a woman is bound to be less than that of a man. A woman had to leave her parents' house after marriage – so parents, especially if they are poor, naturally did not want to invest their limited money on her education or earning-skill development, as she would not provide them income after her marriage. In any case, she would not be able to produce wealth, if the economy is agricultural, where hard muscular man-power was required to clear forests, plough farms, irrigate crops and process harvested crop.

Even in her husband's house, most of the time she would remain pregnant – so she could not go out to do farming or trading.

It is these philosophical and economic considerations which led to female infanticide and giving of dowry at the time of marriage by girls' parents. Even according to 2011 census report, the ratio of males to females in India was 1.06, while world's average is 0.99.

Due to these considerations, women in Hindu society were given subordinate position to men. They were to be kept under control by men.

Thinkers of Classical Hinduism believed that just as Brahmins who are naturally committed to liberation should lead the society, husbands, who are relatively more inclined towards liberation, should lead wives.

These beliefs logically led to immoral conduct towards women resulting in discrimination. For example, they were not considered fit for education, they were not allowed to be financially independent, they were not expected to remarry after the death of their husbands and so on. We will discuss the details of unfair treatment of women and expose the falsity of the assumptions behind such practices in the sub-chapter 5E [Harmful effects of Hinduism].

Hindu religious books are full of condemnation of women for their excessive love for sex, wealth and male attention:

Mahabharata, Anusasana Parva (Book 13, Section 38)

*Panchachuda (a woman) said to Sage Narada, 'Even if high-born and endued with beauty and possessed of protectors, women wish to transgress the restraints assigned to them. This fault truly stains them, O Narada! There is nothing else that is more sinful than women. Verily, women, are the root of all faults. That is, certainly known to you, O Narada!*

*Women, even when possessed of husbands having fame and wealth, of handsome features and completely obedient to them, are prepared to disregard them if they get the opportunity.*

Mahabharata, Anusasana Parva (Book 13, Section 43)

*Bhism said to Yudhisthir:*

*Even after women have consented to live with one, they are prepared to abandon him for entering into engagements with others. They are never satisfied with one person of the opposite sex, O son of Pandu! Men should feel no affection for them.*

*Manu Smriti clearly says:*

*5.154. Though destitute of virtue, or seeking pleasure elsewhere, or devoid of good qualities, yet a husband must be constantly worshipped as a god by a faithful wife.*

*2.213. It is the nature of women to seduce men in this (world); for that reason the wise are never unguarded in (the company of) females.*

*Bhagwat Purana says:*

*3.31.39. One who aspires to reach the culmination of yoga and has realized his self by rendering service unto Me should never associate with an attractive woman, for such a woman is declared in the scripture to be the gateway to hell for the advancing devotee.*

*3.31.40. The woman, created by the Lord, is the representation of Maya (illusion), and one who associates with such Maya by accepting services must certainly know that this is the way of death, just like a blind well covered with grass.*

*Even Gita condemns women as sinful:*

*9.32. For, taking refuge in Me, they also, who, O Arjuna, may be of sinful birth -- women, Vaishyas as well as Shudras -- attain the Supreme Goal!*

Modern scientific research proves that women are less sexual or at the most, equally sexual compared to men. So why did thinkers of this period imagine women to be horny all the time?

The reason is suppression of sex, especially in men seeking liberation. It was presumed by Hindu thinkers that sex saps energy and causes attachment with women. So, naturally they had to suppress normal sexual desires. Except in the stage of householders, one was not supposed to have sex at any other time – be in Brahmacharya, Vanprastha or Sanyas Ashram. Even as a householder, he was supposed to have sex only for begetting children, not for pleasure.

But human biology has not evolved that way. About 100 million sperm cells are produced by a healthy adult human male body every day. Once they mature, there is an urge to release them. This is the beginning of sexual desire. The system of production of such a large number of sperms has evolved due to male competition to fertilize a female egg. During evolutionary process, the higher the number of sperms a male could deposit near a female egg, the higher was the possibility of his success in fertilizing the egg and transmitting genes to the offspring. But more sperms induced desire for more frequent sex. Hence the powerful urge in men to have sex most of the time!

By trying to suppress this powerful desire, Hindu men, especially monks, became abnormally sexual and started ‘seeing horny women’ everywhere. They became so excessively sexual that even on the slightest stimulation, they would ejaculate. This pathetic condition gets reflected in the religious texts themselves.

See some samples here:

Bhagwat Purana 6.18.6

*As soon as Mitra and Varuna (gods of Hindu mythology) saw Urvashi, the celestial society girl, they discharged semen, which they preserved in an earthen pot.*

Vamana Purana

*As Uma touched Bhagwan Shiva's feet, Lord Brahma got a chance to have a glimpse of her beautiful face. He was so infatuated by her divine beauty that he ejaculated.*

These stories show the suppressed sexuality of people of that time, especially of the story-writers. Here gods are symbols expressing story writer’s secret wish! He was most probably some celibate. A man would ejaculate just by seeing a beautiful woman, only if he has deprived himself of sex for too long. Under such conditions, he would subconsciously wish to have sex all the time but to protect his asceticism, he would project it as if every woman is trying to seduce him to satisfy her ‘insatiable desire for sex’!

However, once the dangers of getting attached to women for aspirants of liberation understood, Hinduism gives full respect to the crucial role women play in perpetuation of human species and nurturing of children. Her motherhood is specially venerated. Manu Smriti says:

*2.145. The teacher is ten times more venerable than a sub-teacher, the father a hundred times more than the teacher, but the mother a thousand times more than the father.*

*3.55. Women must be honored and adorned by their fathers, brothers, husbands, and brothers-in-law, who desire (their own) welfare.*

*3.56. Where women are honored, there the gods are pleased; but where they are not honored, no sacred rite yields rewards.*

3.57. Where the female relations live in grief, the family soon wholly perishes; but that family, where they are happy, always prospers.

3.60. In that family, where the husband is pleased with his wife and the wife with her husband, happiness will assuredly be lasting.

## 10. Idol Worship

Early Vedas worshipped various gods for material favors, while Upanishads aimed at attainment of liberation, which was essentially Self-realization or Brahman-realization.

Aryans had been worshipping Vedic gods ever since they came to India or even before and they wanted to continue that way during Upanishadic period as well as Classical period, because belief in such personal gods gave them hope against adversities of life. Most of these Aryans were not interested in the goal of Self-realization set by Upanishads. But the Upanishadic vision was so profound that it could not be ignored.

So, post-Upanishadic Hinduism (Classical Hinduism) combines these two opposite thought trends.

In order to do this synthesis, a new belief was developed – the God of Upanishads – Brahman – was now made for the first time, responsive to human prayers and worship, while still constituting the innermost self of all beings, which could be experienced through meditation.

They called such an anthropomorphic Brahman – ‘Bhagwan’, ‘Paramatma’ or ‘Ishvar’.

This was a completely new doctrine. Upanishadic Brahman was innermost self of all beings, impersonal and simply existed as ultimate reality. For the first time, it was made personal and was believed to respond to human prayers and worship.

This philosophical transformation of Hindu God from Brahman to Bhagwan was justified by the following argument: since all creatures originated from Brahman, they are all like His children. So, just as parents take care of their children, so, Brahman too must be caring for His children. So, if anyone sincerely called for His help in prayer, He would surely respond.

So, now Vedic worship to various gods was transformed into worship of one God – Bhagwan.

It was believed that if Bhagwan is sincerely worshipped, He would resolve the daily problems of life such as poverty, disease, premature death, inability to have babies etc.

A doctrine was also propounded that if a devotee of Bhagwan worshipped Him and did penance for Him long enough, Bhagwan would be pleased to grant him any boon he wishes. This doctrine was expressed in thousands of stories of Puranas where a person does penance, gets a boon, misuses its power and then gets killed by Bhagwan or his associates (smaller gods). Sometimes, the penance performed by a good person is shown to bestow him the power to curse a demon/disrespectful person, heal the sick or grant boon of progeny to childless couples and so on.

It is this belief in personal Bhagwan's powers to do good to humans which gave rise to beliefs in idol worship.

Since everybody needed to overcome the adversities of life, the idea of worship of Bhagwan, who would respond to our prayers for help in adversities, became instantly popular during the period of Classical Hinduism and remains extremely popular to this day.

Though, due to Upanishadic influence, Gita belittles worshipping Bhagwan for gaining material favors, it nevertheless does assure worshippers that Bhagwan would fulfill their material desires too.

In Gita, 'Bhagwan' Krishna says:

*7.20 Those whose intelligence has been stolen by material desires surrender unto demigods and follow the particular rules and regulations of worship according to their own natures.*

*7.21 I am in everyone's heart as the super soul. As soon as one desires to worship some demigod, I make his faith steady so that he can devote himself to that particular deity.*

*7.22 Endowed with such a faith, he endeavors to worship a particular demigod and obtains his desires. But in actuality these benefits are bestowed by Me alone.*

*7.23 Men of small intelligence worship the demigods, and their fruits are limited and temporary. Those who worship the demigods go to the sphere of demigods, but My devotees ultimately reach Me.*

Here, Gita is saying that one should not seek material favors by worshipping gods, as the reward thus obtained is limited and it distracts one from the path of liberation. However, if someone still wants those things, Bhagwan would fulfil the desire.

But for worshipping by a common man, a concrete image of God is required -- everybody cannot think of an abstract God. So as a symbol of the abstract God, idols were conceived and made. Idol worship became very popular for its obvious imagined advantages. So idols started getting installed in special places called temples as well as homes. People started praying and worshipping God through idols daily regularly. It was the transformation of Vedic offering of food to gods through fire. Vedic worship thus became idol worship.

**But why does Hinduism idol-worship so many gods and goddesses instead of only one Bhagwan?**

This is because Hindus believe that there must be different gods and goddesses with different functions in the same way in which different parts of the body perform different functions. Of course, they also believe that all gods are essentially the same Bhagwan in different forms.

## **11. Incarnation of Bhagwan**

The belief in incarnation of Bhagwan was the logical extension of the belief in a caring Bhagwan. If

Bhagwan is caring, He must also help His devotees overcome evil. So, it was believed by Classical Hinduism that Bhagwan takes animal or human form to eliminate powerful evil forces and by living a real human life, provides a model for human conduct.

While Abrahamic religions believe that God sends messengers time to time, Hinduism believes that God Himself takes animal or human forms to eliminate evil from this world, whenever evil increases too much.

Krishna, who himself is believed to be an incarnation of Bhagwan, says in Gita:

*4.7-8. O Arjuna, whenever there is a decline of righteousness, and rise of unrighteousness, I manifest Myself! For the protection of the good, for the destruction of the wicked, and for the establishment of righteousness, I am born in every age.*

Agni Purana explains what incarnation (Avtara) is and lists all the incarnations of Bhagwan. Here is what it says:

*Bhagwan's purpose in taking incarnation is to destroy evil on Earth and establish righteousness. Vishnu is the preserver of the universe and it is therefore He who took various incarnations. Vishnu has already had nine such incarnations and the tenth and final incarnation is due in the future. These ten incarnations of Vishnu are as follows --*

*(1) Matsya avatara or fish incarnation*

*(2) Kurma avatara or turtle incarnation*

*(3) Varaha avatara or boar incarnation*

*(4) Narasimha avatara - an incarnation in the form of a being who*

*was half-man and half-lion*

*(5) Vamana avatara or incarnation as a dwarf man*

*(6) Parashurama*

*(7) Rama*

*(8) Krishna*

(9) *Buddha*

(10) *Kalki -- this is the incarnation that is yet to come.*

The Epics – Ramayana and Mahabharata – tell the story of incarnation of Bhagwan in different formats. In Ramayana, Bhagwan Rama, an incarnation in human form, kills the demon Ravana and all his associates. In Mahabharata, Bhagwan Krishna, another incarnation of God, kills, directly or through his followers, several wicked kings. Even Pandavas, Draupadi and Dhristadyumna – the heroes of Mahabharata and followers of Bhagwan Krishna -- are believed to be born directly from different gods/goddesses, not as normal humans. This underlines the prevalent belief that men, unaided by gods or Bhagwan, simply cannot handle powerful evil forces by themselves!

Several Puranas such as Agni, Vishnu, Bhagwat, Kurma, Vayu, Matsya, Markandeya etc give accounts of ‘avatars of Bhagwan’ (incarnation of God) in which Bhagwan takes animal or human form to help good people and kill mischief-makers.

The battles between gods and demons described in Puranas also is an extension of the same logic. Those gods always manage to defeat and outwit demons. Thus goodness always prevailed according to these Hindu scriptures!

Making stories about incarnation of Bhagwan to kill mischief-makers appears to be an extreme case of invoking divine power to kill mere mortals.

**So, what could be the reasons for emergence of the doctrine of incarnation of Bhagwan?**

Belief in incarnation of Bhagwan may have arisen because two very disturbing developments, from the point of view of Hinduism, took place during this period – foreign aggression and rise of new religions (Buddhism and Jainism).

FOREIGN AGGRESSION:

Persian and Greek conquests of north-west India – In 530 BCE, Cyrus, king of Persian Achaemenid Empire, crossed Hindukush Mountains and demanded acceptance of his suzerainty from the local tribes of Gandhara and Kamboja, then parts of India. By 520 BCE, king Darius I of Persian Empire ruled most of the north-west India (present day eastern Afghanistan and Pakistan). Persian kings ruled the area for about two centuries.

Then by 326 BCE, Greek adventurer Alexander conquered Persian Empire and reached the north-west frontiers of Indian subcontinent. There he defeated Hindu king Porus and conquered much of Punjab. However, due to revolt of his soldiers, Alexander had to return to Greece from that point.

Islamic invasion –

712 CE – Muhammad Bin Qasim captured Sindh by defeating Hindu King Dahir. Bin Qasim used a huge catapult to destroy the Hindu fort, a technique Hindus were not aware of.

1001-1027 CE – Plunders of Mahmud of Ghazni – he sacked and plundered Multan, Kangra, Delhi, Kannauj, Mathura, Thaneshwar, Gwalior, Kashmir, Lahore, Somnath. No Hindu king could stop him from plundering.

The intolerant and violent behavior of Muslim invaders and rulers have been chronicled by Muslim historians themselves, as for example, in the book titled “*The history of India as told by its own historians*” compiled by HM Elliot, “*Baburnama*” written by Babur and “*Ta'rikh al-Hind*” written by Al Beruni, etc. In these books, Muslim writers have praised Islamic rulers for following Islam and killing infidels, plundering their wealth, imposing Jizya tax and destroying their temples etc.

These foreign rulers did not believe in Hinduism and did not respect Brahmins. So, shaken by these plunders, Brahmins liked to believe that Bhagwan would come to punish these ‘wicked’ rulers. So, they started fabricating stories of incarnation of Bhagwan to assure the masses that they will be helped by Bhagwan Himself through direct incarnations. They made up several stories where Bhagwan took birth in human or animal form to kill powerful demons and bad kings in the past and assured Hindu masses that Bhagwan will take birth to help devout Hindus again!

#### THE RISE OF BUDDHISM AND JAINISM:

These new religions strongly criticized Hindu beliefs in Vedic worship of various personal gods, sacrifices made to appease gods, caste system, concept of Bhagwan and idol worship. One of the greatest Mauryan kings – Ashoka Maurya (304-232 BCE) had become a Buddhist.

The fact that Buddha is shown as one of the avatars of Bhagwan in order to misguide people (!) shows the anguish and frustration of Hindu thinkers.

Bhagwat Purana (1.3.24) says:

“*Then, in the beginning of Kali-yuga (the present era), Bhagwan will appear as Buddha, the son of Anjana, in the province of Gaya, just for the purpose of deluding those who are envious of the faithful Hindus.*”

Agni Purana says:

“*The ninth avatar of Vishnu was Buddha and the tenth will be Kalki.*

*Many years ago, there was a war between gods and demons in which demons managed to defeat gods. Then gods went running to Bhagwan Vishnu for protection and Vishnu told them that Mayamoha would be born as Buddha, the son of Shuddhodana. Such were the illusions that Buddha created, that the demons left the path indicated by the Vedas and became Buddhists. These dastardly creatures performed ceremonies that were a sure ticket to hell.*”

So, because of the powerful influence of Buddha, Hindu thinkers were forced first to make him an incarnation of Bhagwan but out of their frustration, they tried to malign him by making false allegations against him that he was born to misguide anti-Hindus!

Onslaught on Hinduism from foreign aggression and rise of new religions must have terrified Hindu thinkers. They had to do something extraordinary to restore faith of the masses in Hinduism. So, they came out with this audacious doctrine of incarnation of Bhagwan. They believed and propagated that Bhagwan will take birth in India to establish Hinduism whenever there is a danger to it!

They first fabricated stories to ‘prove’ that Bhagwan was born in various animal or human forms in the past, as for example, in the form of Rama as stated in Ramayana and in the form of Krishna as stated in Mahabharata. These fabricated stories were propagated as historical truth to convince the gullible masses that Bhagwan is indeed concerned with their religion and that he may incarnate again to punish the wicked and reward the virtuous!

The doctrine of avatar of Bhagwan implied that you may just believe in Hinduism even on the face of danger, because Bhagwan will come to your rescue and do the dirty works of killing bad people! So, while Bhagwan does the dirty work, His devotees could enjoy the luxury of remaining non-violent and glued to the goal of liberation!!

However, neither idol worship worked nor Bhagwan was born in human form in India to defend Hinduism. Worshippers of Bhagwan remained poor and helpless. India remained weak in comparison to foreign invaders – Persians, Greeks and Muslims -- who came and plundered the wealth of temples and royal treasures at their will. The hope of Brahmins that Bhagwan would defend Hindus, naturally did not materialize.

Different Puranas give different accounts of avatars of Bhagwan. These contradictions show that these descriptions were being fabricated by different writers in different times. We will examine the falsity of these beliefs in the sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism].

## 12. Cycle of 4 ages of declining religiosity

According to this belief, 4 different periods with varying degree of religiosity move cyclically. These 4 periods are – Sat Yuga (Four-legged Age), Treta Yuga (Three-legged Age), Dvapar Yuga (Two-legged Age) and Kali Yuga (One-legged Age).

Sat Yuga is believed to be the best period for moral and spiritual qualities – it is like a normal 4 footed animal, while Kali Yuga is considered to be the worst, like a one-footed animal. After Kali Yuga, Sat Yuga starts again and so forth.

All Hindu thinkers of this period agree that the present time is Kali Yuga, the worst time. Kali Yuga is generally believed to have begun from 3102 BCE, the year in which ‘Bhagwan’ Krishna is believed to

have died.

It was held by Classical Hinduism that as time moves from Sat Yuga to Kali Yuga,

People become less moral

People become less religious

People become less healthy

Rulers become exploitative and corrupt

Because of increasing sins of humans, the climate of Earth becomes more hostile

Here are some quotes describing the evil nature of Kali Yuga:

Mahabharata (Van Parva, Section 187-189)

*(Sage Vaisampayana said to Yudhishthir): ...In the Satya age, everything was free from deceit, guile, avarice and covetousness; and morality like a bull was among men, with all the four legs complete. In the Treta age, sin took away one of these legs and morality had three legs. In the Dwapara age, sin and morality are mixed half and half; and accordingly morality is said to have two legs only. In the Kali age, morality mixed with three parts of sin lives by the side of men. Accordingly morality then is said to wait on men, with only a fourth part of itself remaining. Know, O Yudhishthira, that the period of life, the energy, intellect and the physical strength of men decrease in every Yuga! O Pandava, Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaishyas and Shudras (in the Kali age) will practice morality and virtue deceitfully and men in general would deceive their fellows by spreading the net of virtue. .... And wedded to avarice, wrath, ignorance and lust, men will entertain animosities towards one another, desiring to take one another's lives.*

*Brahmins, Kshatriyas and Vaishyas with their virtue contracted and divested of asceticism and truth will all be reduced to an equality with Shudras. ....*

*And, O ruler of men, intellectual darkness will envelop the whole Earth, and the life of man will then be measured by sixteen years, on attaining to which age death will ensue. And girls of five or six years of age will bring forth children and boys of seven or eight years of age will become fathers.*

*.... And the inhabited regions of the Earth will be afflicted with dearth and famine, and the highways will be filled with lustful men and women of evil repute.*

Bhagwat Purana (12.2.1-7)

*Sri Suka said: 'And then, O King, will day after day under the strong influence of the time [of Kali-yuga] the religiousness, truthfulness, cleanliness, tolerance and mercy as well as the duration of life, the strength and the memory become ruined. In the age of Kali, wealth alone will be the sign of a good birth, behavior and qualities. Might will be the only criterion in determining what would be just*

and right. Marital relations will be based on superficial attraction, in business deceit will be the norm ... life's purpose would be to fill one's belly .....

Vishnu Purana

Envy and jealousy were unknown in Satya Yuga and everyone was happy. There were no superiors and inferiors and all individuals were equally healthy and equally handsome. There were no fixed places for people to live in, no cities and no villages. Men lived in mountains and on shores of oceans. In Sat Yuga, water was always freely available.

This was no longer the case in Treta Yuga. Water only became available when it rained. Rain was unknown earlier. And as it rained, trees began to grow. People lived on these trees. The fruit from these trees provided the sustenance required to make a living. But gradually, anger and jealousy came to be known and many of the wonderful trees disappeared as mankind picked up evil ways. However, enough trees were left to ensure that people did not die of starvation. They lived on honey gathered from the trees. Although men looked on Satya Yuga with nostalgia, ill-health and disease continued to be unknown even in Treta Yuga.

But towards the end of Treta Yuga, people became really sinful. All the trees disappeared. To make a living, mankind had to resort to agriculture and animal husbandry. The weather became inclement and seasons like summer, monsoon and winter led to hardship. Notions of property were also introduced. Individuals appropriated mountains, rivers, land, trees and herbs as their own. To instill righteousness in the minds of people, the principles of varnashrama Dharma were set out towards the end of Treta Yuga.

In Dvapara Yuga, hatred, anger and jealousy became much more common. Fighting started. It was then that Veda Vyasa spread amongst ordinary people, the knowledge that was in the Vedas, by dividing them. Drought, death and disease came to be known in Dvapara Yuga.

In Kali Yuga, fraud is the norm. There are severe droughts and famines; revolutions take place. People are liars and sinners. They are easily angered. They do not respect Brahmins. Brahmins, on their part, forget all about the Vedas and yajnas. Shudras become kings and oppress the Brahmins. Some Shudras shave off their heads and wear saffron clothes. They pretend to be religious teachers. And horror of horrors, people believe in these fraudulent teachers. Women wear hairpins in their hair. As if this alone was not enough, they refuse to obey their husbands. Thieves are everywhere.

The only redeeming feature of Kali Yuga is the fact that even if one worships Bhagwan just a little bit in Kali Yuga, one attains undying big store of merit.

Duration of the 4 Yugas, according to Puranas, is as follows:

Satya Yuga.....17,28,000 Earth years

Treta Yuga ..... 2,96,000 Earth years

Dvapara Yuga..... 8,64,000 Earth years

Kali Yuga..... 4,32,000 Earth years

### **Why did this belief in 4 Yugas originate?**

Since neither idol worship worked nor Bhagwan incarnated to rescue Hinduism from foreign aggression or Buddhism/Jainism, Brahmins panicked.

Besides, the highly ascetic life-style preached by Upanishads was too difficult to be followed by the masses. The fact is that majority of Hindus have always been and perhaps always will be wealth and sex-oriented, not liberation-oriented. Moreover, in a poor society like that of ancient Hindus, morality could not have been followed strictly. When survival is at stake, morality takes a second place.

So, even during the peak of the Upanishadic period, most Hindus must be doing worship of Vedic gods to gain material favor. They must be engaged in all sorts of immoral activities. The same trend must have continued during the period of Classical Hinduism too.

But Brahmin scholars, intoxicated by Upanishadic vision, had presumed that morality and spirituality would pervade all sections of Hindus and every Hindu would finally try to orient his life towards liberation. That did not and could not have happened.

Since this ‘unexpected behavior’ of people was to be explained, Brahmin scholars manufactured the belief in the cyclical nature of human era.

They now declared that the best time was in the past and the present age (Kali Yuga) is the worst in which nothing good can happen. So, according to them, ‘bad’ things are bound to happen in Kali Yuga, do whatever you can!

But they assured the masses that Bhagwan will come to end the present worst age --Kali Yuga by taking an incarnation by the name of Kalki. He will eliminate all evil and then Sat Yuga, the best period will start all over again.

So, Brahmins now blamed the time itself for the ‘bad behavior of people’ and other misfortunes of Hinduism!

With this sophistry, it was easy to make gullible Hindus accept their pathetic material conditions and immorality all around with patience and indifference.

### **13. Rise of Bhakti**

As explained earlier, the concept of Bhagwan was developed by Hinduism as a reconciliation process between two opposite trends of thoughts – Vedic and Upanishadic. Bhagwan was Vedic enough to respond to human prayers (like other gods such as Indra, Agni etc) and Upanishadic enough to be formless

innermost core of self. This is why the concept of Bhagwan overwhelmed all other concepts of ultimate realities such as Brahman, Purusha etc of Upanishads.

The concept of Bhagwan gave rise to a new way of connecting to the spiritual self – Bhakti (devotion to Bhagwan). It was believed that if an aspirant is completely devoted to Bhagwan and aspires for nothing else except oneness with Him, Bhagwan is going to help him out in all possible ways including resolving his personal material problems.

Bhakti could be expressed as worshiping, praying, chanting His name, meditating on His name and so on. It was believed that if a person goes on chanting His name continuously, his mind would jump from verbal chanting to mental chanting to stillness of thoughts. Thus, bhakti and meditation would ultimately become one and lead to the state of liberation.

The concept of bhakti became increasingly popular and culminated in Bhakti Movement during medieval period of India. Sikhism was merely an offshoot of this Bhakti Movement. During this period, thousands of Hindus from all castes became devout saints, immersed themselves in the chanting of the name of Bhagwan and claimed to become one with Him. All of them condemned Vedic rituals, caste system and material desires.

To sum up:

Propounders of Classical Hinduism tried to reconcile Vedic and Upanishadic trends of thoughts; filled the theoretical gaps of Upanishads and developed new concepts in changed situations to assure Hindus the validity of Hinduism. The beliefs of Classical Hinduism are followed by Hindus to this day.

## Chapter 5 – Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5B

#### Political and Economic Implications of Hinduism

##### **Political implications of Hinduism - Theocracy**

Political philosophy got crystalized during and after Classical Hinduism.

Ideas about political institutions such as the origin of kingship and duties of a king developed during this period. It was generally believed that Bhagwan created the caste system and a king must be from a Kshatriya caste on the strength of his valor, warfare skills and intelligence. He must protect his subjects from physical aggression by outside aggressors or internal criminals. He was also supposed to respect Brahmins and enforce caste system.

Mahabharata says:

Book 12 (Shantiparva), Section 60

Duties of a king --

*He should protect the people. Always exerting himself for the destruction of robbers and wicked people, he should put forth his prowess in battle. ..*

*Persons conversant with the old scriptures do not applaud the Kshatriya who returns unwounded from battle.*

Manu Smriti too confirms this:

*7.3 For, when these creatures, being without a king, through fear dispersed in all directions, Bhagwan created a king for the protection of this whole (creation).*

*7.20. If the king did not, without tiring, inflict punishment on those worthy to be punished, the stronger would roast the weaker, like fish on a spit;*

*7.35. The king has been created (to be) the protector of the castes (Varna) and orders, who, all according to their rank, discharge their several duties.*

Modern Hindus however realized that the caste system was not compatible with democracy. Caste system mandated that only a person from Kshatriya caste could become a ruler and other castes have no role to play in choosing a ruler or participating in the process of governance. So, Modern Hindus started criticizing caste system and maintained that it was an unwanted accretion and hence must be weeded out from Hinduism. With dismantling of caste system, it was possible for any caste to vote or elect any person

from any caste.

Mahatma Gandhi was the first Hindu thinker who applied the principles of Hinduism in political realm in modern times. As a Hindu, he sincerely believed in the minimization of desires and living a moral and spiritual life in order to move progressively towards liberation. If everyone was a sincere Hindu, there would be no violence in the society and hence there would be no need for any governmental authority to punish perpetrators of violence. So, the best state would be the state of enlightened anarchy. This is what he said in *Young India* on July 2, 1931:

*If national life becomes so perfect as to become self-regulated, no representation becomes necessary. There is then a state of enlightened anarchy. In such a State everyone is his own master. He rules himself in such a manner that he is never a hindrance to his neighbor. In the ideal State, therefore, there is no political power because there is no State. But the ideal is never fully realized in life. Hence the classical statement of Thoreau that that government is the best which governs the least is worthy of consideration.*

He therefore accepted democracy as the next best political institution, as only democracy, in his view, provided maximum freedom and justice to maximum people. He said:

*Political independence having been achieved, the Congress must address itself to the next great task, namely, the establishment of real democracy in the country and a society based on social justice and equality. Such a society must provide every man and woman with equality of opportunity and freedom to work for the unfettered development of his or her personality. This can only be realized when democracy extends from the political to the social and the economic spheres. [Complete Works of Mahatma Gandhi, Volume 97, 16-11-1947]*

This philosophy of Mahatma Gandhi later became the official philosophy of modern India.

However, as I have explained earlier, caste system cannot be denounced unless the fundamental doctrines of Hinduism on Guna and karma are rejected. Caste system is the logical outcome of these two fundamental concepts. Without rejecting them, caste system cannot be eliminated from Hinduism. Condemnation of caste system by modern Hindu thinkers was more out of compulsion of being politically correct in view of the high esteem for democracy in the West, than by any fundamental shift in the stance of Hinduism.

## **Economic philosophy of Hinduism**

Hinduism prescribes minimization of desires and maximization of spiritual efforts in order to attain liberation. Minimization of desires implies that a Hindu should possess minimum possible wealth, just sufficient to meet the bare needs of his family. This doctrine in turn implies minimum surplus wealth or savings. Lack of adequate savings means lack of capital, lack of large-scale production, lack of use of the best technology based on R & D and lack of widespread exchange of goods. So, minimization of desires

would end up in subsistence economy where production is mainly for self-consumption and where consumption itself is minimal. Such an economic system may be called **Minimalism**.

Minimalism and capitalism both support private ownership of means of production and determination of exchange rate of goods by the relative position of demand and supply.

But the fundamental difference between the two systems is that while capitalism aims at maximization of every component of the economy -- profit, wealth, savings, capital investment, use of technology, exchange of goods and consumption, Minimalism wants to minimize each of these factors. Capitalism appreciates wealth and positively strives for it; Minimalism condemns wealth and does not allow the process of production of wealth to grow and become more efficient.

Wealth was condemned by Hinduism because it was considered to be the principal source of attachment, which is an impediment on the path of liberation. So, Hinduism does not condemn poverty. Reducing one's needs and living an extremely simple and austere life was considered a great virtue in Hinduism. This explains why most Brahmins, who were supposed to strive for liberation most sincerely, remained poor.

Bhagwat Purana 7.15.15-16 says:

*15. Even if a man is poor, he should not endeavor to improve his economic condition just to maintain his body and soul together or to become a famous religionist. Just as a great python, although lying in one place, not endeavoring for its livelihood, gets the food it needs to maintain body and soul, one who is desireless also obtains his livelihood without endeavor.*

*16. One who is content and satisfied and who links his activities only to Bhagwan residing in everyone's heart enjoys transcendental happiness without endeavoring for his livelihood. Where is such happiness for a materialistic man who is impelled by lust and greed and who therefore wanders in all directions with a desire to accumulate wealth?*

Since Hinduism does not condemn poverty, it does not support helping the poor at individual and state level. It only recommends helping Brahmins financially at individual level so that they stay focused on liberation without any distraction. It regards poverty and wealth as the result of one's karma of the previous life.

Minimalism implies a subsistence economy. For a pre-industrialized world, this had to be an agricultural economy almost self-contained at village level producing just enough food for all.

This Minimalist Hindu economic philosophy was articulated by Mahatma Gandhi very clearly in his book HIND SWARAJ [WHAT IS TRUE CIVILIZATION?]:

*..., our ancestors dissuaded us from luxuries and pleasures. We have managed with the same kind of plough as existed thousands of years ago. We have retained the same kind of cottages that we had in*

former times and our indigenous education remains the same as before. We have had no system of life-corroding competition. Each followed his own occupation or trade and charged a regulation wage. It was not that we did not know how to invent machinery, but our forefathers knew that, if we set our hearts after such things, we would become slaves and lose our moral fibre.

Thus, Hinduism supports a minimalist economy where all components of economy – desires, demand, savings, capital, technology, research and development, consumption, wealth – are to be minimum. Poverty was considered, in principle, good for the sake of attaining liberation. Wealth was condemned as *Maya-Moha* (illusory attachment).

However, since minimalism is against human nature, majority of modern Hindus desire wealth, though they philosophically keep on believing/saying that the world/wealth is *Maya-Moha* (illusory attachment). They worship goddess Laxmi for wealth, but they somehow persuade themselves that they are yearning for spiritual enlightenment too.

This dilemma is the logical outcome of Hinduism itself. As explained earlier, Vedic Hinduism wanted only material success, while Upanishadic Hinduism wanted only liberation. Classical Hinduism (and Modern Hinduism) tried to reconcile these two opposite view-points. Nowadays, a tiny percentage of Hindus really seek liberation, while the majority seek material success, though outwardly they keep condemning wealth as *Maya-Moha* (illusory attachment).

Helping the poor monetarily at individual level or subsidizing the poor at the state level at the cost of the rich is not a Hindu, but a purely Christian concept.

It is a Christian concept to ask the rich to sell their belongings and distribute them to the poor. It is this concept which logically implies at the state level to punish wealth-producers by taxing them heavily in order to take away their money for distribution to the poor in the form of subsidy.

This Christian concept was adopted wholesale by post-independent India, as Indian intellectuals had got their education from institutions founded and nurtured by European Christian nations.

It is this Christian philosophy which determined the economic policy of the post-Independence India (after 1947).

This Christian attitude to help the poor and condemn the rich got combined with the Hindu condemnation of wealth. This combination expressed itself in a government which started punishing the rich by excessive taxation, over-regulating businesses, undertaking numerous business activities itself and subsidizing the poor heavily. This Christianity-induced populism combined with Hindu Minimalism has now pervaded every aspect of Indian economy resulting in minimization of every aspect of the economy – smaller plots of farming land, smaller farmers, smaller industries, smaller cars, smaller roads, smaller parking places, smaller shops, smaller malls, and so on. This also explains why all political parties in India today are essentially leftists, socialists or populists.

But such socialistic economic policies had a disastrous effect on the economic growth rate of India. To this day, India is still suffering from this Hindu mind set, although some liberalizations in the economy had to be done in 1980s and 1990s due to impending bankruptcy of the economy.

I will discuss the harmful effects of Hinduism on the economic growth in more details in sub-chapter 5E [Harmful effects of Hinduism].

## Chapter 5 – Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5C

#### Falsehood of Hinduism

Hinduism, like all other religions, propounds a world-view. Like all the previous religions examined, Hinduism too presented common sense beliefs of its times as if they were revealed divinely or as if they were eternal truths revealed to super empowered and enlightened yogis.

However, now science has exposed all these claims to be completely false.

The following are the main false beliefs of Upanishadic and Classical Hinduism:

1. The universe is created and destroyed by Brahman cyclically
2. Sequences of creation described by various Hindu texts are mutually contradictory and scientifically false
3. The creation and destruction of the universe goes on cyclically. The present universe was created 2.15 billion years ago and it will be destroyed in next 2.17 billion years by Brahman
4. Planets and stars orbit around pole star; Moon is bigger than Sun; Moon travels faster than Sun; Indian sub-continent is 8 million miles in length and breadth; and so on
5. Souls go on taking rebirth till they are liberated
6. The present life-situation is the result of past karmas
7. Evolution of species takes place by doing good karma
8. Bhagwan takes birth in human form to protect the good and punish the evil.
9. Four successive periods with descending degree of morality and spirituality move cyclically

Let us examine these beliefs one by one.

## 1. The universe is created and destroyed by Brahman cyclically

This Hindu statement has several problems.

First of all, this view presumes that the universe is static and appears today exactly as it came into existence as manifestation of Brahman in the past. This view implies that the universe is not evolving – it is a finished product. This view was widely prevalent all over the world, because this is what normal sense experience shows. Even Einstein believed that the universe was static! Later he realized his mistake and termed it as ‘the greatest blunder of his life’.

According to the latest scientific research, the universe is not static, but expanding and growing. Edwin Hubble, an American astronomer, demonstrated in 1929 with the help of his telescope that there are billions of galaxies other than our Milky Way galaxy and all galaxies are flying away from each other with great speed. Later, it was also found that new galaxies and stars are continuously coming into existence; old galaxies and stars are dying; new planets and moons are getting born; old ones are disappearing; there are also black holes, supernovae, Quasars, and several other types of massive bodies in the universe. The universe is becoming bigger every moment. In short, nothing is static in this universe.

Suppose a seed is sown in the ground. It germinates and becomes a plant. After some years, it starts flowering. After some more time, it starts producing fruits. It goes on flowering and fruiting every year for several decades. Now someone asks: who created the plant? This question is meaningless, because a plant is not a finished and unchanging product. The plant has not been created, but grown and is still growing. Creation or production makes sense only in respect of mechanical or material things. The universe is not mechanical or material; it is expanding, growing and changing all the time due to its own internal dynamics.

Secondly, the process of Big Bang which started the chain of events leading to our present universe is not a conscious process of a super conscious and super powerful entity called Brahman. Though science has not yet understood the forces which triggered our Big Bang, it almost certainly is not triggered by the whim of some Brahman-like super powerful conscious entity. It could be a simple cyclical automatic chain of events (e.g., Big Rip/Big Crunch itself triggering the next Big Bang), having nothing to do with an entity like Brahman consciously manifesting itself cyclically.

To posit Brahman as a conscious super empowered being creating the universe in a jiffy and then looking down upon it, controlling it or helping out a particular species called humans on listening to their prayers is absurd for the following reasons:

a) The process of the evolution of the universe involves transformation of simple, undifferentiated matter into complex and more differentiated matter. For example, sub atomic particles combine to form atoms; atoms combine to form molecules; molecules of lighter elements combine to form molecules of heavier elements as in stars; certain organic compounds combine to form rudimentary life; simpler life

forms become more complex life forms by integrating certain nutrients and so on. This journey from simpler to more complex life form is still going on.

If we posit Brahman as the creator, we would have to assume that He could create energy, matter, plants, animals, humans etc in any sequence, as none of them would need to evolve as cause-effect from the lower/simpler to higher/more complex format. Brahman could just create anything directly in a jiffy without bothering to wait for the slow process of evolution from one form to another. In fact, this is what is believed to be the case.

But this sort of quick and sequence-neutral creation is contrary to scientific findings, according to which right from the time of Big Bang, the universe has been evolving slowly in a causally linked sequence starting from dark energy/dark matter to normal energy to quarks/leptons/bosons to atoms to galaxies to stars to planets to simple life forms to plants to animals to humans.

b) If a superconscious Brahman manifests itself through the universe, who creates such a Brahman? If such a Brahman can exist on its own, why can't we suppose that the matter/energy too exists on its own?

c) If the creator is assumed to be an omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, most compassionate and most just entity, it would become impossible to explain the presence of natural and moral evil in this world. Why do creatures of Brahman suffer so much – premature death, disease, natural calamities, poverty, starvation, fear of predators, violence, getting killed, getting cheated and so forth? The list of misery is endless. How could Brahman allow all this suffering?

d) According to Hinduism, this world is the manifestation of Brahman/Bhagwan. Now, if that is so, all objects – from matter to plants to animals to humans – are nothing but Brahman/Bhagwan. This means Brahman/Bhagwan is involved in all sorts of violent and sinful activities too, such as killing the prey for food, cheating, stealing, lying, raping, murdering etc. Then, Brahman/Bhagwan becomes subject to birth and death, suffering, old age, disease, depression, suicide and so on. He becomes experiencer, enjoyer, sufferer, winner, loser etc. But Hinduism is not prepared to accept such degradation of Brahman/Bhagwan. So, their doctrine that this world is the manifestation of Brahman/Bhagwan becomes false.

e) To save itself from such falsehood, Hinduism is logically driven to accept that Brahman/Bhagwan is hidden behind each object as an immutable entity or as a pure witness; is beyond space-time; is non-physical and is completely unaffected by changes of the material or life forms. But, this stance is also full of problems:

First of all, if Brahman/ Bhagwan is beyond space-time or is non-physical, how would He interact with the body and mind, both of which are physical? And, if He cannot interact with the body-mind-objects, His presence inside a living being becomes useless. So, what is the need of assuming that something non-physical lives inside something which is physical? We might as well explain everything in

terms of the physical.

Secondly, if Brahman/Bhagwan is ever a pure witness and immutable, how can He be said to fall in bondage? Bondage, which is caused by the attachment with mind, body and external objects, is possible only if Brahman / Bhagwan becomes subject to desire or change over time. But, Brahman / Bhagwan cannot undergo these changes, as He is said to be beyond space and time.

Thirdly, if Brahman /Bhagwan cannot fall in bondage, there is no question of His attaining liberation. So, all the efforts of a Hindu – doing yoga, meditation and devotion to Bhagwan -- become meaningless. Then, the very purpose of developing Hindu philosophy with a code of conduct becomes useless.

So, no matter how Brahman / Bhagwan is interpreted – physical or non-physical, Hinduism turns out to be false.

It is thus unscientific to explain the origin of the universe in terms of a personal/impersonal creator.

Moreover, there are wide differences among Upanishads about the sequence of created beings and the process by which one created object comes out from another created object. These contradictory accounts of sequences of the created entities prove beyond any doubt that the composers of Upanishads were merely speculating wildly without any objective verifiable facts. The mutual contradiction of the Upanishadic beliefs thus refute the veracity of those beliefs themselves.

## **2. Sequences of creation described by various Hindu texts are mutually contradictory and scientifically false**

Let us examine some of the sequence of creation described by Upanishads and Puranas:

### Creation doctrine 1 –

Brihadaranyaka Upanishad –

1.2.1: *There was nothing whatsoever here in the beginning. It was covered only by Death (Hiranyagarbha), or Hunger, for hunger is death. He created the mind, thinking, ‘Let me have a mind’. He moved about worshipping (himself). As he was worshipping, water was produced. ...*

1.2.2: *... water was solidified and became this Earth. When that was produced, he was tired. While he was (thus) tired and distressed, his essence, or luster, came forth. This was Fire.*

**[Brahman > Mind > Water > Earth > Fire]**

### Creation doctrine 2 --

Brihadaranyaka Upanishad –

1.4.1. *In the beginning there was Self alone, in the shape of a person (purusha). He looking round saw nothing but his Self. ...*

1.4.3. But he felt no delight. Therefore a man who is lonely feels no delight. He wished for a second. He was so large as man and wife together. He then made this his Self to fall in two, and thence arose husband and wife.

1.4.4. She thought, 'How can he embrace me, after having produced me from himself? I shall hide myself.'.....She then became a cow, the other became a bull and embraced her, and hence cows were born. The one became a mare, the other a stallion; the one a male ass, the other a female ass. He embraced her, and hence one-hoofed animals were born. The one became a she-goat, the other a he-goat; the one became an ewe, the other a Rama. He embraced her, and hence goats and sheep were born. And thus he created everything that exists in pairs, down to the ants.

**[Brahman > split into 2 halves (husband and wife) > other pairs of animals]**

Creation doctrine 3 –

Tattiriya Upanishad –

2.1.1. From that Brahman, which is the Self, was produced space. From space emerged air. From air was born fire. From fire was created water. From water sprang up Earth. From Earth were born the herbs. From the herbs was produced food. From food was born man. That man, such as he is, is a product of the essence of food.

**[Brahman > space > Air > Fire > Water > Earth > Plants > Food > Humans]**

Creation doctrine 4 --

Chandogya Upanishad:

VI-ii-3: 'That Being willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth." It created fire. That fire willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth". It created water. Therefore whenever a man grieves or perspires, then it is from fire that water issues.

VI-ii-4: 'That water willed, "May I become many, may I grow forth." It created food. Therefore wherever it rains, abundant food grows there; it is from water that food for eating is produced.

**[Brahman > Fire > Water > Food]**

Creation doctrine 5 –

Brahma Purana:

*In the beginning, there was water everywhere and the Brahman (the divine essence) slept on this water in the form of Vishnu.*

*In the water, there emerged a golden egg. Brahma was born inside the egg. Since he created himself, he is called Svayambhu, born (bhu) by himself (svayam). For one whole year, Brahma lived*

*inside the egg. He then split the egg into two and created heaven (svarga) and the Earth (prithivi) from the two parts of the egg. Skies, directions, time, language and senses were created in both heaven and Earth.*

*From the powers of his mind, Brahma gave birth to seven great sages....*

*To continue with the process of creation, Brahma gave birth to a man and a woman from his own body. The man was named Manu and the woman was named Shatarupa. Humans are descended from Manu.*

**[Brahman (Vishnu) > Brahma > (heaven + Earth) > (space + time + language + senses) > 7 sages > (man + woman) > humans]**

So, it is obvious that each of these 5 doctrines gives a different sequence of creation as noted below:

1. Brihadaranyaka Upanishad -- **Brahman > Mind > Water > Earth > Fire**

2. Brihadaranyaka Upanishad – **Brahman > split into 2 halves (husband and wife) > other pairs of animals**

3. Tattiriya Upanishad -- **Brahman > space > Air > Fire > Water > Earth > Plants > Food > Humans**

4. Chandogya Upanishad -- **Brahman > Fire > Water > Food**

5. Brahman Purana -- **Brahman (Vishnu) > Brahma > (heaven + Earth) > (space + time + language + senses) > 7 sages > (man + woman) > humans**

On scrutiny of these statements, it is clear that their beliefs about creation are not only different from each other but also mutually contradictory.

For example, according to Brihadaranyaka Upanishad, water comes before fire, but according to Tattiriya Upanishad, water comes after fire!

Mostly they are incomplete, as they do not account for all the objects and living beings of the universe.

Above all, all these beliefs are scientifically false.

Take the 1<sup>st</sup> sequence:

1. Brihadaranyaka Upanishad -- **Brahman > Mind > Water > Earth > Fire**

How could Brahman create mind straightway? Mind is the activity of brain, and brain is a part of a living being. So, without creation of a living being, how can mind be created? And even if there was a living being, where was he/she standing? There was no Earth right in the beginning. So there was nothing to stand on! And, how can mind create water?

Now, take the 2<sup>nd</sup> sequence:

2. Brihadaranyaka Upanishad -- **Brahman** > **split into 2 halves (husband and wife)** > **other pairs of animals**

How could Brahman create pairs of male and female straightway? Where was this first pair of humans standing? Again, there was no Earth right in the beginning to stand on.

Moreover, this doctrine of creation holds that Brahman first created human pairs, then other animal pairs just one after the other. So, there is no concept of gradual evolution of species from simple organisms to complex organisms. Here, Brahman creates or rather becomes different pairs at random beginning from human pairs. This is completely against the established theory of biological evolution, according to which, evolution has taken place from simpler organisms to complex organisms culminating in evolution of humans.

Now, take the 3<sup>rd</sup> sequence:

3. Tattiriya Upanishad -- **Brahman** > **space** > **Air** > **Fire** > **Water** > **Earth** > **Plants** > **Food** > **Humans**

How can air come directly from space?

Besides, atmosphere containing oxygen and nitrogen came into existence after about 500 million years after the formation of the Earth. So, no air, fire or water could come before the origin of Earth. Earth itself formed about 4.5 billion years ago out of the protoplanetary disk which gave rise to Sun and other planets. So, both water and air came into existence much later after the creation of the Earth.

The sequence also does not explain how man can arise from food. In any case, this belief contradicts that of the second sequence where it was said that Brahman directly produced first pair of humans.

Take the 4th sequence:

Chandogya Upanishad -- **Brahman** > **Fire** > **Water** > **Food**

It does not say anything about the origin of air, Earth, plants etc. It is thus incomplete.

Take the 5<sup>th</sup> sequence:

Brahman Purana -- **Brahman (Vishnu)** > **Brahma** > **(heaven + Earth)** > **(space + time + language + senses)** > **7 sages** > **(man + woman)** > **humans**

This theory believes in simultaneous creation of heaven and Earth, which is scientifically false. Galaxies and stars formed much earlier just after about 100 million years after the Big Bang, the beginning of the universe. Galaxies and stars are still forming. Earth came into existence about 9 billion years after the Big Bang. Space and time started with the Big Bang itself, not after the creation of Earth, as

mentioned here.

Language was developed by humans gradually. It was not first made and imposed one fine morning on humans, as stated here. Senses cannot exist on their own without human bodies. So, the concept of creation of independent senses, as mentioned here, is absurd. Brahma Purana says that 7 sages and human pair were the next creation. This again goes against the theory of evolution of man from our common ancestor with Chimpanzees.

Thus, scientifically, all the 5 beliefs about the sequence of creation are false.

**3. The creation and destruction of the universe goes on cyclically. The present universe was created 2.15 billion years ago and it will be destroyed in next 2.17 billion years by Brahman**

Hindu scriptures believe that the universe is created and destroyed cyclically. This is in total contrast to Abrahamic religions according to which the universe was created only once and it will be destroyed only once. Several Puranas, such as Padma, Shiv, Kurma, Matsya, etc describe when the universe was created and when will it be destroyed.

On study of these texts, it is found that Hindu writers of these books believed that the present age of the universe is 2.15 billion years and it will be destroyed in next 2.17 billion years!

According to science, the present age of the universe is 13.8 billion years and the universe is expanding. It will take trillions of years before the universe comes to an end. Thus, Hindu calculation is completely false.

Here is how Hindus calculated the age of the universe:

Brahman (the creator) created everything including mankind almost immediately. The initial period of mankind was the best – people were most religious, moral and healthy. This was the golden period (Sat Yuga). Gradually, their standard declined. The worst stage – the present times -- is called Kali Yuga. The worst period is followed by the best period. Duration of these various periods is as follows:

Satya Yuga = 4000 divine years

Treta Yuga = 3000 divine years

Dwapar Yuga = 2000 divine years

Kali Yuga = 1000 divine years

Total duration of these 4 Yugas = 10,000 divine years

Intermediate period between two cycles of the 4 Yugas = 2000 divine years

So, duration of one set of the 4 Yugas = 1 Chatur Yuga =  $10,000 + 2,000 = 12,000$  divine years

1 divine year = 360 human years

Hence, duration of one set of the 4 Yugas (chaturyuga) =  $12000 \times 360$  human years = 4.32 million

human years

1 Manvantara = 1 Manu's life time = a little more than 71 chaturyugas =  $71 \times 12000$  divine years = 852,000 divine years = approx. 307 million human years

The present time is that of 7<sup>th</sup> Manu out of total 14 Manus during one day of Brahma [according to Matsya Purana, referred to above].

So, the age of the present world =  $7 \times 307$  million human years = approximately 2.15 billion human years

1 day of Brahma = 1 Kalpa = 14 Manvantars = duration of the life of 14 Manus =  $14 \times 852,000$  divine years = 11,928,000 divine years = roughly 12 million divine years = 12 million  $\times$  360 human years = 4.32 billion human years [which is exactly 1000 times duration of 1 Chatur Yuga].

At the end of Brahma's day, the entire world is destroyed. Then Brahma sleeps for the same duration as that of his day. Then, after his night is over, he creates the world again. This cycle goes on.

Brahma's lifetime = 100 years of Brahma = 100 times of 360 days and 360 nights of Brahma = 4.32 billion  $\times$  360  $\times$  2  $\times$  100 = 311 trillion human years, after which Shiva dances, all things including Brahma dissolve and nothing exists for an equivalent time, then it all begins again.

So, whether we take the age of the present universe as life-time of 7 Manus (= 2.15 billion years), or 1 day of Brahma (= 4.32 billion years) or 1 life-time of Brahma (311 trillion years), all are scientifically false.

It has now been established by science that this universe started 13.8 billion years ago with Big Bang. There are tons of evidence for this. This has been arrived at by precisely measuring the rate of expansion of the universe and existence of cosmic microwave background. There is now absolutely no doubt that the Hindu calculation of the age of the universe is completely false.

In fact, Hindu calculation of the age of the universe has no scientific basis. It is purely arbitrary. It is nothing but sweet, symmetrical imagination. Their wholesome figures, as e.g., Sat Yug as 4000 divine years, Treta Yuga as 3000 divine years, one divine year being equal to 360 human years etc show that they were imagining something symmetrical and believing that it was true! Such thinking is representative of the primitive stage of mind where one starts believing what one wants to believe.

On Cyclical nature of creation and destruction – Hindu belief that the origin and dissolution of the universe is cyclical, however, turns out to be closer to the latest scientific findings. In this respect, Indian religions are closer to the reality than the Abrahamic religions which believe in only one time creation and destruction of the universe by God.

But, this cyclic nature of origin and dissolution of the universe described by Hinduism is a conscious and anthropomorphic act of Brahman/Bhagwan. This is not supported by science.

There is a good probability that our universe originates through Big Bang and ends in Big Rip/Big Crunch cyclically. But this may be an automatic process, having nothing to do with any supernatural entity like Brahman / Bhagwan.

#### **4. Planets and stars orbit around Pole Star; Moon is bigger than Sun; Moon travels faster than Sun; Indian sub-continent is 8 million miles in length and breadth; and so on**

These and several other beliefs have been mentioned in Bhagwat Purana and other texts. Almost all the Puranic beliefs about natural events have been proved false by science. See some samples:

Bhagwat Purana:

##### **A) All planets and stars orbit around Pole Star.**

5.23.3

*.... all the planets and all the hundreds and thousands of stars revolve around the polestar, the planet of Maharaja Dhruva, in their respective orbits, some higher and some lower. Fastened by God ... to the results of their attachment-induced acts, they are driven around the polestar by the wind and will continue to be so until the end of creation....*

**Facts:** First of all, as our Sun orbits around the galactic center, Earth too moves along with it. So, there is no fixed pole star, i.e., a star just above the North Pole for ever. Secondly, no planet or star orbits around the present pole star called Polaris.

##### **B) Sun orbits around heavens and Earth too.**

5.22.7.

*The Sun-god has three speeds -- slow, fast and moderate. The time he takes to travel entirely around the spheres of heaven, Earth and space at these three speeds is referred to, by learned scholars, by the five names Samvatsara, Parivatsara, Idavatsara, Anuvatsara and Vatsara.*

**Facts:** Writers of Bhagwat Purana must have presumed that their pole star and Earth are perfectly aligned in one straight line so that Sun could orbit around both of them simultaneously. But, as we know, Sun orbits neither Earth nor pole star.

##### **C) Moon is farther than Sun from Earth. Moon travels at a higher speed than Sun.**

5.22.8.

*Above the rays of the sunshine by a distance of 100,000 yojanas [800,000 miles] is the Moon, which travels at a speed faster than that of the Sun.*

**Facts:**

The distance between Moon and Earth is 238,900 miles, while that between Sun and Earth is 92,960,000 miles. So, it is false to say that Moon is farther than Sun from Earth.

The average distance between Sun and Moon is 94 million miles. So, the distance given by Bhagwat Purana at 800,000 miles is also completely off the mark.

The Moon rotates on its axis at the equator exactly with the same speed at which the Earth rotates on its axis on the equator, i.e., 1000 miles per hour. The Moon orbits Earth at a speed of 2,288 miles per hour. Sun spins on its axis at 4,400 miles per hour on its equator. Sun revolves around Milky Way galactic center at 486,000 miles per hour. So, Sun spins and rotates much faster than Moon spins and rotates. Thus, the belief of Bhagwat Purana that Moon's speed is faster than that of Sun is completely false.

#### **D) Several stars are just at a distance of 1.6 million miles from Moon.**

5.22.11

*There are many stars located 200,000 yojanas [1,600,000 miles] above the Moon.*

**Facts:** The nearest star from Earth – Proxima Centauri – is 4.22 light years away, i.e., about 24.81 trillion miles. So, the distance of stars from Earth/Moon mentioned in Bhagwat Purana as 1.6 million miles is completely off the mark.

#### **E) Mars is 8.8 million miles above Earth and has adverse influence on rainfalls on Earth.**

5.22.14

*Situated 1,600,000 miles above Mercury, or 8,800,000 miles above Earth, is the planet Mars. If this planet does not travel in a crooked way, it crosses through each sign of the zodiac in three fortnights and in this way travels through all twelve, one after another. It almost always creates unfavorable conditions in respect to rainfall and other influences.*

**Facts:** The minimum distance from Earth to Mars is about 34 million miles. The farthest apart they can be is about 250 million miles. The average distance is about 140 million miles. So, the figure of 8.8 million miles given by Bhagwat Purana is completely false. Mars is too far to have any adverse influence on rainfalls on Earth.

#### **F) Moon is bigger than Sun. Solar and lunar eclipses are caused by a planet called Rahu.**

5.24.2

*The Sun globe, which is a source of heat, extends for 10,000 yojanas [80,000 miles]. The Moon extends for 20,000 yojanas [160,000 miles], and Rahu extends for 30,000 yojanas [240,000 miles]. Formerly, when nectar was being distributed, Rahu tried to create dissension between Sun and Moon by interposing himself between them. Rahu is inimical toward both the Sun and the Moon, and therefore he always tries to cover the sunshine and moonshine on the dark-Moon day and full-Moon night.*

**Facts:** The diameter of Sun is 864,327 miles; that of Moon is 2,159 miles and that of Earth is 7,926

miles. So, Sun is 400 times bigger than Moon. There is no planet or star called Rahu. Solar eclipse is caused by the shadow of Moon on Earth when Moon comes between Sun and Earth. Lunar eclipse is caused by the shadow of Earth on Moon, when Earth comes between Sun and Moon.

### **G) Earth is stationary because it has been fixed at one place with the help of pegs around it.**

Rig Veda (7.99.3)

*Both these worlds, Vishnu, you have stayed asunder, and firmly fixed the Earth with pegs around it.*

White Yajur Veda (32.6):

*By whom the heavens are strong and Earth stands firmly,  
by whom light's realm and sky-vault are supported;*

**Facts:** Even a high school student knows that Earth is not stationary, but spins around its axis and also revolves around Sun. It is not fixed on any support 'below', but is just floating in space due to balance of gravitational and other forces between Sun and other planets. This false belief is strikingly similar to the Biblical false belief about Earth being fixed by 'pegs'.

### **H) Gold and silver mines originated from the sperms of Bhagwan Shiva.**

Bhagwat Purana

8.12.32-33

*When (Bhagwan Shiva), who never spills his semen in vain, was going after Her (Mohini, a beautiful woman) like a mad bull chasing a female, the semen discharged. Everywhere his semen fell on Earth, became mines for silver and gold.*

**Facts:** Gold and silver, like all other natural elements, were produced in stars through thermonuclear process and dispersed in the cosmos when they collapsed on exhaustion of their burning fuel. These elements were picked up by other stars and planets. When Earth came out from the proto Sun and cooled, these elements were found in mines.

### **I) Indian sub-continent is in the middle of the world, round and its length + breadth is 8 million miles.**

Bhagwat Purana

5.16.5

*The planetary system known as Bhu-mandala resembles a lotus flower, and its seven islands resemble the whorl of that flower. The length and breadth of the island known as Jambudvipa, which is situated in the middle of the whorl, are one million yojanas [eight million miles]. Jambudvipa is round like the leaf of a lotus flower.*

## Facts:

Since Earth is a sphere, the statement that a particular place is in the middle is meaningless.

The actual length + breadth of Indian sub-continent is about 4000 miles. The equatorial circumference of Earth is 25,046 miles, while meridional circumference is 25,004 miles, totaling 50,050 miles of circumference longitudinally + latitudinally.

So, the Puranic statement that Indian sub-continent is 8 million miles is nowhere near the actual measurement of 4000 miles. In fact, this is much bigger than even the total of Earth's equatorial lengths (east-west + north-south) of 50000 miles!

## J) Snow and dew are caused by Moon water.

Vishnu Purana says:

*1.2.8 The water that is evaporated by the Sun also nourishes the Moon. But the Moon itself does not consume that water. Instead it gives that water to the clouds. During winter season, the water released by the Moon falls on Earth as snow and dew.*

## Facts:

Vaporized water remains within the atmosphere of Earth and it cannot and does not reach Moon. Snow is formed due to condensation of rain water into snow due to excessive cold weather. Dew is formed due to condensation of vapor into water in cold winter nights.

## K) Birth of a son or a daughter is dependent on the time of intercourse.

Manu Smriti gives its advice on how to beget a son or a daughter as follows:

*3.48. On the even nights sons are conceived and daughters on the uneven ones; hence a man who desires to have sons should approach his wife in due season on the even (nights).*

## Facts:

Sons and daughters are produced by sex chromosomes of mother and father, not by even or odd number of lunar nights on which intercourse is made. Sons are produced if X chromosome of mother and Y chromosome of father happen to combine, while daughters are produced if X chromosome of mother and X chromosome of father happen to combine.

To sum up:

These examples clearly prove that the writers of Vedas, Upanishads, Smritis and Puranas had no scientific knowledge about the universe, stars, planets, Earth, biological processes etc. They just made wild guesses about the measurements of distances, planetary motions etc in round figures perhaps to impress the people around them. All their false claims now stand exposed by science.

## 4. Souls go on taking rebirth till they are liberated

Hinduism (and all other Indian religions) strongly believe that on death, a soul leaves its body and on birth, it enters into another body. This process of changing body goes on till the soul reaches its highest state of bliss called liberation, Moksha or enlightenment.

Presumption of rebirth was a philosophical need for Hinduism.

Liberation was considered to be the supreme destiny of every soul, but it was so difficult that it could not be realized in just one birth. Souls are found to be so much attached to their bodies and desires that there is no prospect of their attaining liberation in just one birth. So, Hindu philosophers had to presume that the soul, after death of one body, is reborn by taking another body appropriate to its next stage of development.

In Gita (2.12-13), 'Bhagwan' Krishna says:

*Never was there a time when I did not exist, nor you, nor all these kings; nor in the future shall any of us cease to be. As the embodied soul continuously passes, in this body, from childhood to youth to old age, the soul similarly passes into another body at death. A sober person is not bewildered by such a change.*

Let us examine the possibility of rebirth from scientific point of view.

We know that a baby is born only by fusion of sperm and egg, both of which are living sexual cells. So, if a soul is to be reborn in a human body, it would have to enter either a sperm and fuse with an egg or enter an egg and fuse with a sperm.

Let us call the soul of a person which wants to be reborn 'DS' (Disembodied Soul).

DS is obviously non-physical in the sense that it can pass through a material thing without any obstruction. But let us assume that even in this disembodied state, it is still capable of perceiving and thinking. Now, DS will have to first find out a mating human couple and then enter into one of their sperms or egg. But in order to enter into a sperm or egg, DS will have to drive away the soul which is already there in the sperm or egg, as according to Hinduism itself, every living being has a soul.

Let us call the soul of the sperm into which DS wants to enter, SS (Sperm Soul) and the soul of the egg in question, ES (Egg Soul).

Now, for DS, it is impossible to drive away SS or ES, as, being non-physical, it cannot interact with a solid living being like sperm or egg. It will simply pass through it, but cannot exert any force to drive away SS or ES. But without driving away SS or ES, DS cannot get a living sperm or egg, and hence cannot be reborn.

But suppose Hinduism says that DS could enter the body of a baby of 3 months in the womb, as till 3 weeks, a baby has no soul. But that would be against the doctrine of Hinduism itself, according to which all living beings have soul. The composite cell, which forms on the fusion of a sperm and an egg, has

enough intelligence to grow by dividing itself in a particular way and gradually developing into a baby. Without a soul, Hinduism cannot explain this intelligence. So, a baby cannot be assumed to live without a soul. But even if we assume that the 3 month baby has no soul and hence DS has an opportunity to enter this body, again the same problem would arise: how would a non-physical soul interact with a physical entity?

Let us now see what would happen in case of asexual reproduction process. Suppose DS was a very bad soul and in accordance with the doctrine of karma, it has to be reborn as amoeba. But a parent amoeba, wanting to reproduce, simply divides its nucleus into two and both daughter cells start living as independent units. So, how would the waiting DS enter into any of the daughter amoeba, even if it was capable of interacting physically with matter? There is simply no opening here!

Hindu apologists may argue that even if something is non-physical or invisible, it may still interact with objects, as for example -- light. Light is massless and yet it causes an effect. It enters our eyes and enables us to see. It can generate electricity by exciting electrons as, for example, in solar panels.

But this argument is false. Light is energy, which is another form of matter. Hence, it can interact with other matter or energy. But the soul is considered as immaterial or non-physical. It is attributed the property of being beyond space-time. Hence, it is impossible for it to interact with any matter.

Now, just to help our beleaguered Hindu apologist, let us assume that DS is somehow a physical entity, which can interact with other physical things. But the problem would still not be solved.

Please recall the process of reproduction. If a soul is to be reborn, it has to take a number of right decisions at just the right time: first select a human pair about to mate out of billions of animal pairs about to mate; then select a sperm out of millions of sperms released in one ejaculation by the prospective father; then drive away the soul of the selected sperm; then without any loss of time, enter that sperm; then compete with other sperms to reach the egg; then drive away the soul of the egg; then without loss of even a moment, fuse with the egg and finally start growing by dividing the cell. This humungous task can be undertaken only if DS is capable of perceiving with pin-point accuracy, taking decisions at lightning speed and acting with 100% efficiency. But DS has no nerve cells, no eyes, no ears, no legs, and no hands. It is devoid of any organ. So how can it have all these capabilities? It is an impossible task for the poor DS!

So, no matter how we assume DS to be – non-physical or physical, it is impossible for it to be reborn.

Hinduism may refer to modern research which cites examples of small kids “recollecting” certain happenings of their previous births. It may also refer to “past life regressions” undergone by several people under the guidance of New Age rebirth experts. All these events, Hinduism would say, prove the validity of belief in rebirth.

It is true that some New Age Western psychiatrists such as Ian Stevenson, Jim Tucker, Carol Bowman, Brian Weiss etc. have done intensive research on reincarnation and attempted to “document several cases of past life memories”.

However, there is still no conclusive proof about rebirth.

Reasons of doubt in the truthfulness of these claimed cases of rebirth can be many:

There is no way to verify whether various events of past life stated to have been recollected during “past life regression sessions”, is imagination or reality.

If rebirth happens, why such a tiny number of children remember their past lives compared to total number of child births in the world every day? It may be argued that only in case of violent and premature deaths, new born children remember their past life. But, even then, the number of such cases is still very tiny compared to the total number of violent and premature deaths taking place across the world every day.

Why are such cases found mostly in cultures believing in rebirth? It is the cultural conditioning which motivates people to interpret certain incidents in a way which aligns with the cultural interpretation. If parents believe in rebirth, it becomes easier for a child to fabricate stories of his past life and tell his parents in order to draw their special attention!

Claims of rebirth within a family may be motivated by the desire of parents to see their dead child come back alive in another form. For example, if a couple has lost their first girl child at the tender age of 5, and another girl child is born to them, they would like to believe that their first child is reborn as the second child. This desire may be so strong that the mother might even see in her dream that her dead child is coming back as her second child. She might even hear the “soul” of the first child whispering to her: “Mom, I am coming back as your second child.” This incident would then become another “proof” for rebirth!

## **6. The present life-situation is the result of past karmas**

Hinduism very strongly supports doctrine of karma, according to which, what a person suffers or enjoys in this life is the consequence of his actions (karma) of previous births.

The doctrine of karma was developed to explain all events pertaining to a person in the present life – his birth, education, health, job, marriage, children, life-time achievements/failures and death. All these and other events were explained in terms of his good or bad actions of previous life.

Deficiencies in the doctrine of karma:

1. Goodness cannot always be linked with health and wealth --

The doctrine of karma presumes that a good person, whether in the present life or past life,

deserved to enjoy health and modest wealth. This presumption itself is false.

A person may be religious, humble, truthful and kind to others (morally good), but this does not mean that he would also follow the rules of remaining healthy or he would be having sufficient entrepreneurial and management skills necessary for acquisition of wealth. A good person may, for example, eat a lot of sweets and fatty food; he may not be doing enough exercise; he may not be relaxing enough – these habits may lead to obesity, diabetes, heart attack or blood pressure. So, his goodness is of no use here.

Similarly, a person may be kind, truthful and honest, but that does not mean that he has the knowledge of starting a business or properly managing it. He may err in assessing the risk factors while investing his money in a particular venture. He may trust his staff blindly, while they may be siphoning off his capital. He may not know how to market his products. He may have erred in choosing the item of his manufacturing, as it might not be as much in demand as he thought it to be. So many things can go wrong! So, his goodness is not sufficient, though it may be a desirable trait.

## 2. There cannot be any time gap between action and its consequence

Doctrine of karma creates a gap of one or more births between action and its consequences. But this is illogical.

A consequence cannot be separated from its action by a gap of time.

Examples:

As I bring my hands near fire, I feel the heat immediately. As I eat, my hunger disappears immediately. As I board a taxi and it starts moving in the direction I want, I start going towards my destination immediately. As I help an old person cross a road, I feel happy immediately. As I work in my office sincerely, my reward in terms of salary is ensured immediately. As I hurt a person without his fault, I feel guilty immediately.

Let me take a slightly complicated example. Suppose I want to be rich (consequence). To fulfil this desire, I think and plan to set up a business (action). Now, from the time of conceiving the business to the time of sale of my product to the consumer, I am considered as doing action. As the money starts flowing into my bank account, I am considered as reaping the consequence.

So, here, both action and consequence are names of different aspects of the same process – when the process was going on, it was called action; when the last leg of the process – earning profit -- was happening, it was called consequence. Thus, both are names of the different stages of the same process and they are causally connected. Hence, there cannot be any time gap between action and its consequence, let alone a gap of one or more births, just as there cannot be any gap between cause and effect. Here, consequence (profit) just did not appear out of the blue or due to benevolence of Bhagwan (God) or my

past good karma – it was just the effect of the process planned and executed by me.

In all these examples, action starts getting converted into its consequence simultaneously. There is no time gap between the two. An action may take a minute or hundreds of years to be complete, but its consequence is nothing but a convenient name for the last segment of the whole process both connected as cause and effect.

So, the attempt of Hinduism to explain bad health or premature death in terms of badness of action done in previous births is based on misunderstanding of the nature of action and its consequence. They tried to explain one event (bad health or premature death) by another event (bad karma, say ‘not worshipping Bhagwan’) separated by a time gap of one or several births of the soul without proving a cause and effect relationship between the two. This cannot be done logically.

Since past life, by very definition, cannot be experienced, it is impossible to prove any causal relationship between an event of the past and an event of the present. Same problem is in relation to proving a causal relationship between the present event and an event of future birth.

### 3. Goodness is a reward in itself; bad action is a punishment in itself

When I am speaking truth, I feel great. When I lie, I know I have cheated someone – and that hurts me!

When I help a stranger in my small, little way, I feel loving and blissful. When I forcefully or fraudulently take away something from a person, I feel something has died in me – I feel depressed.

When I plant a fruit-giving tree today knowing fully well that I will not survive to eat its fruits, what happens then? Here, the fruit of my action lies in the satisfaction I get in knowing that my children or others will someday eat the fruits of the tree. That is the result of my action. So here too, my action and result are causally linked without any break of time.

These are not theoretical musings, but day-to-day real experiences. Goodness is a reward in itself. Bad action is a misery in itself.

So, attempt of Hinduism to attach an external reward or punishment with good or bad karma through doctrine of karma goes against our living experiences.

But, one may question, if this is so, why are there so many people doing bad things?

Well, that happens when one is blinded by a false ideology (jihadists or communists, for example) or driven by extreme deprivation of material needs or simply due to lack of sensitivity. So, these people need to be punished or sensitized by the society.

Thus, we find that doctrine of karma is completely false.

### **7. Evolution of species takes place by doing good karma**

Good karma is defined in Hinduism as moral actions + compassion for other beings + religious actions leading to liberation. Religious actions would consist of minimization of one's desires + practice of detachment + meditation/devotion to Bhagwan. The opposite of good karma is considered as bad karma.

According to the doctrine of karma of Hinduism, if a soul does very bad karma in the present life, it is reborn in animal or plant species in the next life. If the karma is not too bad, the soul would be born as a human, but in lower castes such as Shudras or Mlecchas. If the karma is very good, it would be born in the caste of Brahmin. And so on.

In other words, the present body of a soul is an indication of the kind of karma done in the previous life. Even important events happening in one's present life is in consequence of the karma of the past life.

This belief logically leads to a hierarchical structure of the living beings. The purest soul (liberated soul) would be on top of this hierarchy, while the most impure soul (plants, bacteria, insects, etc.) would be at the bottom of this hierarchy.

From this belief, it logically follows that a lower level soul in a plant/animal species may jump to the next higher level in next birth if it does good karma.

But for a plant or animal, what could be a good karma or a bad karma? We do not observe any difference in the pattern of karma of plants and animals.

All living organisms – from one-sensed to 5 sensed – follow the same pattern of living.

They eat and mate; they nurse their babies; they either kill their prey for food or directly absorb nutrients from the environment. Organisms kill their prey, steal food hunted by others, camouflage to make sudden attack on prey, infect their prey in order to kill and so on. Wherever they can, organisms also store their food as much as possible for difficult times (ants, bees, squirrels etc). They also store extra energy as fat. None of them try to become less violent.

In a large number of species, a dominant male keeps a harem of females in order to pass on his genes to maximum offspring at the cost of weaker males. Several species of animals indulge in sex for pleasure. Animals have been found to masturbate and have homosexual relations as well.

No plant or animal follows the Hindu principle of minimization of eating or mating. None of them worships any God or does meditation.

Yet, in accordance with the theory of biological evolution, even with adopting such violent and immoral methods, storage of excess food and indulgence in sex, organisms have still evolved from simple to complex, from less intelligent to more intelligent simply by adapting to the changed environmental conditions.

Thus, the theory of biological evolution falsifies Hindu belief that evolution takes place by doing

good karma, such as by getting more detached; by reducing desires; by showing kindness to other living beings; by becoming less violent; by devotion to Bhagwan, etc.

## **8. Bhagwan takes birth in human form to protect the good and punish the evil.**

Hinduism is the only religion in the world which believes that Bhagwan has been taking incarnation in animal or human form in India to protect devout Hindus from the wicked and He will continue to do so in future too.

But there is no historical evidence that Bhagwan has undertaken such ventures. On the contrary, Hindus suffered immensely by the cruelty and aggression of Muslim invaders. But Bhagwan did not take birth to rescue Hindus from Islamic oppression. Hindus had been subjugated by the British for centuries, but Bhagwan did nothing to drive away the British from India.

The very idea of Bhagwan taking incarnation to save virtuous Hindus from the wicked is absurd. If Bhagwan is the creator of the whole world, why should He be concerned only with Hindus of India?

Millions of innocent, helpless people have been killed by autocratic regimes in civil wars in China, Russia, Korea, Sudan, Cambodia, Bangladesh, Ethiopia, Rwanda etc. Stalin, Hitler, Mao etc had killed millions of unarmed people in cold-blood. Why no incarnation of Bhagwan in these places?

Why was there no incarnation of Bhagwan when Hindu India was attacked and defeated by materialist, communist China in 1962?

Communist and Islamic terrorists have been killing innocent Hindus for decades – why incarnation of Bhagwan is not taking place?

Muhammad and his follower jihadis have killed millions of people including Hindus across the world in order to spread Islam. Why has been Bhagwan silent?

There is widespread corruption in all government offices in India and millions of innocent people are being harassed by these corrupt officials every day. Why is there no incarnation?

On the contrary, in the Western countries, there is relatively much less corruption. People live a happy, comfortable and moral life there in spite of their disbelief in the principles of Hinduism and in spite of Bhagwan not taking any incarnation there. Why?

All these facts clearly prove that the belief in incarnation of Bhagwan is false.

## **9. Four successive periods with descending degree of morality and spirituality move cyclically**

The very concept of the cycle of 4 human eras starting with the best period (Sat Yuga) 2.89 million years ago from the present year (2016) and ending in the worst period (Kali Yuga) which started 5000 years ago and would last for 427,000 years more, is false.

**There was never any Sat Yuga**

Scientific research in anthropology and genetics has overwhelmingly proved that ancestors of modern humans (*Homo sapiens*) evolved in Africa only about 200,000 years ago. Since anatomically modern humans appeared so recently, the belief that Sat Yuga when humans were most religious, most moral and healthiest, started 2.89 million years ago is clearly a figment of imagination.

There is no possibility of the humans being the most religious, most moral and healthiest during the earliest period of the emergence of modern humans.

Humans were initially in hunting-gathering stage for hundreds of thousands of years. Their whole life was spent just searching food, shelter and mates. They did not know farming or domestication of animals in the beginning. They were using stone tools and living in caves. They lived in small groups. They had to constantly move from one place to another in search of food.

Under such hard times, where there was daily struggle for survival, morality could not even come to their mind. Fighting among rival groups of humans for prey, fruits, territory and mating was very common. Killing, robbing, stealing were rampant. So, there was no question of their being moral. Might was right.

These people could not be expected to be religious too. Yearning for self-realization presupposes leisure, a comfortable life and lots of intelligence. When the survival of the body is at stake, how can one even think of liberation of soul?

As to health, since hunting and gathering of fruits could not ensure daily supply of required nutrition, health of people could not be very good. Life was very short, because too much energy had to be spent in procuring food.

Thus, it is clear that the belief that the initial period of mankind was golden period [Sat Yuga] is totally false.

### **In fact, “Kali Yuga” is the best ever period**

The Hindu belief that there is a gradual deterioration in human morality, religiosity and health and the present time (Kali Yuga) is the worst time in all history is also false.

The fact is just the opposite. There has been overall improvement in moral standards and health across the world during the last 3000 years. For example:

Previously, slavery was considered normal, now it is legally banned almost across the world.

Previously, a Hindu was expected to take up the profession of his caste, irrespective of whether he liked it or not; now there is freedom to take up any profession one likes. This ensures better job satisfaction than before. The same is true for marriage too.

Previously, the only way known to mankind for change of a regime was military conquest of the weaker by the stronger involving murder, treachery, deception etc. Now, out of 195 countries of the

world, 147 are democratic (in varying degrees). The number of democratic countries has been steadily rising over the years. So, there is a system in place in these countries wherein there is peaceful change of regimes. So, this system is less violent and morally better than the previous one.

There is a lot more charity and humanitarian help available globally today than it might have been in the past. For example, if there is any natural calamity – like earthquake, famine, flood, Tsunami etc. anywhere in the world, the entire world rushes to offer humanitarian help. Similarly, if a regime starts brutally killing its own people, there is hue and cry all over the world against the regime. Such compassionate acts were unthinkable in the past.

The more affluence there is in the world, the more the desire to help others. Philanthropy is rising across the world. Top 100 US foundations, for example, donate trillions of dollars on philanthropy. This is in addition to the massive expenditure made by governments all over the world to help out the poor and the needy in matters of food, education, health, housing, employment etc. Such welfare activities were very few in the previous 3 Yugas of Hinduism. So, Kali Yuga is far more caring than the previous Yugas.

As to health, World Health Organization report says that fewer babies are dying at the time of birth worldwide compared to even 100 years ago or prehistoric times. Average life expectancy is increasing all over the world. In the year 2014, it was 71. The number of people living over the age 100 in the world was 316,600 in the year 2012. In prehistoric times, the average life expectancy was 35. Several diseases have been completely wiped out. So, unlike what Hinduism believes, people are healthier in “Kali Yuga” than what they were before it. Bhagwat Purana (12.2.11) says that in Kali Yuga, the maximum life span of humans will be 50 years. This has turned out to be false.

As to prosperity, life is much more comfortable than during prehistoric times, thanks to astounding technological developments and social engineering. People have much more free disposable time than was available in prehistoric times. Almost every working person today enjoys holidays on Saturdays/Sundays. So, people are freer to pursue their interests in leisure time, rather than running around for food and mates all the time as in prehistoric times.

Since people have more material comfort and leisure, they are also likely to be more spiritual than before. A person worried about next meal cannot afford to be spiritual!

Today, there is more compassion among people across the world for animals. Hundreds of organizations have sprung up defending the rights of animals against cruelty. More people are becoming vegetarians. This is the sign of moral progress for humans.

There may be corruption in public life in India, but it is not due to the bad effect of Kali Yuga,

but because of ascetic culture of Hinduism and its economic effect of socialistic policies. In the West, moral standard is still very high and there is little corruption there in public life. So, obviously, there is no bad effect of Kali Yuga in the West!

Thus, in all respects, the present age is far better than the imaginary Sat Yuga, Treta or Dvapara Yugas. Kali Yuga, far from being the worst, is the best age for humans. The whole world is progressing towards better health, prosperity, morality, scientific understanding of the world and spirituality, but Hinduism keeps on condemning this age as worst age without any factual basis. Hinduism is thus trapped in its own ideological web of false beliefs.

### **Conclusion:**

The beliefs of mainstream Hinduism (Upanishadic and Classical) have thus been proved to be completely false.

Now, following are the false beliefs of the philosophies which tried to substitute Upanishadic monistic metaphysics with their own dualistic/pluralistic metaphysics (Samkhya-Yoga and Nyaya-Vaisesika), as discussed under Section B (Upanishadic Hinduism) in sub-chapter 5A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism] :

#### **Samkhya –**

If Purusha is beyond space-time and ever a witness, it cannot be under bondage/liberation. If Prakriti is inert and insentient, it too cannot be under bondage/liberation. So, who falls in bondage and who is liberated? Samkhya has no answer to this basic problem.

If Purusha is immaterial and beyond space-time, it cannot interact with Prakriti. Hence, evolution or dissolution of Prakriti cannot take place.

If Prakriti is unconscious and blind, it cannot evolve into the complex but harmonious universe we see today.

Samkhya makes the three Gunas constituents of each object. But this does not help explain the behavior of millions of objects – from sub-atomic particles to super galaxies; from elements/compounds to plants and animals. To say that a stone has the quality of Goodness, Passion or Inertia is absurd, as these are the attributes of human beings alone.

To say that our mind, 5 senses and motor organs have originated from Sattvik individuation is arbitrary and scientifically false, because human body has evolved from unicellular organisms after billions of years of evolution. Unicellular organisms in turn have evolved from organic compounds, which in turn have evolved from elements, which in turn have evolved from sub-atomic particles, which in turn have evolved from energy of the Big Bang. So, in this entire chain, there is nothing like cosmic Mahat or individuation.

To say that the 5 gross elements – Earth, water, air, fire and ether -- have evolved from Tamasik individuation is equally absurd. All these have evolved after 9 billion years of the Big Bang out of the gases of our star Sun, which itself had evolved by fusion of hydrogen atoms into helium atom.

### **Yoga –**

All the falsehood of Samkhya applies to Yoga too because both believe in the same philosophy.

Yoga is unable to explain how continuous concentration on an outside object would lead to the separation of Purusha and Prakriti, which is what liberation is defined as.

### **Vaishesika –**

It believes that even quality, action, generality, particularity, inherence and non-existence are independent substances or fundamental realities. But these are merely mental constructs created by human mind on the cognitive interaction with ‘something out there’. The relativity of Vaisheshika’s quality, action etc perceived under different conditions points to only one fact: they do not exist independently.

To say that human sense organs have directly developed from the elements whose special quality is represented by that sense is also absurd. For example, they say that color is recognized by the sense organ of eyes; hence eyes are made of fire whose special quality is color! The fact is that the entire human body including sense organs have evolved to the present state after billions of years of evolution from unicellular organisms. Earth, air, water etc are common ingredients in all organisms. None of these elements constitute any special organ of the body, just as when I eat a banana, it does not make just one organ exclusively.

Vaishesikas say that first God kick-starts the process of evolution of the world by putting atoms of Earth, water, air, fire, souls and mind in motion. Bondage of soul happens when it comes in contact with the mind, as due to ignorance of mind, it misidentifies itself with mind, body and objects. But if this sort of contact is the cause of bondage, so long as the soul is in the body, it will remain in contact with the mind to perceive and perform action. So, it will remain in bondage till death. Even after death, as soon as it comes in contact with another mind, it will again fall in bondage. So, liberation would become impossible!

### **Nyaya –**

Since Nyaya believes in Vaishesika philosophy, the same falsehood applies here too.

**Thus, both the non-Upanishadic philosophical systems are completely false.**

**To sum up:**

We have found that all the core beliefs of Hinduism are false. They were all built up with common sense observation mixed with wild speculation. Propounders of those beliefs might have thought that they had received the “sacred knowledge from Bhagwan”, but the fact is that they were common sense beliefs arrived at illogically on the strength of insufficient data. Hence, science has now found them to be completely false.

## Chapter 5 -- Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5D

#### Contradictions in Hinduism

Hindu religious literature is so vast that it could not have been written by one person. Several persons must have written it in different times. Whatever they wrote must be a product of their needs, spiritual level, observation of events, assimilation of the Vedic knowledge and an attempt to create a world-view making sense of all these experiences. So, contradictions are bound to occur in such a scenario, because every writer must be writing from his own perspective.

I am giving some examples of such contradictions below. They clearly prove that the literature of the period of Classical Hinduism is purely man-made and full of errors. They cannot be 'revelations of Bhagwan' or 'infallible gems of wisdom', as some Hindus claim. Contradictions between two beliefs logically imply that at least one of the two contradictory beliefs must be false or even both may be false.

**Let me give just 5 such examples of contradictions:**

#### 1. What is the process of creation?

Rig Veda:

According to Rig Veda Purusha Sukta (10.90.1-16), everything originated directly from different parts of Purusha (the ultimate reality). For example, horses, cattle, goat, humans, Earth, Moon, Sun, fire, air etc emerged directly from it.

Brihadaranyaka Upanishad:

According to Brihadaranyaka Upanishad (1.2.1-2), the sequence of creation from Brahman is as follows:

Brahman > Mind > Water > Earth > Fire

Tattiriya Upanishad:

According to Tattiriya Upanishad (2.1.1), the sequence of creation from Brahman is as follows:

Brahman > space > Air > Fire > Water > Earth > Plants > Food > Humans

Chandogya Upanishad:

According to Chandogya Upanishad (6.2.3-4), the sequence of creation from Brahman is as follows:

Brahman > Fire > Water > Food

Bhagwat Purana:

According to Bhagwat Purana (2.5.22-30), the sequence of creation from Bhagwan Vishnu is somewhat like Samkhya's doctrine:

Bhagwan Vishnu > Cosmic Intellect >

Sattvik individuation > Mind > 5 sense organs (eyes, ears, skin, tongue and nose) + 5 organs of action (responsible for speaking, holding, moving, reproducing and evacuating)

Tamasik individuation > 5 subtle elements (sight, sound, touch, taste and smell) + 5 gross elements (Earth, water, air, fire and ether)

Brahma Purana:

According to Brahma Purana, the sequence of creation from Bhagwan Vishnu is as follows:

Bhagwan Vishnu > a golden egg > Brahma > heaven and Earth > space, time, languages and senses > 7 great sages > first human pair

So, all the six scriptures quoted above give different and mutually contradictory sequence of creation! So, logically, at least 5 of these accounts must be false.

As has been examined in the sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism], all of these statements of creation are scientifically false.

## 2. How many incarnations have been taken by Bhagwan?

Agni Purana and Varaha Purana say that Bhagwan Vishnu has so far taken 9 incarnations and will take one more incarnation in future (total 10). Here is the list:

(1) Fish (2) Tortoise (3) Boar (4) Human-Lion (5) Dwarf Man (6) Parashurama (7) Rama (8) Krishna (9) Buddha (10) Kalki (to take place in future).

But, according to Garuda Purana and Bhagwat Purana, Bhagwan Vishnu has already taken 21 incarnations and will take one more incarnation in future (total 22). Here is the list:

1. Sanatkumars 2. Boar 3. Narada 4. Nar-Narayana 5. Kapil 6. Dattatreya 7. Yagya Dev 8. Rishabh Dev 9. Prithu 10. Fish 11. Tortoise 12. Dhanvantari 13. Mohini 14. Human-Lion 15. Dwarf Man 16. Parashuram 17. Vyasa 18. Rama 19. Krishna 20. Balrama 21. Buddha 22. Kalki (to take place in future).

So, the number and sequence of incarnations of Bhagwan given in Agni and Varaha Puranas on the one hand and in Garuda and Bhagwat Puranas on the other, are mutually contradictory. So, at least, one of the lists must be false.

In fact, the very concept of Bhagwan's taking incarnations only in India is imaginary and

manufactured to spread hope among the gullible Hindus. It is not a historical fact.

### 3. Why did Bhagwan take incarnation as Buddha?

Agni Purana and Bhagwat Purana say that Bhagwan Vishnu took incarnation as Buddha in order to mislead bad people so that they go to hell, while Garuda Purana says that it was to guide humanity.

Here is what they say:

Bhagwat Purana (1.3.24)

*Then, in the beginning of Kali-yuga, the Lord will appear as Lord Buddha, the son of Anjana, in the province of Gaya, just for the purpose of deluding those who are envious of the faithful theist.*

Agni Purana:

*The ninth avatara of Vishnu was Buddha and the tenth will be Kalki.*

*Many years ago, there was a war between gods and demons in which demons managed to defeat gods. Then gods went running to Vishnu for protection and Vishnu told them that Mayamoha would be born as Buddha, the son of Shuddhodana. Such were the illusions that Buddha created, that the demons left the path indicated by the Vedas and became Buddhists. These dastardly creatures performed ceremonies that were a sure ticket to hell.*

Garuda Purana's version is just the opposite. It says:

*He (Bhagwan Vishnu) will take his twenty-first incarnation as Buddha to bring the mankind back to virtuous path by preaching against the rituals and proving that it is not proper for a seeker to get bound by them.*

So, which version is true? At least one version must be false!

### 4. How does it rain?

There are at least 4 different and contradictory answers to this question.

Gita says that rain is caused by performing sacrifices; Padma Purana says that it is caused by god Indra; Vishnu Purana says that at least for some specific months, rain is drawn from Akashganga (Milky Way) by Sun and Kaushitaki Upanishad says that rain is caused by Moon.

Here are the relevant passages:

Gita 3.14

*All living bodies subsist on food grains, which are produced from rains. Rains are produced by performance of yajna [sacrifice], and yajna is born of prescribed duties.*

Padma Purana

*Indra became extremely furious and caused incessant rain for one week. Sri Krishna protected*

the people by lifting Govardhan Mountain and shielding them from the continuous downpour. At last, Indra accepted defeat and eulogized Sri Krishna.

Vishnu Purana

The Sun draws water from Akashganga (the Milky Way) also and causes it to rain on Earth at once. That water is so sacred that mere touch of it destroys all the sins. The rains that fall during Nakshatras like Kritika; Rohini, Addra etc. come from the water of Milky Way galaxy (Akashganga).

Kaushitaki Upanishad

1.2

*All who depart from this world (or this body) go to the Moon. In the former, (the bright) half, the Moon delights in their spirits; in the other, (the dark) half, the Moon sends them on to be born again. Verily, the Moon is the door of the Svarga world (the heavenly world). Now, if a man objects to the Moon (if one is not satisfied with life there), the Moon sets him free. But if a man does not object, then the Moon sends him down as rain upon this Earth. And according to his deeds and according to his knowledge he is born again here as a worm, or as an insect, or as a fish, or as a bird...*

## 5. How did god Ganesha originate?

There are at least 3 mutually contradictory versions of the story of the origin of the strange god Ganesha having an elephant head.

Varaha Purana says it was due to a curse of Bhagwan Shiva; Padma Purana says it was a miracle on its own and Shiva Purana says that Bhagwan Shiva joined the head of an elephant on the beheaded body of Ganesha.

Here are the relevant passages:

Varaha Purana

*... When lord Shiva learnt about their problem, he burst into laughter. Hardly had he stopped laughing than a radiant adolescent manifested himself from his opened mouth. The child was so divinely charming that Parvati, who was sitting beside Shiva looked at him without dropping her eyelids.*

*When Shiva found her staring at the child, he became jealous. Jealousy transformed into anger and Shiva cursed the child- 'From now onwards your face will resemble an elephant and your belly will become as large as a pot...' The child was none other than Ganesh.*

Padma Purana

*Once, before taking her bath, goddess Parvati anointed unguent on her body and while removing it, created a human form from the accumulated dross. The head of this human form resembled an*

*elephant. Parvati then playfully immersed the human-form into river Ganga. But, to her sheer amazement, the human form became alive and of enormous size. She accepted him as her son and he was none other than elephant-headed deity Ganesh.*

### **Shiva Purana**

*A fierce battle was fought between Shiva and Ganesha. When Lord Shiva realized that Ganesha was dominating the fight, he severed his head with his trident. Parvati became extremely furious at the death of Ganesha. . .*

*Lord Shiva instructed his attendants to bring the head of any creature they might find and join it with the trunk of Ganesha. They found an elephant which had only one tusk. They severed the elephant's head and joined it with the trunk of Ganesha. By the blessings of Shiva, Ganesha became alive once again.*

These are just a few samples of contradictions. There are hundreds of contradictions in Hindu scriptures. Any rational person therefore must reject these scriptures as totally unreliable.

## Chapter 5 -- Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5E

#### Harmful effects of Hinduism

Hinduism has been extremely harmful for its followers.

Here are 12 reasons:

1. Condemnation of desire for wealth by Hinduism made Hindus poor, weak and self-condemning
2. Condemnation of wealth reduced the possibility of attainment of even liberation
3. Condemnation of desire for sexual pleasure made Hindus uncelebrative and too sexual to even think of liberation
4. Hinduism leads to mental conflicts, not liberation
5. Obsession with liberation is counter-productive
6. Condemnation of natural emotions such as Kama (lust), Krodha (anger), Lobha (greed), Moha (attachment), Mada (self-pride) and Matsara (jealousy) made Hindus guilt-ridden and hypocritical
7. The belief that misdeeds in past life cause misery in the present life discouraged endeavors to find real solutions to misery
8. Idol worship to gain material favor does not work and hence is a wastage of energy, time and money
9. Belief in incarnation of Bhagwan to eliminate evil made Hindus weak
10. Condemnation of the present time as Kali Yuga destroyed the zest to improve conditions of human life
11. The caste system of Hinduism created unspeakable misery for Shudras and outcastes
12. Hinduism subjugated women and made them feel inferior

Let me discuss them one by one.

1. Condemnation of desire for wealth by Hinduism made Hindus poor, weak and self-condemning

During early Vedic period, Aryans lived a natural life – there was no condemnation of wealth or sex. There was a natural celebration of life even though life was full of fights and struggles. But the

emergence of Upanishadic vision dramatically changed the Vedic vision of life. Condemnation of natural desire for wealth started from that time and till date, it is still going on.

Recall Upanishadic world-view. It says:

Brahman, the ultimate reality, is beyond space-time and therefore an immutable being. He somehow manifests Himself as matter and living beings; enters into them; forgets about His real nature; identifies Himself with creatures and starts running after desires in the hope of getting happiness. But He fails, because fulfilment of desires cannot give Him real satisfaction. The real happiness lies in self-realization. Once, self-realized, all desires vanish and one remains contented with innermost bliss. That is the real happiness. Till this is realized, souls go on taking rebirth as plants, animals and humans according to their good or bad deeds (karma). This cycle of birth and death is called bondage and freedom from this cycle is called liberation.

This Hindu world-view logically leads to only one conclusion – happiness cannot be achieved by fulfilment of desires of mind-body, but only by direct experience of one's true self. Attainment of liberation is possible only with stillness of mind, not by fulfilling body's and mind's desires.

Thus it follows that one should spend maximum effort towards liberation and minimum efforts towards fulfilment of mind-body desires.

Suppose a person is bathing in a river and suddenly he slips into deeper water. He does not know swimming. Now, he would start crying for help or desperately try to come towards the shore. He cannot think of anything else. His only concern is to get out of deep water.

Exactly in the same way, Hinduism believes that humans have fallen into the river of attachment of the world and therefore the only concern they should have is to get out of this mess by catching hold of the inner self. Coming out of this mess is the only desirable goal – this goal was called liberation.

But liberation would be possible only in human body – so one should make efforts just enough to make the body survive. All other desires should be abandoned. Maintenance of the body is therefore a necessary evil, which must be tolerated to attain the higher goal of liberation.

To sum up, the ideal for Hinduism is: maximize efforts for liberation; and minimize or downsize desires in order to bring it to survival level.

In fact, India of the Upanishadic and post-Upanishadic period became so obsessed with liberation that it abandoned everything else and single-mindedly aspired only for liberation. Naturally, it had to neglect all other desires of normal human life – wealth, children, sex, science, technology, reforms and so on. This is why India produced thousands of spiritual giants. But at what price? India paid the price in terms of material poverty, lack of scientific knowledge, backwardness of technology and absence of social management.

Hinduism calls minimization of desires by various names, such as possessing just enough for survival (*Aparigrah*); not falling into the trap of attachment (*Maya-Moha / Vishay-Vasna*) for the world; having contentment (*Santosham Param Sukham*); not having greed (*Lobha*) and so on.

This belief of Hinduism in minimization of desires has been preached right from Upanishads till date by all Hindu texts, scholars and preachers. I have already quoted the relevant passages in sub chapter 5A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism]

Before, I prove the harmful effect of this belief, let me first clear 3 myths built around this belief out of my way.

### **1<sup>st</sup> myth:**

**Indian religions do not condemn wealth – they condemn only attachment to wealth, family or friends.**

What is the meaning of ‘attachment’?

Once certain needs are recognized as essential, it is natural to have attachment with the objects/persons fulfilling these needs. Attachment is the recognition of the value of an object or a person, which has the capability of fulfilling a need. Attachment implies that if that needed object or person is not there, we will miss something, because then we cannot fulfil certain needs. So, needing something and not getting attached to it are self-contradictory.

If we have forcibly reduced our needs to only a few objects, that only increases our attachment with those objects. If we have more things, our attachment for every object would be a little less. The richer we are, the less attached we would be to the things of smaller value, because if we are rich, we know that if we lose a less valuable thing, it can be easily bought again. However, if we are poor, we do not have the luxury of easy replacement of lost objects. Hence, the poor are more attached to the few objects they possess.

Suppose a householder has reduced his needs of utensils to only one glass, one plate, one spoon and one cooking pot in his house. Suppose someone stole his only glass. Now, would he not feel deprived and unhappy, because now he does not have any utensil to drink water or milk from? However hard he may try, he can never stop feeling the pain of deprivation and anger for being wronged by the thief.

Hence, to say that one may have wealth but should not be attached to it is self-contradictory.

### **2<sup>nd</sup> myth:**

**Indian religions are against desires, not against needs. Needs are very few, but desires are unlimited.**

But what is a desire? How is it different from a need?

A desire is a wish, a longing, a craving for something whose fulfilment would give satisfaction, pleasure or happiness.

A need is also a craving for something whose fulfilment would give satisfaction, pleasure or happiness.

So what is the difference between a desire and a need?

People generally make the difference as follows: fulfilment of a need is necessary for survival, while fulfilment of a desire is not necessary for survival. For example, I need air, water, food and house for survival, but I do not need, though I may desire, a car or a TV for survival.

But this difference is arbitrary. Today's desires become tomorrow's needs. Yesterday's desires have become today's needs. Electricity, telephone, airplanes, fridge, computers and mobile phones were luxury when they had been invented. Today, they have become our needs.

Secondly, our daily living experience shows that needs keep on growing. One need leads to another. Need for food, for example, leads to the need to have a kitchen, utensils, tap water, gas, microwave, fridge, dining table etc. Need to earn livelihood leads to the need to have a car for going to office, mobile phone, and so on. So, we require thousands of things and people to keep our needs/desires satisfied.

In real life, we keep on increasing the scale of needs. Where do we stop and say: Aha! We have reached the highest level of needs and beyond this, the realm of desires begin.

Today, an average upper middle class family in India lives in a suburb with own house equipped with AC, TV, cooking range, fridge, computer etc; he has a car; he takes frequent holidays; he maintains a decent bank balance and so forth. Whatever material comfort the family has developed over the years has become the needs of the family. But this style of living may be a distant desire for an average lower middle class family of a village in India.

So, where do needs end and desires begin? There cannot be any arbitrary demarcation. Life is a continuum. We are not even sometimes aware when our desires became needs.

So, needs and desires are not two separate water-tight realms, but represent only the relatively lower and higher portions of the hierarchy of our self-created priorities.

**3<sup>rd</sup> myth:**

**Hinduism has never condemned wealth. In fact, it is one of the 4 Purusharthas (goals worth achieving) – Artha, Dharma, Kama and Moksha.**

This point has already been discussed in sub chapter 5A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism] under Classical Hinduism. I have clarified there that Artha is not exactly equal to wealth. It simply refers to the “means” necessary to attain liberation. It did mean wealth during Vedic period. But with the rise of Upanishadic vision, wealth started getting condemned. Upanishads permitted wealth only

to the extent it was absolutely necessary to maintain the body at bare survival level for the sake of attaining liberation. Anything more than that was condemned as desire, sense pleasures, greed and so on. This Upanishadic vision became an integral part of Hinduism and all subsequent Hindu thinkers supported this idea. The quotes given in sub chapter 5A prove this fact.

Worship of Laxmi (goddess of wealth) in Hinduism is a remnant of early Vedic materialistic tendencies, where gods and goddesses were worshipped for wealth and material successes. This Vedic vision was however superceded by Upanishads and subsequent Hindu texts.

**Now, let me come to the main point – let me show how this Hindu belief in minimization of desires made Hindus poor, weak and self-condemning.**

### **The belief in minimization of desires made Hindus poor:**

If all members of a society believe in minimization of their desires, none of them would endeavor to produce wealth more than necessary to satisfy bare needs. So, there would be no savings for future investments. Hence, nobody would accumulate enough capital to use it for setting up new production ventures. Surplus wealth is the basis of modern economy. It is surplus wealth, which can be used as capital to produce more goods and services. Without capital, modern economy cannot survive. So, in a minimalist society, there would always be a shortage of capital, entrepreneurs, financiers and producers. Most of the individuals would thus continue to live perpetually at subsistence level. In other words, they would continue to remain poor.

In addition, with such a minimalist attitude, no science or technology can develop for the following reasons:

First, science and technology can be developed only if there is a strong will on part of the society to expand and maximize fulfilment of desires. But if we are condemning desires and treating desires as necessary evil trying to minimize them, there is no incentive to invent or improve tools for production.

Secondly, science develops out of the need to understand the world. But Hinduism says that the world is not worth knowing – the only thing worth knowing is Self, Atman or Brahman. Hinduism believes that objects of the world are sources of attachment of the Self. With such a condemning attitude towards the external world, naturally no science could have developed in India. A few bright individuals – like Aryabhatt, Brahmagupta and Varahmihir – did develop mathematics and some knowledge in astronomy, but science never became institutionalized in Hindu society as it did in post-Enlightenment Europe. It never became a mainstream collective effort as religion was. Thousands of books were written on religion, but only a handful of books were written on science. It always remained in periphery and an individual effort. Whatever science developed was not because of Hinduism, but despite Hinduism. It always remained a personal drive of a few individuals.

Due to lack of development of science, no great technology could be invented. With no technology,

means of production remained archaic and productivity per person remained low. Poverty was the natural result.

This apathy for science and technology was in fact interpreted as the ‘sign of a great civilization’ by one of the most respected Hindus in modern India -- Mahatma Gandhi. He proudly declares [in *Hind Swaraj – What is true civilization?*]:

*We have managed with the same kind of plough as existed thousands of years ago. We have retained the same kind of cottages that we had in former times and our indigenous education remains the same as before. We have had no system of life-corroding competition. Each followed his own occupation or trade and charged a regulation wage. It was not that we did not know how to invent machinery, but our forefathers knew that, if we set our hearts after such things, we would become slaves and lose our moral fibre. They, therefore, after due deliberation decided that we should only do what we could with our hands and feet.*

With such primitive and unscientific beliefs harbored by Mahatma Gandhi who was (and still is) widely respected by Hindus, poverty was 100% ensured for India!

It is thus clear that Hinduism led to an economic system where there was no desire to create wealth, no economic institutions for efficient production of wealth, no capital and no science & technology. So, poverty was inevitable.

But life is an expansion of desires and dreams. **What we need is not minimization, but maximization of life’s pleasures** in a prioritized way within the constraints of our resources, capabilities and morality. Minimization leads us to shrinkage, decay and premature death, while maximization makes us stronger, smarter and adventurous enabling us to enjoy life to the brim.

All desires tell us one thing – there is some incompleteness somewhere which needs to be fulfilled. Therefore, rather than condemning desires, we need to understand them and try to fulfil them as much as possible.

But Hinduism teaches everything wrong – it teaches us detachment, minimization of desires, hatred for wealth and sex; indifference for family and country. It just wants only one thing – just get rid of the cycle of birth and death! This is a clear denial of life. This is like cutting the very branch we are sitting on!

Without desires, one cannot live even for a second. Clean air, drinkable water, nutritious food, spacious house, furniture, fridge, AC, educational & health care facilities, car, airplane, telephone, computer, insurance, holidays, bank balance, socialization, retirement plans, pollution free environment, security and justice, economic opportunity to earn and prosper, freedom of thought and expression and thousands of other things are required to make life enjoyable. Wanting liberation is also a desire. Trying to understand the world is also a desire. So, how can we get rid of desires or even minimize it? It is an

impossible, unnecessary and positively harmful goal.

### **The belief in minimization of desires made Hindus weak:**

Since Hindu mind set is against science and technology, Kshatriya rulers and warriors continued to fight in primitive ways – with swords, spears and bamboo arrows. They did not take any interest in developing superior military technology and warfare skills. This is proved by repeated defeats of Hindu kings by Muslim marauders and the British colonizers. Hindu kings never used better battle technology such as catapults, artillery, cannon or gun powder used by their enemies. Hindu kings depended more on elephants in battle fields, while the enemy used horses. Elephants are slow to manoeuvre, while horses are much faster. There was also lack of planning and professionalism on part of Hindu army.

All these factors led to subjugation of Hindu society for thousands of years.

But Hindus, till this day, keep on blaming foreign powers for their poverty and weakness. The basic question is: why did Hindus get defeated in the first place from foreign invaders? It was a general practice for kings during ancient and medieval period, to fight with each other, plunder defeated king's treasury/subjects and expand empire. There was no place of morality or weaklings in such a scenario. Military power used to prevail over everything else. So, to remain militarily weak was the worst thing that a king could do to his subjects. Remaining weak was a silent invitation for invaders to come and defeat.

Complaining that we became poor and weak because of the fault of foreign invaders is like complaining by a weak lion against a stronger lion in a jungle saying: "I have lost my territory, preys and harem of lionesses because of the strength, aggressiveness and violent character of my rival lion; he should not have snatched all this from me; it was immoral; my territory should be returned to me." The stronger lion would simply laugh at this naivety! The law of jungle is very clear: the stronger will inherit the kingdom and pass on his genes to the next generation! There is no place of weaklings in nature.

Political rule in ancient and medieval world was based on military might, not on democratic rights of citizens, as it is today. Under such conditions, it is futile to expect benevolence from foreign aggressors. The fault lies in the vanquished for not remaining strong enough to resist enemies effectively.

Thousands of years of subjugation made Hindus not only weak, but also averse to fighting even for justice. A combination of factors – condemnation of the world as source of attachment, constant Hindu (also Buddhist and Jaina) preaching of non-violence, shifting responsibility of killing evil persons to Bhagwan through His numerous 'incarnations', repeated defeats in battles at the hands of foreigners – destroyed even the desire to fight back enemies. This explains why India looks the other way despite repeated terrorist attacks by a small country like Pakistan!

### **The belief in minimization of desires made Hindus self-condemning:**

Nature wants expansion in all dimensions. Our needs expand. Our dreams become bigger. Cities expand. Ideas spread out. The whole universe is expanding even physically. But Hinduism puts a break on expansion of needs. It condemns it as the cause of attachment to the world. Hinduism condemns natural desire to become richer as greed. Greed is regarded as one of the major sins.

So, a Hindu has to live in a dilemma – if he follows his religion seriously, he would remain poor and backward. Then he would feel guilty that he is unable to look after himself and his family well materially and falling behind others. If he does not follow his religion sincerely, and concentrates on the material well-being for himself and his family, he still feels guilty that he is missing something spiritual and the ultimate goal of life. Either way, he feels guilty and condemns himself for lacking in something very important. This leads to reduced self-esteem. A feeling of self-condemnation becomes an underlying tone of his life.

This self-condemnation is the logical outcome of the overall world-view of Hinduism, which treats humans (and all other beings) as fall from the exalted status of Brahman. Hence, they treat human status as fallen (*patit*) and Bhagwan as liberator from this fallen state (*patit pawan*). Naturally, followers of this world-view have to condemn themselves all the time till they get liberation.

Some Hindus try to overcome this dilemma by dividing their life in two stages – in the first stage, they plan to enjoy the world; in the second stage (in their fifties/sixties), they plan to become spiritual! But to begin spirituality so late in life almost always ends in failure.

Some try to combine wealth and liberation by interpreting Hindu scriptures in accordance with their own convenience. But no amount of interpretative acrobatics can change the clear message of Hinduism – ‘minimize worldly pursuits and maximize efforts for liberation’.

So, self-condemnation cannot be avoided in Hinduism. But it has a disastrous effect on Hindus. They cannot enjoy life. They cannot excel in anything. They just end up remaining mediocre. This explains the attitude of Hindus – anything is ok (*chalta hai*). The poor quality of life in India – poverty, filth, encroachment of public space, pollution, archaic rules, corruption, lack of infrastructure, callousness of bureaucracy & politicians and so forth -- is the direct outcome of this attitude. This is why we find poverty, weakness, inefficiency and self-pity permeating every organization of India. Hinduism has totally destroyed the life of Hindus.

### **Harmful influence of Hinduism on economic system of modern India**

Since Hinduism condemns acquisition of ‘excess’ wealth, this gets reflected in the modern economic system too. As soon as Hindus got political power in 1947, they wanted India to be a socialist/mixed economy which considers the rich to be exploiters and sinful. This view was the direct result of the basic beliefs of Hinduism, which condemns wealth as sinful. If excess wealth is considered sinful and sign of greed, the next logical step is to tax the rich excessively. This is what exactly happened.

The policy of punishing the rich industrialists started with Jawaharlal Nehru as the Prime Minister of India when he started controlling and regulating the entire economy strictly through government bureaucracy. He made Public Sector dominating, introduced license-permit system for opening enterprises of the private sector and imposed excessively high rates of income tax. During 1950s and 1960s, when he was the Prime Minister, highest income tax rates were between 80-70%.

This anti-rich, anti-business, anti-private sector trend culminated in the policy of Indira Gandhi, who was the daughter of Jawaharlal Nehru and later became the Prime Minister of India. She imposed an effective income tax rate of 97% in 1973-74 on the highest tax slab! She also nationalized 14 biggest banks, insurance companies, coal mines etc. Though massive tax evasion resulting in generation of huge amount of black money and need for growth in private investment forced the subsequent governments to reduce tax rates, it was still as high as 50% on the highest slab as late as in 1991-92.

It is because of such anti-business policies that the average rate of growth of India stagnated around 3.5% from 1950s to 1980s and per capita income growth averaged 1.3%. This was rightly called as the Hindu rate of growth in a derogatory sense.

Though bad consequences of such policies made Hindus a little more pragmatic as evident from 1991 economic liberalizations, but considerable obstacles created by the government are still in place to deter an honest entrepreneur to start a business. According to the Ease of Doing Business Index 2015, prepared by World Bank, India still ranks 142 out of 189 countries of the world! The highest income tax rate in India is still 30% and there are still scores of other taxes!

Such harsh economic policies against industrialists and entrepreneurs are the direct logical outcome of the Hindu mind set which considers acquisition of wealth as greed and sinful.

## **2. Condemnation of wealth reduced the possibility of attainment of even liberation**

What are the conditions required for attainment of liberation?

According to Hindu religious texts, attainment of liberation requires long hours of daily practice of meditation (stilling of mind) for years, even decades. But, in order to focus on meditation, one must have the following conditions:

Worry-free mind

Absence of hunger and thirst

Absence of bodily pain, discomfort or sleepiness

A private room

Plenty of leisure time

Air-conditioning of the room to avoid distraction due to excessive heat or cold (at least a

fan/heater)

Sound-proofing (at least tolerable noise level)

Absence of interruptions from spouse, kids, couriers, maids, friends, phones etc during meditation

Absence of mosquitos and flies

Following reasons show how minimization of the desire for wealth would fail to satisfy these conditions:

**Reason 1 – Minimization leads to deprivation, which leads to more agitation of mind.**

We feel happy and contented when our needs are fulfilled. We feel unhappy and frustrated when they are not fulfilled.

It thus follows that if we forcibly try to reduce our needs/desires, we are going to deprive ourselves of something which would have fulfilled us and made us happy. This deprivation would agitate the mind.

Suppose, for example, that a Hindu decides that he would curtail his desire for a car, because it is not necessary for survival. Now, he will have to travel by bus to office. If he misses the right bus someday, he would reach late to the office. Or, if the bus is too crowded, he will again miss the bus. The bus would take more time to reach office. Somebody may pickpocket him in the bus. He may be perspiring in the heat and dust of the bus. He may see his other colleagues going by car and he may feel inferior and low. All these problems would start agitating his mind. This is just one problem.

Suppose he decides to remove all means of communications too -- TV, computer and newspapers -- from his house, as he thinks they are not necessary for survival. Now, he would have no means to connect to the religious, political, social, scientific and cultural happenings across the world. He cannot now participate in any discussion except his office matters. He cannot take any long-term decisions of investment or education of his children, because they require knowledge of what is happening around the world.

These are just two examples. Imagine what would happen if he removes washing machine, dishwasher, fridge, dining table, curtains, beds, ACs, sofas etc. from his house under the belief that they represent only superfluous desires, not needs. The house will be in a mess. His mind now may be agitated all the time.

Imagine a Hindu monk trying to do meditation in a forest or an Ashram (a place under the care of a spiritual master) two thousand years ago. Mosquitoes bite him. Flies hum near his ears. His scalp is itching, because he does not get a haircut and does not use shampoo or soap for bathing. He is having bad breath because he cannot brush or floss his teeth. He is feeling weak because he does not get nutritious food through begging. Even Ashram-cooked food is tasteless and lacks adequate nutrition. Cold wind is

blowing and he has no blanket – so he is feeling cold. Some wild animals are loitering around him and he risks being attacked by them. He is feeling thirsty, but the river is too far. And so on.

Can the monk under these conditions focus on meditation? He will feel deprived. He will be constantly worried how to find solution to the problems he created for himself. With such a worried and agitated mind, meditation would become impossible!

### **Reason 2 – Minimization costs a lot of time, giving us less free time for meditation.**

Minimization of desires may save some money and effort, but it costs a lot in terms of time. Washing machine and dishwasher save our time in cleaning clothes and utensils. Microwave saves time in warming up food. Car and airplane save time of traveling. Computer and internet save time in acquiring information and communicating. And so on.

Absence of these marvelous machines under the Hindu program of minimization would demand more of our time to do the same job. Any technology which saves even one minute adds the same amount of time to our kitty of free disposable time, which can be utilized for doing meditation. So, minimization reduces leisure-time, which is the basis of all spiritual activities.

To sum up, minimization of desires creates too many obstructions on the path of liberation!

### **3. Condemnation of desire for sexual pleasure made Hindus uncelebrative and too sexual to even think of liberation**

Sex has been very strongly condemned by Hinduism (as well as all other Indian religions). The first of the 4 passions condemned continuously is sex (*Kama*). [Others are anger (*Krodha*), greed (*Lobha*) and attachment (*Moha*)].

Let me first quote some passages from Hindu texts which condemn sexual pleasure:

Gita

5.22 - *Sensual pleasures are verily the source of misery, and have a beginning and an end. Therefore the wise, O Arjuna, does not rejoice in sensual pleasures.*

13.09-11-- *Detachment, non-fondness with son, wife, and home; ... this is said to be knowledge. That which is contrary to this is ignorance.*

16.16 -- *Bewildered by many fancies; entangled in the net of delusion; addicted to the enjoyment of sensual pleasures; they fall into a foul hell.*

Ashtavakra Gita

10.6. *Kingdoms, children, wives, bodies, pleasures - these have all been lost to you; life after life, attached to them though you were.*

10.7. *Enough of wealth, sensuality and good deeds. In the forest of samsara the mind has never*

found satisfaction in these.

Manu Smriti

12.38. The craving after sensual pleasures is declared to be the mark of Darkness [Tamo Guna], the pursuit of wealth is the mark of Activity [Rajo Guna], the desire to gain spiritual merit is the mark of Goodness [Sato Guna]; each later named quality is better than the preceding one.

Bhagwat Purana

3.30.8. He gives heart and senses to a woman, who falsely charms him with Maya (illusion). He enjoys solitary embraces and talking with her, and he is enchanted by the sweet words of his small children.

3.31.40. The woman, created by Bhagwan is the representation of Maya, and one who associates with such Maya by accepting services must certainly know that this is the way of death, just like a blind well covered with grass.

9.19.14. As supplying butter to a fire does not diminish the fire but instead increases it more and more, the endeavor to stop lusty desires by continual enjoyment can never be successful.

11.18.43. A householder may approach his wife for sex only at the time prescribed for begetting children. Otherwise, the householder should practice celibacy, austerity, cleanliness of mind and body

Garuda Purana

6.39. Who is more sinful than the fool who, attached to sense-objects, spends in vain the human birth which was difficult to obtain?

It is obvious from these quotes that Hinduism permits to have sex with one's married wife only for begetting children. Sex in any other form is condemned as lust, sensual pleasure or sinful passion.

### **Why so much hatred for sex?**

There may be 3 reasons:

#### 1. Sex considered as pandering to the body

The aim of Indian religions is to detach the soul from the body. Doing sex is considered pandering to the instincts of the body. If soul is to be detached from the body, focus has to be on the process of separation of the soul from the body, not wasting time and energy on satisfying the desires of the body.

Suppose a prisoner decides to run away from his jail secretly. Now, he would focus on making some escape routes in the wall or the ground etc, rather than cleaning and decorating his room. The same process applies to the soul which has to get rid of the bondage of the body.

#### 2. Sex considered as cause of depletion of energy

Propounders of Indian religions and all modern gurus and swamis continue to preach that sex drains vital energy so essential for spiritual upliftment. They believe that the energy consumed in production of sperms and their ejection is colossal. So, they argue that such precious energy cannot be permitted to be thrown away just for pleasure. The energy, according to them, should be used only for procreation, and for nothing else. Celibacy (Brahmacharya) is thus a means to preserve energy.

### 3. More sex meant more children

Before the use of contraceptives, sex could result in unwanted children increasing economic burden. So, if someone aspired to attain liberation, he was advised to limit mating in order to have less number of children. So, celibacy was used as a tool for family planning.

Let us now examine all these 3 reasons to avoid sex.

The first reason:

#### 1. Sex considered as pandering to the body

This ideal is completely against nature and therefore cannot be achieved.

Hinduism says that sex should be used by householders only for procreation within marriage. Sex, in other words, should not be done only for pleasure. Monks and nuns are expected to observe 100% celibacy. But this is biologically impossible.

As discussed before, our basic biological needs cannot be altered by our beliefs. However hard we may believe in celibacy, however much we regulate our diet, however much we may do meditation, sexual desires would keep on rising again and again. Just as we cannot stop growth of hair or nails only by believing that it is bad, just as a woman cannot stop menstruating by simply believing that it is sinful, we cannot stop the desire for sex by believing that it is bad.

Asking people not to desire sex for pleasure is like asking the Sun not to radiate heat, or like asking water not to flow out from a pot which is placed under a running water tap.

In an adult healthy male, everyday millions of sperms are produced. Once the storage capacity of sperms is filled up, there is a natural desire to release the sperms. Similarly, in every adult women, every month one egg is made ready for procreation. This natural abundance in production of sperms and eggs creates desire in humans to have sex much more frequently than just once or twice in a lifetime for actual procreation as desired by Hinduism. So, the very biological constitution of human bodies is such that sex will have to be enjoyed much more frequently than the number of children one wants to have.

But why have we evolved biological systems which produce such an abundance of sperms?

There are two reasons:

First, chances of fertilization is much better when the number of sperms around an egg is very high

taking into account the possible destruction of sperms in a hostile environment. This situation facilitated evolution of sexual mechanisms which produce a very large number of sperms in males. A man, for example, releases about 300 million sperms in one ejaculation!

Secondly, an abundance in the number of offspring was needed for each species for survival after taking into account the toll taken by predators, food shortage, extreme weather and peer rivalry. If both predators and preys are to co-exist, species of prey will have to produce more babies so that even after getting eaten by predators, they survive in sufficient numbers. This necessitated that sex should be biologically hardwired in each organism in such a way that it has the potential for reproducing offspring in abundance. Without such a mechanism, genes could not have been transferred so successfully. It is this successful continuous flow of genes which has made us what we are today from out of the first form of primitive life.

So, without a very intense and dominant desire for sex, the entire biological evolution would come to a grinding halt. The entire biological food chain would collapse.

Humans do not have to go on producing babies each time they feel the urge for sex, because there are no predators of humans and Earth is already overpopulated.

So, sex will have to be indulged only for pleasure. It becomes an unasked boon. It becomes a gift of bliss given by nature. There is no other option available for humans unless they are made sexually impotent by special drugs.

Even if one sincerely wants to restrict sex, nature finds other ways to express it in the form of wet dream (dream sex), masturbation, homosexuality, phone sex, pornography etc. Nature has not given us option between sex and no sex, but only between good sex and bad sex. Whenever we try to stop or minimize sex, it backfires.

In view of these facts of nature, it is wrong on part of Hinduism to condemn sex as something base, something dirty, and something which must be avoided at all costs. In any case, it is impossible to remain 100% celibate. It is an impossible, unnecessary and undesirable goal.

Let us examine the second reason now.

## 2. Sex considered as cause of depletion of energy

This myth has been propagated by Hinduism (and all other Indian religions) for thousands of years and is still being propagated by modern-age Swamis, Gurus and Babas.

But this belief is false.

Let us first calculate the energy spent in sexual intercourse.

An average moderately active adult male in his thirties needs around 2600 calories per day.

Energy in terms of calorie spent by a 70 Kg man for 30 minutes for doing the following activities is as noted below:

Bicycling, stationary: vigorous – 390

Running @ 10 minutes per mile -- 370

Aerobics, high impact – 260

Swimming general – 220

Gardening, weeding -- 170

Stretching, Hath Yoga – 150

Walking @ 17 minutes per mile -- 150

**Sexual intercourse – 120**

Cooking – 90

Light office work -- 55

Computer work – 50

Watching TV -- 30

Spending 120 calorie in sex out of the calorie requirement of 2600 per day shows that sex does not take too much energy compared to several other exercises and activities. So, condemning sex on the grounds that it causes depletion of energy is unjustified.

On the contrary, all modern researches on sex demonstrate that guilt-free sex is very good for health and long life. Far from making weak, guilt-free romantic sex with one's partner invigorates all the functions of the body. Research after research prove the same thing – sex keeps one fit, makes skin glow, dispels depression, brings sound sleep, fights asthma, improves blood circulation, tones body muscle, ensures mental well-being and increases longevity.

Just google on this subject and you will find thousands of sites quoting scientific researches which prove these facts.

In fact, study of the life spans of known celibates completely refutes the claims of Indian religions that celibacy prolongs life. See below the life span of some known 'enlightened' persons who were supposedly celibates, and who died naturally:

<b>Name</b>	<b>Life span (in years)</b>
Mahavira	72
Gautam Buddha	80

Shankarachrya	32
Namdeo	80
Gyaneshwar	21
Tukaram	48
Kabir	78
Nanak	71
Chaitanya	48
Meera Bai	49
Guru Angad	48
Guru Ramdas	47
Guru Har Rai	31
Ramkrishna	50
Vivekananda	39
Sri Aurobindo	78
Raman Maharshi	71
Sivananda	76
Nityananda	64
Muktananda	74
Rama Teerth	33
Yogananda	59
Bhaktivedanta	81
Swami Rama	71

Almost 50% of them died before 50. None of them has lived above 81. This is the normal life span in today's developed world. I would have been impressed if all these celibates would have lived for 100 years or more. Then, the link between celibacy and longevity could have been proved. Incidentally, today, there are more than 300,000 people living on this planet who are above 100. Most of them were married and they were not practicing celibacy.

The belief that celibacy prevents disease is also false. Maharishi Raman, a celibate, suffered and died from cancer. Ramkishna Paramhansa, another celibate, too died from cancer. Vivekananda, a celibate, had several diseases – insomnia, diabetes, migraine, asthma and liver/kidney/heart related

diseases. J. Krishnamurti, a celibate, suffered from severe migraine.

So, the Hindu belief that celibacy makes us disease-free and enables us to live long is completely false and harmful.

Now, let us examine the last reason for condemnation of sex.

### 3. More sex meant more children

Before the invention of contraceptives, sex and reproduction were causally linked. More children would increase the economic burden of the would-be aspirant of liberation. So, he was advised to avoid sex. This was a valid reason for that time.

But now, with contraceptives, this is no longer valid. Now, sex can be undertaken purely for pleasure!

Thus, we find that all the reasons given by Indian religions to condemn sex for pleasure are invalid.

So asking everybody to practice celibacy is extremely harmful. It makes them feel guilty. It makes their entire life an unnecessary struggle between natural desire for sex and religious need for celibacy. A lot of sexual inadequacies (impotence, premature ejaculation, frigidity on part of women etc) prevalent today among Hindus is at least partly due to this dilemma and guilt.

### **Condemnation of pleasures derived through senses:**

Hinduism has not only condemned pleasure of sex, it is also against even minor sensual pleasures derived through our five senses!

What is sensual pleasure?

Sensual pleasure may be defined as any pleasure which arises when the five human senses come in contact with certain desired objects. The following is an illustrative list of objects, taken at random, which generate sensual pleasures through concerned senses:

Eyes – Beauty of nature; beauty of women; beauty of buildings and gardens; natural and man-made wonders

Ears – Music; melodious voice of loved ones; appreciative words from people; sound of birds and animals; sound of sea, rivers, waterfalls, rains and wind

Nose – Smell of food, opposite sex, perfume and flowers

Tongue – Taste of food

Skin – Sexual pleasure; touch of softness of the body of opposite sex; touch of flowers and other soft objects; comfortable level of warmth and coolness

Each of the 5 senses consists of organs with specialized cells that have receptors for specific

stimuli. These cells have links to the nervous system and thus to the brain. Sense data is received from the outside world first by the senses and then transmitted to the brain which interprets it according to its world-view.

Thus, these 5 senses are the only means to know the outside world and as such these organs are absolutely necessary for survival and prosperity. They were developed through millions of years of evolution.

Sensual pleasures are those sensations which, over years of evolution, have been developed by organisms to give positive signals in our search of right food, shelter, mate etc.

For example:

A) We enjoy seeing natural scenery – ocean, mountains, forest, rivers, snow, sunrise, full Moon etc – and we enjoy hearing the sound of nature – waterfall, chirping of birds, sea waves colliding with land, whistling wind etc. This is because most of the time we live in urban settings where we cannot perceive these natural events. By perceiving them, we reconnect ourselves with the big universe of which we are an organic part. We feel big and great. It wipes out our pettiness and therefore heals our psychic wounds. So, these perceptions invigorate us and make us happy.

B) Sex is an intensely pleasurable experience and that ensures that it is undertaken frequently which in turn increases the chances of creation of babies, which in turn is necessary for continuation of evolutionary process.

C) A woman with tall and hourglass figure is considered to be beautiful (a pleasurable sensation received through eyes). It has been found that such women are more likely to give birth of healthy babies than women of other types of figures. So, perception of beauty is linked to successful reproduction process.

D) The sweet taste of food, which is a pleasurable sensation, was liked by humans because it gave good amount of glucose, necessary for survival during primitive times.

E) Good smell of food is an indication that it is not stale or rotten. Good smelling food is generally healthy. Smell of flowers and perfume transports us into an enchanting world and lifts us from depression and despondency.

F) We enjoy a certain kind of music, a pleasurable experience received through ears, because it relaxes us and connects us to the deeper level of self.

G) Everybody likes to live and work in an air-conditioned room or office because we can then focus on what we want to do rather than fighting coldness or hotness. Thus, the pleasant feeling of comfortable temperature is linked to our efficiency.

So, all sensually pleasurable experiences have been developed by humans through years of evolutionary processes for their beneficial effects in terms of successful survival, mating, entertainment, relaxation or efficiency. All these conditions of survival, mating etc are necessary even for attaining liberation. So, their outright condemnation by Hinduism creates impediments towards attainment of even its own goal of liberation.

But why are Indian religions so much against sensual pleasures? This antagonism originates from their world-views. They believe that a soul has to get detached from the body to attain liberation – so all bodily pleasures need to be condemned so that soul does not get attached to those bodily pleasures. Once soul gets attached to those pleasures, it would not want to attain liberation.

But this fear is unfounded. If I like to eat tasty (and nutritious) food, it does not mean that I would be necessarily addicted to it and all the time I would be eating or thinking about eating! On the contrary, if I am assured of good and tasty food in time, I would be free from my hankering for good food and then I can easily concentrate on other things.

If I enjoy sex, it does not mean that I would go on indulging in it 24 hours a day – I physically cannot do it, even if I want it! In fact, if I have great sex with a desired partner whenever I really want it, I would be free from desire of sex for the next few days or weeks. So, far from getting attached, I would be free from it for some time. The same is true for all other sensual pleasures.

Thus, condemnation of sensual pleasures by Hinduism (and all other Indian religions) is totally unwarranted, unpractical and is an impediment even in attaining liberation.

### **Let me now describe the harmful effects of repression of sex/sensual pleasures:**

Due to repression of sex, Hindus have become extremely sexual. Sex has pervaded their whole life. Repressed sex keeps coming out through different channels – abuses involving women's sexuality, rampant sexual molestation of girls and women, rapes, having sex with unwilling wives, homosexuality, illegal but flourishing prostitution business, masturbation, pornography and so on.

Repression of sex or feeling guilty about sex sets in several sexual inadequacies such as impotence, premature ejaculation, frigidity and so on.

Sex is the deepest celebration of life and happiness. Once our material needs are fulfilled and we are happy about it, we are mentally ready to enjoy sex. So, sex is a statement and expression of happiness. An unhappy person cannot enjoy sex. Sports, music, dance, adventures exploring nature, holidaying, helping others etc are other expressions of celebration of life and happiness. But if sex is considered bad, the celebrative aspect of life gets blocked. Then the only driving force left in life is growth – financial or spiritual. Then life becomes boring and monotonous adversely affecting even growth. Hinduism has no concept of celebration. All that it wants is liberation – getting

rid of the world as quickly as possible. This is why in Hinduism, there is no concept of improvement of the world, no concept of beautification of the world and no celebration of celebration of the world!

Blocking the celebrative attitude of life gradually closes a person. He becomes only self-seeking. He forgets the joy of loving, helping others and sharing life. This explains why Hindus are so indifferent to the sufferings and sensitivity of other Hindus around them. So, they keep their eyes closed on every misery surrounding them -- poverty, slums, filth, pollution, encroachment of public land, corruption, violence, terrorism, poor quality of government services, inefficiencies of even the private sector and so forth. They just think only of themselves and their families. They become 'Black Holes' – they want to appropriate everything from others, but nothing comes out from them! This cocooning makes their life even more depressing and miserable.

Such a miserable and serious person cannot attain even liberation. Spiritual growth requires a lot of loosening of oneself, a lot of relaxation, a lot of playfulness. With no-celebration attitude, mind becomes tense and agitated. Then, spiritual growth becomes impossible.

Thus, Hinduism has proved to be the root cause of all the problems India is facing today. Anti-wealth and anti-sex philosophy of Hinduism has completely ruined India. It has made the life of 1 billion Hindus miserable. Hinduism needs fundamental changes in order to remain relevant in today's world.

### **Condemnation of sexual pleasures led to explosive venting out of sexual passion**

It is this unnatural repression of sex which resulted in explosive venting of sexual passion through writing of books on sex and erotic sculptures of Khajuraho and Konark. These works are totally against the Hindu ethos.

The plethora of sex-related books produced by Hindus in ancient and medieval India such as *Kama Sutra* (aphorisms of sex) by Vatsyayan, *Ratirahasya* (secrets of love) by Kukkoka [also known as *Koka Shastra*], *Panchasakya* (the five arrows) by Jyotirisha, *Smara Pradipa* (the light of love) by Gunakara, *Ratimanjari* (The garland of love) by Jayadeva, *Rasmanjari* (the sprout of love) by Bhanudatta, *Ananga Ranga* (The stage of love) by Kullianmull etc are simply venting of expressions of repressed sexuality. Since they were composed within the womb of restrictive Hindu ethos, they have been written in tongue-in-cheek style.

The same goes true for erotic Hindu sculptures of Khajuraho and Konark too. Around 85 Khajuraho temples were built by Chandela kings between 950 and 1050 CE spread over an area of 20 sq. km, out of which only 20 temples have survived till date. These temples depict sexual orgies and wild mating in unusual postures. This is the expression of the repressed desires for sex.

Konark temple of Orissa built around 1250 CE also depicts such mating positions.

The passion of eroticism displayed in these temples is despite the restrictive Hindu ethos, not as a

result of it. They are just explosive venting of repressed sexuality imposed on the society by Hinduism, when the society could not contain sexuality any more.

#### **4. Hinduism leads to mental conflicts, not liberation**

So far, we have seen that Hinduism condemns wealth and sexual pleasure. Now, let us see what happens if we decide to follow Hinduism strictly and live a very, very simple and Spartan life aimed at only liberation.

Life is a process. Attaining a goal simply means undergoing a process of doing certain things.

For example, attaining the goal of becoming a billionaire requires selecting an appropriate business, understanding the business, developing a business model to earn decent profit, executing it, supervising it and so forth. The preparatory process itself takes most of the time (may be, 95%) and only the last segment of the process (taking only 5% of processing time) yields profit and satisfies our need to become a billionaire.

Similarly, attaining the goal of liberation requires survival of the body, which in turn requires earning livelihood; procuring food, clothes, house, appliances etc; keeping the body well-nourished & healthy; finding leisure; etc. In fact, the process of keeping the body alive and healthy itself takes most of our time, say 95%. However, not these 95% activities, but doing meditation alone (which may take 5% of our time), is believed to yield the fruit of liberation.

Liberation is believed, by Hinduism, to be the process of detachment of Brahman from the mind-body system. It is believed that Brahman does not require body, mind, food, energy, sex, sensual enjoyments etc to attain the state of liberation. It is supposed to attain that state by just detaching itself from the mind-body system. So, Hinduism believes that there is no causal link between the processes of mind-body leading to its survival and the detachment of the soul from the mind-body. This logic drives Hinduism to have to admit that the desires of mind-body are necessary evil.

But human life consists mainly (95%) of activities that are processes to satisfy our body-mind based needs. This implies that, according to Hinduism, 95% of our life's time has to be spent in doing something which is a necessary evil.

But as soon as we believe something to be a necessary evil, we start hating it; we do not want to do it; we want to revolt. We want to do something which is 100% enjoyable, not something which is a necessary evil.

So, by splitting human life into two opposite sets of desires [desires of mind-body vs desire of soul] and condemning the first set of desires as necessary evil, Hinduism makes the conflict between the two sets of desires inevitable.

But this is a conflict between self vs self. Since both parties are the same self, nobody can win this

war. There would be only dissipation of energy in this conflict. Thus, this internal conflict is doomed to end in the failure to achieve anything. While this conflict is raging, we can neither satisfy the desires of our mind-body nor fulfil the desire of the soul. This would ultimately end in having a sense of whole life gone waste, defeat, despair, hopelessness, self-guilt and self-pity. What could be worse than this?

## **5. Obsession with liberation is counter-productive**

Hinduism says that one should live only to attain the state of liberation. How is liberation to be achieved? Hinduism says: by stilling the mind. Patanjali in his *Yoga-Sutras* (*Yoga-Sutras 2*) defines *Yoga* as control of all thoughts.

But if one wants that no thought should come to his mind, he is creating another thought – the thought of stopping all thoughts. The harder one tries to stop thoughts, the harder one thinks to stop all thoughts. So, the very venture of *Yoga* is doomed to fail. By trying not to think, one has to think! The more one is obsessed with attaining a thoughtless state of mind, the more one becomes mired in thinking! The more one tries to achieve the state of thought-less-ness, the more one gets frustrated of one's failure and the more one thinks!

To resolve this issue, Classical Hinduism brought the concept of *Bhakti*. It says that humans cannot attain the state of stillness of mind / liberation without the grace of *Bhagwan* especially in *Kali Yuga*. So, they recommended chanting of the name of *Bhagwan* continuously in the hope that *Bhagwan* would be pleased and stop the wanderings of the mind.

But even chanting a name can be of no help. Chanting itself is a mental activity. No mental activity could lead to cessation of mental activities. Chanting is merely an attempt to entertain only thoughts of *Bhagwan* to the exclusion of all other thoughts. But even thoughts of *Bhagwan* cannot lead to stillness of mind.

Neither Hinduism nor any other Indian religion has any solution to this problem.

The solution lies in letting go, just enjoying the gap between thoughts as well as the process of thinking. The more relaxed we are, the more non-serious we are about attaining the state of thought-less-ness, the more there is a possibility of the desired state happening. But this sort of mind set is alien to Indian religions. This mind set is possible only within a completely different philosophical framework, which I will indicate in the last chapter of this book.

## **6. Condemnation of natural emotions such as *Kama* (lust), *Krodha* (anger), *Lobha* (greed), *Moha* (attachment), *Mada* (self-pride) and *Matsara* (jealousy) made Hindus guilt-ridden and hypocritical**

Condemnation of these so-called *Vikaras* (defilements/bad passions) has been made by almost all Hindu texts. All Gurus and Swamis – from ancient to the present time – have also been condemning these

“Vikaras”. Now, let us analyze each of them one by one:

**Kama (Lust)** – On the one hand, Kama is included as one of the 4 Purusharthas (goals) of life [Dharma, Artha, Kama and Moksha]. On the other, it is cited as the first out of the infamous 6 Vikaras! So, which meaning of Kama should be followed?

As I have explained earlier, when Kama is included in the four Purusharthas, it means “sex only for reproduction within a married relationship”, while when it is condemned as lust and one of the defilements, it means “intense desire to indulge in maximum sex within or outside marriage”.

So, what is the difference between Kama as a Purushartha and Kama as lust?

The difference is only in degree: Hinduism wants minimum sex and that too only within marriage, while there is a natural human tendency to have maximum sex even outside marriage.

Why does Hinduism want minimum sex?

As I have explained earlier, the basic goal of Hinduism is to reduce attachment in order to facilitate final detachment of soul from body (Moksha).

By doing sex, one becomes attached to one's sexual partner.

Secondly, before contraception was invented, sex almost always meant creation of more babies. More babies meant more responsibility and more attachment.

Thirdly, Hinduism believes that sex drains out “vital energy” and therefore makes you too weak to strive for Moksha.

I have already explained the harmful effects of suppression of sex earlier. So, now, we go to the next “defilement”.

**Krodha (anger)** – Anger is a strong feeling of displeasure and belligerence aroused by a real or imagined unfair treatment.

Anger prepares the body for what is known as the “**Fight or Flight**” response, which is an early evolutionary adaptation to allow better coping with dangerous and unexpected situations. With dilated air passages, for example, the body is able to get more oxygen into the lungs in a timely manner, increasing physical performance for short bursts of time, enabling the ability to fight back or get away. Angry humans and animals make loud sounds in an attempt to look larger and more intimidating; animals bare their teeth and stare – this behavior is designed to warn aggressors to stop their threatening behavior. Anger is a natural emotion that has a functional value for our survival.

In a civilized society, when a person or a group of persons violates human rights or flouts contracts mutually agreed upon, anger rightly arises.

Consider the following examples of anger:

A lady is going in a street with a purse in her hand. A man snatches her purse and runs away. Is that lady not justified to be angry with him and wish for his punishment? Suppose the man is caught – would she not be justified in handing him over to the police for prosecution?

You are sleeping at 11PM and in your neighborhood, people are bursting crackers to celebrate their wedding or a religious festival. Would you not feel angry?

You have applied for passport, but the case is being delayed by government officials. You go to complaint, but the officer-in-charge does nothing to expedite your case. Would you not be angry at the indifference of the system?

Your friend has gone to the market. A terrorist explodes a bomb and your friend gets killed. Would you not be angry?

There are hundreds of such examples, where your anger is fully justified. Anger makes you think and strive hard to get justice, find a solution to a problem or change an unjust system. But Hinduism goes on condemning anger without trying to understand the reasons behind it.

In fact, anger can never be wrong. Anger arises because you think you have been wronged. Now, the feeling of being wronged is caused by certain beliefs. The belief may be true or false. If it is based on truth, it is fully justified. If it is based on false beliefs, it is not justified. So, the feeling of being wronged may or may not be based on facts. But anger is always aroused by the feeling of being wronged. So, anger cannot and should not be blamed – rather our ignorance should be blamed for concluding that we have been wronged, when we have not been.

An example would make it clear. Suppose your employee does not turn up for work on time. You start getting angry blaming him for being careless, lazy etc. After one hour, you get a call from his wife that the employee got his leg fractured when he fell down from the commuter train while coming to work – he has been hospitalized and lying unconscious. Immediately, your anger disappears because now you realize that your conclusion that you have been wronged by your employee was false. Had the employee not turned up on time because of his carelessness, you would have been fully justified in getting angry.

So, it is not the anger which should be blamed, rather our tendency to jump to a conclusion without understanding the whole situation should be blamed. In the final analysis, it is ignorance about the real situation, system, culture or human nature that is behind our false conclusions. So, the solution lies in striving for more understanding, not in condemning anger.

But however much we may strive for understanding others, there would always be some situations where there would be irreconcilable clash of interests between two rival individuals/groups. This clash may be between rival religions, political parties, ethnic groups, corporate houses or individuals. Such irreconcilable clashes would inevitably result in conflict – anger is an expression of this conflict. This is nature's way to promote the strongest, the fittest, and the smartest, because in a conflict only such

individuals would win.

Anger, when fully justified, does not make us unhappy. Rather, it makes us happy that we could set something right; that we could punish the wrong-doer. By punishing the wrong-doer, we serve the society because in future that wrong-doer will think hundred times before committing the same wrong to some other person.

But should we always be angry on slightest provocation?

Well, anger is very costly!

Anger is like a missile of fire directed towards another person to punish him for the injustice – real or imagined – done by him. So, a lot of energy is consumed by anger by raised voice, higher blood pressure, faster heart beats, raised stress levels etc. All that is bad for health.

So, if by removal of false beliefs or misunderstanding, anger can be avoided, it should be avoided. But where it is not the case of misunderstanding, but a case of irreconcilable clash of interests and values, fight becomes inevitable. Then one must get angry and fight.

**Lobha (Greed)** – Greed is generally understood to mean excessive desire for something, especially wealth. It is uncomplimentary in implication.

When we say a person is greedy, what do we mean? We may mean any of the following:

He is neglecting all his familial and social relationships and other finer things of life in his passionate pursuit of wealth.

He is adopting unethical means (lying, cheating etc) to make a quick buck.

In the first sense, we call a person greedy because as per our own values, one should not neglect relationships or other valuable things of life while pursuing wealth.

For example, suppose I say: “My friend has become too involved in his profitable business; all the time he is busy making money; he has become so greedy that he does not come to my parties anymore.”

Here, I am calling my friend greedy, because he does not conform to my values. For me, social relationship is more important than money; for my friend, it is just the reverse. Both are right in pursuit of their own values – no view has any moral superiority over the other. So, calling him “greedy” is essentially my emotive expression; it is my subtle way of disapproving his pursuit of wealth under the false belief that pursuit of wealth is inferior to developing a social relationship. So, allegation of being greedy turns out to be a concealed form of disapproval for pursuit of wealth due to false beliefs about superiority of one value over the other. It is also possible that I may be calling him “greedy” because I may be feeling jealous on account of his successes in earning wealth.

Now, let us analyze ‘greed’ in the second sense.

Suppose, someone says: “My neighbor shopkeeper has become greedy, as he is selling adulterated provisions to make more profit.” Or, “Government officials, out of greed, are taking bribes from entrepreneurs for grant of approvals.”

Now, there are 2 components of greed here: first part is: the desire to increase earnings and the second part is: doing it unethically. There is nothing wrong in desiring increase in earnings – in fact, it is a very natural desire, which must be pursued. It is only practicing unethical means that ought to be condemned, because it is very harmful for the society. Greed does not necessarily lead to unethical means. ‘Greed’ just turns out to denote ‘a very passionate, very deep desire to earn wealth and having a very strong willingness to do all the hard work to satisfy that desire’. So, there is nothing wrong with the desire part of the greed and of course, such a desire can be very much satisfied ethically too.

So, it is immorality associated with greed which needs to be condemned, not “greed” as such.

**Moha (Attachment)** – Attachment is a feeling that binds one to a person, thing, organization, ideal and the like. This binding happens because one’s needs are satisfied by the other person, object, organization, ideal etc. I have already explained in point no. 1 of this sub-chapter how attachment is natural and how it is self-contradictory to condemn attachment.

**Mada (self-pride)** -- Hinduism condemns self-pride. It also calls it egoism. What does it mean?

Egoism may mean any of the following:

1. The feeling of I-ness – the feeling that I am an individual distinct from other persons and objects;
2. The feeling of self-pride for one’s qualities, capabilities and successes;
3. Overbearing pride; offensive display of superiority or self-importance; arrogance

Let us examine each meaning one by one:

1. The feeling of I-ness – This is a direct, intuitive feeling that I am an individual separate from others. Hence, this “I” cannot be a defilement and there is no possibility or need to eliminate it. So, condemnation of egoism in this sense by Hinduism is totally unwarranted.

2. Self-pride – When we achieve desired results on account of our own efforts, capabilities and qualities, we feel happy. Success boosts our confidence in ourselves. Success enhances our worth in our own eyes. Self-pride is nothing but recognition of this confidence and worth. So, there is nothing wrong in having self-pride for the real qualities and capabilities that we have developed. Thus condemnation of egoism in this sense is totally unwarranted.

3. Overbearing pride or offensive display of superiority – What we call “overbearing pride” displayed by someone may be based on either existing qualities in him which we may not be aware of or it may not be based on existing qualities in him.

In the first case, we need to change our opinion about him and need not call it “overbearing”.

In the second case, it becomes just an example of “telling lies” (pretending to have something one does not possess). Such lies are resorted to by some people to impress someone to get certain benefits. This is certainly unethical and deserves our condemnation. But, in the final analysis, it is not ‘egoism’, but the immoral act of cheating/lying which is the culprit here.

**Matsara (jealousy)** – Hinduism keeps on condemning jealousy without understanding its real implications.

Jealousy is a feeling of resentment against a rival or a person enjoying success or advantages.

For example:

I and my neighbor have started the same type of business separately, but I fail and he succeeds. So I feel jealous.

My girlfriend has been seduced by someone and she has deserted me. I feel jealous of the guy who took her away from me.

Jealousy is thus a part of desire itself. If I desire something, but unable to get it, while another person gets it, I start feeling jealous about him. It is nature’s way of motivating me to work smarter and harder. Without this feeling, there would be no driving force for me to overcome my shortcomings.

Jealousy is an integral part of desiring itself. If I desire something, work for it and get it, I feel happy. But if I do not work hard enough to get it, while my friend gets it, I feel jealous of him. So it is just a punishment given by nature to me for my not trying hard enough, smart enough and passionately enough. I must learn this lesson. Then I improve myself and I get success; I surpass even my friend. Then I feel happy and contented. Now there is no jealousy in me. Now, my friend may be feeling jealous about me – now he should try harder. So, this process would continue leading to higher and higher levels of achievements. Jealousy is therefore good for everybody – for me, for my friend and for the society.

Thus, jealousy should never be condemned.

To sum up:

This analysis clearly demonstrates that condemnation of these 7 emotions by Hinduism is completely unjustified. This condemnation has made Hindus guilt-ridden, hypocritical and mentally sick, because suppression of these natural emotions is neither desirable nor possible.

But the constant condemnation of these emotions by Hindu Gurus and Swamis forces Hindus to try to practice suppression of these emotions. Naturally, they fail to do it. Then they start blaming themselves that they are not trying hard enough! This makes them feel guilty. They believe something and do something else – this makes them hypocritical. This pulling of self in opposite directions finally makes them mentally sick. They start getting depressed, lose their self-confidence and lose their zest for life.

## **7. The belief that misdeeds in past life cause misery in the present life discouraged endeavors to find real solutions to misery**

In sub chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism], I have already demonstrated that doctrine of karma is illogical and false. Now, we will see how this doctrine is also extremely harmful for the society.

Doctrine of karma says that action and its consequence are like cause and effect, even though they may be separated in time. If this is true, it would mean that whatever qualities, inabilities and conditions I am having at present is the direct consequence of my ‘past karma of previous births’. So, just as effect cannot be separated from cause, my conditions are inevitable because of my past karma.

For example, if a young boy’s father is killed in a jihadi terrorist attack, doctrine of karma would explain it as a consequence of the past bad karma of that boy and his parents. Doctrine of karma would also assert that no matter how much security arrangements and pre-emptive measures the government may undertake, it can never avert such tragedies, because this consequence has already been determined by the past karma of the young boy and his parents. Whatever is destined to happen will happen, no matter what we do to avoid it because karma and its consequence are causally linked and inseparable.

Such a belief is disastrous for individuals as well as for societies. If we seriously believe that a tragedy or crisis is bound to happen, we will never make any effort to avert it. We will meekly accept our pitiable condition and never make any improvement in our own life and in society. This way the society will decay and die.

Doctrine of karma thus leads to the concept of pre-determination of destiny, which would result in self-pity and meek acceptance of one’s adverse conditions.

Hindu apologists argue that doctrine of karma does not lead to inaction because one can always change one’s future by appropriate action in the present. But this argument applies to future events, not the past events. Once past is done, its consequence according to doctrine of karma will have to be borne.

I say there is no past life at all, hence the entire idea of a causal link between the previous life actions with the present-day misery is false.

Secondly, even if there is a past life, there cannot be any proof that my action ‘X’ of the previous life has caused the result ‘Y’ in the present life. There is no possibility of any such proof because nobody can go back to the previous life and demonstrate that action ‘X’ of the previous life had caused the result ‘Y’ of the present life.

## **8. Idol worship to gain material favor does not work and hence is a wastage of energy, time and money**

Hindus have been worshipping gods since Vedic times to gain material favor, just as people of other religions have been worshipping their gods since time immemorial with the same purpose. The terror of

the unknown drives people to “a super father” called God for hope and relief.

In Gita, ‘Bhagwan’ Krishna has assured that though idol worship to gain material favor is a low level devotion, nevertheless He fulfills the prayer of devotees. But that is completely false. Hindus have been praying to Bhagwan for thousands of years, but none of their desires have been fulfilled. They remained poor, weak and subjugated for thousands of years. The fact that they are still begging before idols is enough proof that worshipping Bhagwan for material gains has never worked!

Some Hindus justify idol worship as a means to do concentration / meditation. But if Atman is inside, how can concentration on an outer image of god be helpful? Concentration therefore cannot be a means to liberation from the Hindu point of view itself.

Secondly, for doing concentration, there is no need to go anywhere. It can be done with closed eyes almost anywhere – temple or no temple; idol or no idol.

The fact is: almost no Hindu goes to an idol to do concentration. He almost always goes for begging favors from Bhagwan – favors for job, money, children, cure of disease, success in business and so forth. He keeps on bargaining with Bhagwan – ‘if I get this-and-this, I will offer you sweets, coconut, money etc’. It is essentially a commercial transaction!

It is not God-worship but human endeavor to improve material conditions through social engineering and technology that have helped mankind to live a better, kinder, more comfortable and more secure life.

So, whether people worship hundreds of gods or one God, pray one time or 10 times a day, worship at home or in temple, worshipping is useless. It is a wastage of time, money and energy. It has harmed society deeply because it frees a person from his responsibility of making endeavor to improve his condition of life. He prays and leaves everything to God. No wonder India is so mismanaged, filthy, poor and inefficient.

## **9. Belief in incarnation of Bhagwan to eliminate evil made Hindus weak**

Hinduism is the only religion in the world which believes that Bhagwan takes birth in human form to protect the devout Hindus and punish the wicked.

We have already examined the falsehood of this belief in sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism]. [Here](#) is the link.

The belief in incarnation of Bhagwan is not only false but also extremely harmful. It destroyed the will to fight for one’s values, because it had been assumed that Bhagwan would automatically eliminate all evil people who could endanger Hinduism. This false belief prevented Hindus from developing advanced warfare skills and technology which was necessary to check foreign aggressors. It prevented them from developing the science of warfare and materials.

So, Hindus enjoyed the luxury of being ‘non-violent’, while the dirty work of killing the wicked was delegated to Bhagwan! But this luxury proved to be very expensive – it made Hindus weak and submissive. It led to their subjugation by foreign powers. Bhagwan did nothing to protect Hindus or their temples!

## **10. Condemnation of the present time as Kali Yuga destroyed the zest to improve conditions of human life**

I have already demonstrated this belief to be false in the sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism]. [\*\*Here\*\*](#) is the link.

We strive to attain what we believe is possible to achieve. Since Hinduism holds that nothing good can happen in Kali Yuga and things will only worsen, there is no incentive for people to make efforts to improve the present state of affairs. This is why there is so much indifference on part of Hindus towards poverty, filth, disease, mismanagement, corruption, wastage and inefficiency in public life in India. Since people are indifferent, politicians too are inefficient in general. So, while the Western world is making huge progress intellectually, economically, scientifically and technologically, India still remains largely backward in these areas. Hinduism has completely sapped the zest and energy of its followers because of this false belief!

## **11. The caste system of Hinduism created unspeakable misery for Shudras and outcastes**

I have already explained in sub-chapter 5A how the concept of caste system originated and how doctrine of karma played a crucial role in the development of this institution.

As explained, differential treatment was meted out on Shudras to their disadvantage in regard to education, selection of profession, social status, legal punishment and marriage choices. They were not allowed to take up the occupations of Kshatriyas and Brahmins even in adverse situations. The ‘lowest segment of Shudras’ even became untouchable because their livelihood involved killing of animals, disposing dead animals, cleaning the street etc.

Partly because of Vedic prejudices and partly because of conviction of the correctness of the fundamentals of the caste system, law makers of the period of Classical Hinduism advocated differential punishment for different castes for similar crimes. See some samples here [Manu Smriti 8.267-269]:

**Crime:** defamation of a Brahmin

**Punishment to the defamer:**

If done by a Kshatriya – penalty of 100 monetary units

If done by a Vaishya – penalty of 150 or 200 monetary units

If done by a Shudra – corporeal punishment

**Crime:** defamation done by a Brahmin

**Punishment to the defamer:**

If done to a Kshatriya – penalty of 50 monetary units

If done to a Vaishya – penalty of 25 monetary units

If done to a Shudra – penalty of 12 monetary units

Very harsh punishment was prescribed to a Shudra if he abused or insulted other castes. Manu Smriti says:

*8.270. A Shudra, who insults a twice-born man with gross invective, shall have his tongue cut out; for he is of low origin.*

*8.271. If he mentions the names and castes of the (twice-born) with contempt, an iron nail, ten fingers long, shall be thrustred red-hot into his mouth.*

*8.272. If he arrogantly teaches Brahmins their duty, the king shall cause hot oil to be poured into his mouth and into his ears.*

This shows that the law makers of this period were so prejudiced and believed so strongly in maintaining the birth-based hierarchical structure of the society that they had zero tolerance for anyone who dared to challenge this institution. They thought that this sort of punishment to a few individuals was good for the long-term well-being of the society.

Of course, during that period, such brutal physical punishment was rampant for other violent crimes too. For example, Manu Smriti prescribes cutting of hands for serious thefts [8.322], death for adultery for all non-Brahmins [8.359] and so on.

Law-makers of this period were obsessed with defending this institution at any cost. This is why they did not allow any deviation in the prescribed duties of castes. For example, they did not permit a Shudra to earn wealth, as that was the duty of Vaishyas. Manu Smriti says:

*10.129. No collection of wealth must be made by a Shudra, even though he be able (to do it); for a Shudra who has acquired wealth, gives pain to Brahmins.*

Brahmin scholars justified all these restrictions on Shudras on the ground that only a person who had done bad karma would be born as Shudra and hence he cannot be given equality of status with, say a Brahmin, who had done very good karma in the past life. Fruits of bad and good karmas are bound to be different – so the doer of the bad karma should not expect the rewards of good karma.

But this argument is false.

First of all, there is no proof that doctrine of rebirth or doctrine of karma is true. As we have seen in sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism], both these doctrines are false. [Here](#) is the link.

Secondly, even if we suppose that these two doctrines are true, there is no proof that the person who is born as Shudra in the present life had done bad karma in his past life. By its very nature, such claims are unverifiable. Nobody can observe a person doing bad karma, dying, his soul moving into the sperm of a mating Shudra husband, and the same sperm fertilizing the egg of his wife. So, there is no basis of the claim that bad karma causes birth as Shudra.

Thirdly, even if it is granted, just for the sake of argument, that past bad karma did cause birth as Shudra, there is no reason why that Shudra should not be given an equal opportunity for education, choice of occupation, choice of mate, equality before law, equal punishment for same crime and so on in the present life. Their argument that doctrine of karma has predetermined the fate of the Shudra and humans should not interfere in the operation of this doctrine is completely false. Law of karma, if at all valid, can determine at most birth in a particular family, but it cannot determine the opportunities a society may or should provide to all its members including Shudras for future growth. So, restrictions on choice of education, occupation etc or social boycott by making them untouchable is completely unethical and inhuman.

Now, the question is: why did Manu Smriti and other texts of Classical Hinduism justify such unethical practices?

It appears that Brahmin writers of these texts could not overcome their ancestors' initial bitter experiences of war with Shudras and their feeling of racial superiority in terms of skin color, language and knowledge. Their philosophical knowledge proved to be too superficial to eliminate their racial prejudices. They were not like Upanishadic sages who had realized Brahman and were seeing every being as a manifestation of Brahman and hence could not have hatred or prejudice for anyone.

These Brahmin scholars could be knowledgeable about the philosophy of Upanishads, but they did not have the level of consciousness of Upanishadic sages. Hence, they could not apply Upanishadic morality to eliminate the inhuman institution of caste.

This is why saints of Bhakti Movement and Modern Hindu religious and political leaders have rightly condemned the caste system.

## **12. Hinduism subjugated women and made them feel inferior**

Perception about women has been changing in Hinduism.

During early Vedic period, women were given equal respect because of their unique role in giving birth of children. Aryans at that time valued sons because they were needed to fight enemies, clear forests and produce wealth. But sons could not be produced without birth of daughters. So, all children were valued and hence the role of women as mothers were respected.

But during Upanishadic period, values changed. Now Aryans were interested in liberation and the

supposed means to achieve that goal was asceticism and detachment.

Once these values seeped into the society during the period of Classical Hinduism, aspirants of liberation started condemning women because of tremendous attractive force they exerted on men. These aspirants who wanted to be celibate felt an irresistible attachment towards women for sex. So, they thought condemning women would help them overcome sexual attraction.

As explained in the sub-chapter 5A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism], Hindu thinkers condemned women for being indifferent to the aspiration of liberation and for ‘tempting men for sex’.

These beliefs logically led to immoral conduct towards women resulting in discrimination, such as:

Girls were not considered fit to receive formal religious education, while boys were considered fit to do so [Manu Smriti 2.49].

Wives were taught to treat their husbands as god even if they were of bad character, but husbands were not taught to treat their wives as goddess [Manu Smriti 5.154].

A woman was always to be kept under protection of men, otherwise she might lead other men astray by seducing them to sex. She is not fit to be independent unlike men [Manu Smriti 2.213; 9.3].

A wife could be divorced on certain grounds [Manu Smriti 9.81], but there is no mention of conditions under which a husband could be divorced by wife.

A man could remarry on death of his wife, but a woman was not allowed to remarry, when her husband died [Manu Smriti 5.157; 5.168].

A woman was praised for burning herself to death when her husband died, but a husband was not asked to do the same when his wife died. [Paraashara Smriti 4.32]

Paraashara Smriti glorifies sati system in which a wife burns herself to death at the time of cremation of her husband’s body:

*4.32. If a woman follows her departed husband, by burning herself on the same funeral pile, she will dwell in heaven for as many years as there are hairs on the human frame, which reach the number of three crores and a half.*

But this entire vision of the thinkers of Classical Hinduism towards women is defective.

It is based on the following false assumptions:

**a) Women generally do not seek liberation or take interest in understanding the universe – so something is wrong with them**

**b) Women have been made physically weaker than men – so nature (Prakriti) / Bhagwan**

**must be wanting them to be inferior**

**c) A woman is responsible for determining the sex of the children born through her. So, if a woman is giving birth only of girls, she is responsible for this and hence must be condemned for not giving birth of a male child**

**d) All women, by nature, seek sex all the time and try to seduce just any man of any age, status or caste. Hence, their freedom to interact with men must be restricted in order to curb promiscuity in the society**

**e) Condemnation of women or keeping them out of sight would help aspirants of liberation remain celibate and detached from women**

Let us examine these beliefs one by one.

**a) Women generally do not seek liberation or take interest in understanding the universe – so something is wrong with them**

Every person in this world is unique. The set of desires one pursues, the intensity with which a particular desire is pursued and the order in which desires are prioritized is also unique. The question of inferiority or superiority arises only when all persons are pursuing exactly the same desire with same intensity – only then it may be said that the person who is able to fulfil his or her desire first is better than or ahead of others.

If women in general are not interested in liberation and they wish to pursue only material comfort, love, sex and kids (if at all), it is their choice. So, they are not at all in the race of liberation. If they are not in the race, there is no reason why they should be treated as spiritually or intellectually inferior.

Take some examples:

Is an elephant inferior to a monkey because the former cannot climb a tree? No, because the elephant does not need to climb a tree to eat or seek protection from predators, while a monkey needs to climb a tree to eat fruit or protect himself from predators.

Is a fish inferior to a horse because the former cannot move on land, while the latter can? No, because the fish does not need to come out of water and move on land in order to survive, just as a horse need not/cannot go under water in order to survive.

So, comparison between two species or different genders of the same species is meaningless. Each individual/species in the world has developed a unique strategy to survive and prosper. Each strategy has some advantages and some disadvantages. Nobody is in an absolutely advantageous or absolutely disadvantageous position vis-à-vis others. Men and women too have different ways of living and growing. So, they should not be compared on the basis of a pursuit like liberation which appears to have

fascinated men more than women in ancient India.

Suppose women in ancient world wrote scriptures and treated men inferior because men were unable to conceive, produce, breastfeed and bring up babies? Or, because men fall sick more than women or men die earlier than women in general? Would that not be unfair to men?

**b) Women have been made physically weaker than men – so nature (Prakriti) / Bhagwan must be wanting them to be inferior**

Physical strength cannot be a criterion to judge one's spiritual or intellectual strength. A lion is physically stronger than a man and can easily kill him, if there is one-to-one fight. Does it mean that a lion is spiritually or intellectually superior to humans? A criminal could easily kill a Buddha-like person – does it mean that a criminal is superior to Buddha spiritually or intellectually? One Nathu Rama Godse killed Mahatma Gandhi – does it mean that the former was greater than the latter?

**c) A woman is responsible for determining the sex of the children born through her. So, if a woman is giving birth only of girls, she is responsible for this and hence must be condemned for not giving birth of a male child**

Even a high school student today knows that 'x' and 'y' chromosomes found in a man's sperm determine sex of the child, not the 'x' chromosomes found in the woman's ovum. The chance combination of man's 'x' chromosome and woman's 'x' chromosome results in a female child, while the chance combination of man's 'y' chromosome with woman's 'x' chromosome results in a male child. So, it is the father who is responsible for determining child's sex, not the mother.

So, when Manu blames women for producing only girl child, he is only displaying his ignorance about human reproductive processes. This is what he had said in Manu Smriti:

*9.81. A barren wife may be superseded in the eighth year, she whose children (all) die in the tenth, she who bears only daughters in the eleventh, but she who is quarrelsome without delay.*

Besides, if a woman is unable to conceive or if all her children die, the fault may also lie in the sperm of her husband. So, only women should not be blamed for these reproductive deficiencies.

Moreover, humans have no control over their reproductive system in so far as the chance meeting of chromosomes determining the sex of the child is concerned or if their children die. It is pointless to blame women for things beyond their control.

**d) All women, by nature, seek sex all the time and try to seduce just any man of any age, status or caste. Hence, their freedom to interact with men must be restricted in order to curb promiscuity in the society**

Modern research in human sexuality contradicts the belief that women want sex all the time. In fact, men in general want more sex than women do [[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual\\_desire](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_desire)]. Of course,

some individuals even among women may want more sex than men in general. But that cannot be made a basis upon which rules for all females may be made.

Secondly, even if it is granted that women in general want more sex than men, it does not follow that a woman is out to kidnap or seduce just any man against his wish in order to have sex. Human biological structure is such that a woman cannot force a man to have sex, but a man can force a woman to have sex. So, if at all, social restrictions on relationship with the other sex should have been imposed on men, not on women.

**e) Condemnation of women or keeping them out of sight would help aspirants of liberation remain celibate and detached from women.**

This belief has two parts: observance of celibacy is essential to attain liberation and condemnation of women is essential to remain celibate.

Both these beliefs are false.

The first part has already been discussed and proved to be false while examining the view of Hinduism on sex in this sub chapter. [Here](#) is the link.

As to the second part, as explained earlier, it is biologically impossible to remain celibate unless there are medical deficiencies. Condemnation of women is not going to eliminate the desire for sex. On the contrary, it would make women even more attractive in imagination.

A prospective celibate may spend all his energy in fighting the urge for sexual desire for women, yet he cannot overcome it. It is against the bio-chemical composition of human body. Just as we cannot stop the process of blood circulation, digestion, ageing, heart-beat, hormonal release, nerve communication and so on, in the same way, we cannot stop the production or release of sperms and ovum.

So, contrary to beliefs of Hindu thinkers, condemnation of women, which amounts to suppression of sex, would only increase the sexuality of men towards women. This increased sexuality may result in ejaculation of sperms with even the slightest provocation. In fact, this is exactly what has been described in Puranic stories themselves. Just read some sample Puranic stories on this issue below:

Bhagwat Purana 6.18.6

*As soon as Mitra and Varuna saw Urvashi, the celestial society girl, they discharged semen, which they preserved in an earthen pot.*

Vamana Purana

*As Uma touched Shiva's feet, Lord Brahma got a chance to have a glimpse of her beautiful face. He was so infatuated by her divine beauty that he ejaculated.*

## Vamana Purana

*During Chakshush Manvantara, a sage named Manki did a tremendous penance at the banks of Saptasaraswat River. But he fell down from grace after being infatuated by the beauty of an Apsara (nymph) named Vapu. His sperms ejaculated and fell into the Saptasaraswat River from which manifested the seven Marut Ganas (deities).*

## Varaha Purana

*Sage Sindhudweep, being unable to control himself, ejaculated sperms after infatuated by a beautiful nymph taking bath in the nearby flowing river Narmada.*

These stories show the suppressed sexuality of people of that time, especially of the story-writers. A man would ejaculate just by seeing a beautiful woman, only if he has deprived himself of sex for too long. Under such conditions, he would subconsciously wish to have sex all the time but to protect his asceticism, he would project it as if every woman is trying to seduce him to satisfy her insatiable desire for sex!

Thus, this belief is completely false.

Since all the Hindu beliefs about women are false, oppressive rules about women based on such beliefs are also unwarranted.

**To sum up:**

**Hinduism has been proved to be extremely harmful for the society.**

## Chapter 5 -- Hinduism

### Sub-chapter 5F

#### Summary of Hinduism

First wave of migration of anatomically modern humans from Africa brought in the first inhabitants of India – they were called Dravidians. They developed Harappa civilization during 4000-2000 BCE on the banks of Sindhu (Indus) and Saraswati Rivers and worshipped nature.

A second wave of migration of people from Caucasus area came to India around 2000 BCE. They called themselves Aryans and developed Hinduism as their religion over a period of next 2500 years. They fought with the local inhabitants (Dravidians), defeated them and subjugated them. They called these defeated people ‘Shudras’.

Hinduism has 3 phases – Vedic, Upanishadic and Classic.

**Vedic Hinduism** -- It consisted of praying and worshipping various gods in the hope of keeping them happy so that they grant material favors such as wealth, children, success in battles, cure of diseases, long life and so forth. This sort of polytheistic worship was very similar with those prevalent in primitive Egypt, Rome, Babylon and Israel.

**Upanishadic Hinduism** -- Some Aryans while living in the quiet ambience of the forest, suddenly, just by chance, underwent certain inner experiences which completely changed their vision of life and self. They came to realize that their innermost core of self is distinct from mind-body system; that this innermost self is indescribably blissful in nature; that everything is the manifestation of this same reality. They called it Brahman or Atman.

But after undergoing this deep mystical experience, they tried to understand the universe as a whole in the light of this profound experience. This resulted in Upanishadic Hinduism whose main features are:

One Brahman manifesting itself as the entire universe;

This manifestation consists in the devolution of Brahman from the purest and most blissful state to the lower level of matter, plants, animals and humans -- Brahman however still retains its unmanifested form;

Devolution makes Atman forget its real nature and then it identifies with body-mind it finds itself in;

This misidentification makes it run after the attachments of mind-body, the fulfilment of which

gives it some pleasure, but cannot satisfy it fully; so it keeps running after attachments;

Repeated failures and miserable nature of worldly struggle makes it yearn to go back to the original purest state;

Struggle to rise up again to the purest state of consciousness is possible only at human level;

Humans can attain the original purest state by detachment from the world and by doing meditation on real self in this very life. This is the most desirable goal of human life.

Failure to attain this highest goal of human life results in endless cycle of birth and death with all its vulnerability of suffering, disease, old age etc.

Upanishadic Hinduism became the foundation of Hinduism and it continues to be so till this day.

**Classical Hinduism** – This was an attempt to reconcile the opposite values of Vedic and Upanishadic Hinduism. It also worked out rules for implementation of its seminal ideas. It also consisted of mythification of the original ideas with an aim to popularize and enforce the message of Upanishads among the masses for their wellbeing. It also tried to fill up the gaps of knowledge in understanding the universe by mythologies.

This phase of Hinduism is marked by Hindu cosmology, doctrine of karma, caste-system, idol worship, incarnation of Bhagwan, belief in cyclical nature of human eras and inferior status of women.

Falsehood of Hinduism – With lots of scientific knowledge at our disposal, we now know that most doctrines of Hinduism are false. Though Hindu sages might have undergone profound inner experiences, they did not have enough knowledge about the world to build up a coherent and true world-view on the basis of their inner experience alone. Getting enlightened does not result in automatic downloading of all scientific and philosophical knowledge into the mind. Inner transformation of core self and acquisition of scientific & philosophical knowledge pertain to two different realms and therefore one does not necessarily lead to the other. This situation facilitated development of false beliefs of Hinduism.

Harmful effects of Hinduism – All false beliefs, when acted upon, would lead to failures. The false beliefs of Hinduism led Hindu-majority India to poverty, foreign subjugation, sexual repression and denial of celebration & beautification of life. The anti-wealth, anti-pleasure Hindu mind set continues to influence society even in modern India pushing it towards socialism, populism, mediocrity, mismanagement, hypocrisy and corruption.

## Chapter 6

### Buddhism

#### An Introduction

Buddhism is a religion based on the teachings of Buddha (563-483 BCE) as compiled in Tripitaks and others.

#### Who was Buddha?

Buddha was born in a Hindu royal family based in Himalayan foothills. He was called 'Siddhartha' before his enlightenment.

It is believed that shortly after his birth, a Hindu saint predicted that he would be either an emperor or an enlightened master. Siddhartha's father, the king of Kapilavastu, tried his best to bring up and educate the child in such a way that he becomes a warrior king. He made special arrangements for Siddhartha's super comfort in the palace and ensured that the young prince never comes in contact with any miserable person or situation, lest he should develop a feeling of detachment from the world. He was also married and had a son.

But finally Siddhartha did come into contact with real facts of life when by chance, he saw sick, old and dead persons. This made him detached from the world. He left home at the age of 29, went to the forest, did intense meditation and finally got enlightenment at the age of 35 at a place called Bodhgaya in eastern India, after which he was called Buddha (the enlightened one).

For the rest of his 45 years of life, he kept on preaching in different parts of east India. He abandoned Sanskrit and spoke Pali, the then language of common people in order to spread his message directly to the lay persons.

#### Books of Buddhism

All our understanding of Buddhism is derived from Buddha's and his disciples' discourses. His words and deeds were memorized, passed on to next generations and finally committed to writing in the 4<sup>th</sup> Buddhist Council in Sri Lanka in 29 BCE after about 450 years of death of Buddha.

These written texts in Pali – known as Tripitaks (Three boxes) -- have been divided into Vinaya Pitaka (Rules for monks & nuns), Sutta Pitaka (Rules for lay Buddhists) and Abhidhamma Pitaka (Philosophical issues).

Sutta Pitaka has been further sub-divided into Digha Nikaya (Long Collections), Majjhima Nikaya

(Medium Collections), Samyutta Nikaya (Collection of Groups), Anguttara Nikaya (Collection of Expanding Groups) and Khuddaka Nikaya (Miscellaneous Collections).

The famous Dhammapada (Religious Verses), Sutta Nipata (Collections of aphorisms for lay Buddhists), Udana (Inspired Utterances) and Jataka (Tales of previous births of Buddha) are parts of Khuddaka Nikaya.

All these Pali texts form the basis of Theravada school of Buddhism.

Mahayana sect of Buddhism have their own set of books mostly written first in Sanskrit and later translated into Chinese and Tibetan languages. They were written from 1<sup>st</sup> century CE onwards. They include Prajnaparamita Sutras (Perfection of Wisdom Aphorisms), Hridayam Sutras (Heart Aphorisms), Diamond Sutras, Lankavatara Sutras, Lotus Sutras etc.

However, Theravada does not recognize these books of Mahayana as authentic teachings of Buddha. Mahayana, on the other hand, insists that they are authentic teachings of Buddha.

### **Buddhism from the point of view of a Buddhist**

Buddha never discussed the nature of Brahman, Atman or any such Hindu metaphysical entity. He also repudiated all beliefs based on Vedic rituals, worship of any deity, offering of food and intoxicants to gods, killing of animals as sacrifice for the sake of gods, caste system etc.

Buddha dismissed all questions about the ultimate reality as useless. He spoke only about the cause and solution of human suffering. But like Upanishads, he too emphasized the need to live a moral, modest, ascetic, detached and meditative life aimed to realize the state of consciousness which is beyond mind and body. The state which was called the state of liberation by Upanishads was called Nirvana (in Pali 'Nibbana') by him.

### **History of Buddhism**

Buddhism continued to spread throughout Asia even after the death of Buddha. As it spread to distant lands, differences over interpretations of Buddha's teachings started arising.

During the 1<sup>st</sup> century BCE, Buddhism got divided into two sects – Theravada and Mahayana. Theravada is more orthodox and closer to Buddha's original teachings; while Mahayana has adapted itself according to local cultures of different countries. Some of the major differences between the two sects are as follows:

Theravada believes in individual's own self-realization by personal efforts, while Mahayana believes in helping others too on the path of self-realization while working for own liberation.

There are no rituals in Theravada, but Mahayana got influenced by the rituals of the place it reached. For example, in Mahayana, there are several rituals about worship, death,

rebirth and tantra. Vajrayana or esoteric Buddhism is a sub-sect of Mahayana, which developed elaborate rituals to attain liberation.

Monks of Theravada take meals only once a day; in Mahayana, there are no such restrictions.

Temples of Theravada are simple, while those of Mahayana are elaborate with several idols.

Theravada spread mainly in South and South East Asia, such as Bhutan, Sri Lanka, Myanmar, Thailand, Laos, Vietnam and Cambodia, while Mahayana spread in North and North-East Asia such as Tibet, China, Mongolia, Korea and Japan.

## **Demographics**

There are about 500 million Buddhists in the world today, making it the 4<sup>th</sup> largest religion in terms of population. Out of this, China has the maximum number of Buddhists. The top 10 countries having maximum percentage of Buddhists are: Thailand (95%), Cambodia (90%), Myanmar (88%), Bhutan (75%), Sri Lanka (70%), Tibet (65%), Laos (60%), Vietnam (55%) Japan (50%) and Macau (45%).

## Chapter 6 -- Buddhism

### Sub-chapter 6A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Buddhism

What factors led to the growth of Buddhism?

There are 3 factors which gave rise to Buddhism: Upanishadic influence, ultra-luxurious upbringing of Buddha and Buddha's own experience of enlightenment.

##### **Upanishadic influence**

Buddha was born in a Hindu royal family. So, naturally, he absorbed the prevailing Hindu religious beliefs and practices. This is proved by the striking similarities between Buddhist and Upanishadic belief-systems.

Just as Upanishadic Hinduism condemned Vedic Hinduism's obsession with material desires and worship of gods with various rituals to gain material favors, Buddhism too condemns material desires and worshipping of any god or doing any ritual to gain material favors.

Just as Upanishadic Hinduism treated every individual as an extension of the same Self and therefore condemned discrimination against individuals (such as the caste system of Vedic Hinduism), Buddhism too preaches love and compassion for every being and condemns artificial barriers created by Vedic caste system.

Just as Upanishads denounce worldly desires and teach to focus only on the goal of liberation, Buddhism too does the same.

##### **Ultra-luxurious upbringing of Buddha**

Buddha was brought up in an ultra-luxurious way by his royal parents. He never experienced any suffering or deprivation. This played a major role in shaping his own ideas about the world. Since he had never experienced suffering himself and had never seen people suffer till he was 29, he was shocked to his bones when he saw someone suffering from sickness, poverty, old age and death for the first time in his life. So, his entire emphasis shifted to understanding and eliminating suffering.

But to understand suffering and to find a solution to the problem of suffering, you need to understand how suffering originates. For that, you need to understand the nature of the world, especially humans and the nature of suffering. All this would logically lead to a world-view. But a world-view is nothing but an explanation of all the events in terms of the most fundamental content of the universe. That is again a philosophy.

So, Buddha could not have escaped a philosophy. Now, the question is: why did he not clearly propound and explain his philosophy and why did he speak mainly on elimination of suffering?

Most probably this was because he wanted his followers to focus on the practical life, rather than ponder over philosophical questions. He must have thought that those who reach advanced stage of meditational practice would automatically understand the real nature of the world without his telling them.

That Buddha thought like this is confirmed by Majjhima Nikaya in which Buddha is described as refusing to answer a monk's philosophical questions such as whether the universe is eternal or non-eternal; whether soul and body are the same or different; whether after death, an enlightened person survives or does not survive etc. Explaining why he does not want to answer such questions, Buddha says (Majjhima Nikaya 63):

*And why are they undeclared by me? Because they are not connected with the goal, are not fundamental to the holy life. They do not lead to disenchantment, dispassion, cessation, calming, direct knowledge, self-awakening, unbinding. That's why they are undeclared by me.*

*And what is declared by me? 'This is suffering,' is declared by me. 'This is the origination of suffering,' is declared by me. 'This is the cessation of suffering,' is declared by me. 'This is the path of practice leading to the cessation of suffering,' is declared by me. And why are they declared by me? Because they are connected with the goal, are fundamental to the holy life. They lead to disenchantment, dispassion, cessation, calming, direct knowledge, self-awakening, unbinding. That's why they are declared by me....*

### **Buddha's own experience of enlightenment**

Six years of intense meditation practiced by Buddha uplifted his consciousness to a higher level, which he called the state of Nirvana. This state is quite similar to the state of liberation referred to by other Indian religions.

Here is some of Buddha's descriptions of the state of Nirvana:

#### **Samyutta Nikaya 43**

*The subtle, the very-hard-to-see,  
the ageless, permanence, the undecaying,  
the surface-less, non-objectification,  
peace, the deathless,  
the exquisite, bliss, solace,  
the exhaustion of craving,  
the wonderful, the marvellous,  
the secure, security,*

## Udana, Chapter 8

*There is that sphere, monks,  
where there is no Earth, no water, no fire, no air,  
no sphere of infinite space, no sphere of infinite consciousness,  
no sphere of nothingness, no sphere of neither perception nor non-perception,  
not this world, not world beyond, neither Moon nor Sun.*

*There, monks, I say there is surely no coming,  
no going, no persisting, no passing away, no rebirth.  
It is quite without support, unmoving, without an object,  
- just this is the end of suffering.*

It is this indescribable nature of Nirvana, which kept him mostly silent on the metaphysical issues related to this state.

### **Distinguishing features of Buddhism**

With this background, the distinguishing features of Buddhism may be summarized as follows:

- 1. Rejection of Vedic Hinduism and metaphysical concepts of Upanishadic Hinduism**
- 2. Belief in rebirth and doctrine of karma**
- 3. Only a prescription of what to do and what not to do**
- 4. Cause and solution of suffering**
- 5. Ascetic and minimalist life-style**
- 6. Non-violence and love for all living beings**
- 7. Vegetarianism**

Let me explain them one by one.

#### **1. Rejection of Vedic Hinduism and metaphysical concepts of Upanishadic Hinduism**

Vedic Hinduism consisted mainly of prayer, worship and offering food to gods to gain material favors. It also sanctioned killing of animals to offer their meat to gods as special food. Buddha completely rejected these practices. He declared that prayer or killing animals for sacrifice was completely useless.

Buddha also rejected Upanishadic concepts of an immutable reality called Brahman or Atman. So, he cut the root of all concepts of Classical Hinduism dependent on Brahman/Atman such as a personalized Bhagwan, idol worship, incarnation of Bhagwan and cycle of Yugas.

Buddha refuted the Upanishadic concept of an immutable, unchanging, static and eternal Atman

residing inside all living beings. But he also refuted the view that on death, self gets annihilated:

Samyutta Nikaya 22.85

*..... the Blessed One would not say, 'A monk with no more effluents, on the break-up of the body, is annihilated, perishes, and does not exist after death.'*

However, Buddha failed to put forth a coherent view of his own version of self. He never explained what is the nature of self, how it came into existence, why it is ignorant, why and how it gets attached to the world, what precisely happens to it on death or attainment of Nirvana and whether attainment of Nirvana is home coming for the self.

When such questions were asked, he remained silent:

Samyutta Nikaya 44.10

*Having taken a seat to one side, Vacchagotta the wanderer said to the Master, "Now then, Venerable Gotama, is there a self?" When this was said, the Master remained silent.*

Buddhism also refutes the claim of Classical Hinduism that the caste system was created by Bhagwan. Buddha gave a practical explanation of how different castes arose. In Digha Nikaya (27.20-32), he explains the origin of different castes.

He says that when evil behavior started spreading, some people requested a warrior-type of a person to punish the evil-doers. That person accepted their request in lieu of food to be offered by the people. This was the beginning of Kshatriya caste.

Brahmin caste arose out of those persons who wanted to meditate and write books explaining what is good and what is bad for individuals and the society.

Some people started producing and trading goods. They were called Vaishyas.

Those who lived by hunting were called Shudras.

Some people out of every four castes mentioned above, wanted to do only meditation. They were called ascetics.

A person, irrespective of his caste, will reap the good or bad consequences of his good or bad deeds. Any caste person, according to Buddha, could become an ascetic and attain the highest state of nirvana.

## **2. Belief in rebirth and doctrine of karma**

Though Buddha never touched the question of nature of self, he did propound doctrines of rebirth and karma. Perhaps, he did so to motivate people to be more serious about his teachings in view of the possibility of undergoing long suffering by getting into the cycle of endless birth and death.

But his concept of rebirth is different from that of Hinduism. Hinduism believes that on death, an

immutable Atman transmigrates from one body to another, while Buddhism believes that on death, there is simply a transfer of mental energies and thoughts into a new body. Buddhist rebirth is like lighting of one candle from another candle or like transfer of energy of one ball hitting another ball. So, the chain of cause and effect does not break on death, but rather continues onto next birth.

This concept of rebirth could also explain doctrine of karma according to which the content of the present life is an effect of the karma of previous life. Doctrine of karma, in Buddhism, is thus a specific example of the chain of cause and effect.

### **3. Only a prescription of what to do and what not to do**

Buddhism deals with only the personal and ethical aspect of life with the sole aim of getting rid of suffering. The entire teaching of Buddha was centered on understanding the nature of suffering and ways to get rid of it. He never answered any question on the origin of the universe, the nature of self, fundamental relationship between the world and self, cause of self being ignorant and vulnerable to worldly attachments and so on. He believed that answering such questions would distract his followers from the path of finding remedy of human suffering.

### **4. Cause and solution of suffering**

After enlightenment at the age of 35, Buddha came to the conclusion that there is nothing except suffering in human life. For him, suffering was a general human feeling of remaining incomplete, unsatisfied and unfulfilled. So, no matter what we do or do not do or how much super comfort we have, the very fact of being a human is enough to generate the feeling of suffering. Taking birth, hunger, poverty, disease, ageing, old age and death are only intense forms of suffering. For him, happiness was always temporary and suffering in the form of a feeling of remaining incomplete is always there in human life.

**What is the cause of suffering?**

It was, according to Buddha, ignorance which leads to false view of the world which in turn results in craving for fulfillment of desires in the hope of getting maximum happiness. But such happiness never comes. Even if it comes with hard work, it lasts for a brief period only. Then, craving again starts for some other object. So, the end result of this entire process is suffering.

**So, what is the solution to suffering?**

According to Buddha, the solution is to minimize needs, shift attention inward and become fixed in tranquility and equanimity of mind. His eightfold path to equip oneself for this supreme human goal was: Right View, Right Thought; Right Speech, Right Action, Right Livelihood; Right Effort, Right Mindfulness and Right Meditation.

These are not sequential steps but rather components working simultaneously in the Buddhist way of living.

Right View = understanding the nature, cause and solution of suffering

Right Thought = thought of renunciation and non-ill-will against anyone

Right Speech = no lying, no slander and no harsh or frivolous speech

Right Action = to refrain from killing, stealing and indulging in pre-marital or extra-marital relationship for householders (complete celibacy for monks and nuns)

Right Livelihood = earning one's livelihood honestly, legally, non-violently and without harming anyone. No business in weapons, human beings, meat, intoxicants and poison

Right Effort = to resolve not to pursue anything forbidden and to pursue what has been prescribed

Right Mindfulness = to be dispassionately and totally in the present focusing on the current activity and if distracted, bringing focus back on the current activity

Right Meditation = to attain complete stillness of mind. This tranquility reveals one's true nature of self and brings pure bliss.

These 8 practices constitute the essence of Buddhist way of living and aim at attaining Nirvana, which is the state of freedom from all suffering.

## **5. Ascetic and minimalist life-style**

Buddhism prescribes minimalist kind of living whereby one should satisfy the bare minimum needs of the body necessary for just survival and focus mainly on attainment of Nirvana through complete stillness of mind. Any extra wealth, sex for pleasure, sports, laughter and other celebrative aspects of life are condemned to be useless or even harmful for the seeker of Nirvana.

This ascetic life-style is expressed in the following words of Buddha:

### Condemnation of wealth

Samyutta Nikaya, chapter 4.8 (Nandana Sutta: Delight)

*Those with children grieve because of their children.*

*Those with cattle grieve because of their cows.*

*A person's grief comes from acquisitions,*

*A person with no acquisitions doesn't grieve.*

Samyukta Nikaya, chapter 16.1(Santuttham Sutta: Contentment)

*Therefore, monks, you should train yourselves thus: "We will be content with whatever robe ... alms... lodging... medicines... we may get... We will enjoy the use of these things without clinging or foolish attachment, not committing any offense, aware of the danger and wisely avoiding it."*

## Dhammapada

84. *For the sake of oneself, or for the sake of another, one should not long for a son, wealth or a kingdom. He who does not crave success or prosperity by wrongful means is indeed virtuous, wise and honorable.*

### Condemnation of sensual pleasure

Majjhima Nikaya, Chapter 106 [Aneñja-sappaya Sutta]

*The Blessed One said: "Monks, sensuality is inconstant, hollow, vain and deceptive. It is illusory, the babble of fools. ...They lead to these evil, unskillful mental states: greed, ill will, and contentiousness. They arise for the obstruction of a disciple of the noble ones here in training.*

## Dhammapada

7. *The pleasure-seeker who finds delight in physical objects, whose senses are unsubdued, who is immoderate in eating, indolent and listless, him Mara (the Evil One) prevails against, as does the monsoon wind against a weak-rooted tree.*

146. *Why laugh, why be jubilant, when all is constantly burning (with desires)? Should you not seek the light of wisdom when you are enveloped by the darkness of ignorance?*

## **6. Non-violence and love for all living beings**

Non-violence is not just non-killing, but also includes truthfulness, non-stealing and non-cheating.

Buddha preached non-violence and love for all living beings including animals. He said that hatred and anger should never be responded with hatred and anger, but with love. A Buddhist should never harbor any feeling of hatred against even those who harm him or even kill him. This is what he said:

## Dhammapada

5. *Through hatred, hatred is never appeased; through non-hatred is hatred always appeased — this is an eternal law.*

223. *Let a man conquer anger by love, let him subdue evil by good; let him overcome the greedy by liberality and the liar by truth.*

Majjhima Nikaya, Chapter 28 (Maha-hatthipadopama Sutta)

*Monks, even if bandits were to carve you up savagely, limb by limb, with a two-handled saw, he among you who let his heart get angered even at that would not be doing my bidding.*

So, there is absolutely no place of aggression – defensive or offensive – in Buddhism.

## **7. Vegetarianism**

Compassion for all living beings would logically result in vegetarianism. A compassionate person

can never kill or cause to kill an animal for food, cloth, shoes, pleasure etc. So Buddha advised his followers to be vegetarians in general. However, he made an exception to vegetarianism due to a problem.

Buddha's monks and nuns had to survive out of generosity of lay persons. So, he did not want to impose on lay persons the condition to give only vegetarian food. That would have been, according to him, rude. Most people during Buddha's time were meat-eaters. Buddha therefore advised monks and nuns to accept whatever was given to them as alms with gratitude, whether they liked the food or not, whether the food was vegetarian or non-vegetarian.

The only condition was that the meat given in alms should not have been prepared specially for monks and nuns, because that would have amounted to causing pain and death of animals by monks.

A rule was therefore made to the effect that if monks had seen an animal being killed for their consumption or heard that an animal had been killed for their consumption or had otherwise grounds to believe that an animal had been killed especially for them, they should not accept such meat in alms.

Buddha is reported to have said thus [Majjhima Nikaya 55 (Jivaka Sutta)]:

*Jivaka, I say that on three instances meat should not be partaken, when (1) seen, (2) heard, or when (3) there is suspicion.*

*I say, that on these three instances meat should not be partaken.*

*I say, that meat could be partaken on three instances, when not seen, not heard, and not when there is suspicion about it.*

Buddha did not want his followers to be in any way responsible for killing of animals. This is why he also forbade lay followers to trade in meat. He says [Anguttara Nikaya 5.177]:

*These five trades, O monks, should not be taken up by a lay follower: trading with weapons, trading in living beings, trading in meat, trading in intoxicants and trading in poison.*

The stand taken by Buddha on meat-eating as stated above is believed by Theravada schools of Buddhism.

However, the Mahayana school of Buddhism, which developed later than Theravada, believes that Buddha preached in favor of 100% vegetarianism and no meat-eating under any circumstances. They claim that Buddha spoke the following words during the conversation with his follower, Maha-kasyapa-ka-gota [according to the Tibetan version of the Mahaparinirvana Sutra]:

*“.... Noble son, henceforth I do not permit any of my disciples to eat meat. ... I teach that the eating of meat destroys love and kindness.”*

*“Blessed One, why did you permit the eating of meat that was blameless in three respects?”*

*“Because I stipulated these three types of blameless as a provisional basis of training; I now*

*discard them.”*

As a result of these beliefs, today most of Theravadin monastic followers eat meat, while most of Mahayanist monastic followers do not eat meat.

## Chapter 6 -- Buddhism

### Sub-chapter 6B

#### Political and Economic Implications of Buddhism

##### Political implications of Buddhism -- democracy

Since Buddha did not believe in God, he explained the origin of monarchy in terms of appointment of a king by people with the specific task to ensure moral order in the society. The king was supposed to punish those who violated moral order and in lieu of performing this task, people gave him a part of their wealth. This idea contains the seed of democracy because it was people who, according to Buddha, has the power to appoint a king.

Buddha says in Digha Nikaya:

*27.20. Then those beings came together and lamented the arising of these evil things among them: taking what was not given, censuring, lying and punishment. And they thought:*

*"Suppose we were to appoint a certain being who would show anger where anger was due, censure those who deserved it, and banish those who deserved banishment! And in return, we would grant him a share of the rice."*

*So they went to the one among them who was the handsomest, the best-looking, the most pleasant and capable, and asked him to do this for them in return for a share of the rice, and he agreed.*

This doctrine of Buddha contains the seed of democracy. If a king owes his origin to the choice of people, it follows that if a king fails to perform the assigned task, he may also be removed by the people. Buddhism is thus the first religion which shifted the power to make/unmake kings from God to humans.

##### Economic philosophy – the same Minimalism of Hinduism

Like Hinduism, Buddhism believes that due to ignorance, humans crave for objects of desires, which leads to clinging, which in turn leads to suffering. This is Buddha's fundamental explanation of the cause of suffering.

Since ignorance cannot be eliminated immediately, the only sensible way to minimize craving is to minimize contact with objects of desires. This means needs must be kept to the minimum, just enough to survive. This is again **Minimalism**, the economic philosophy of Hinduism.

The ideal life for a Buddhist is to live the life of a monk or nun who are supposed to survive on charities and keep their needs confined to simple food, clothing and a shelter. They were supposed to

strive only for Nirvana and abandon all pleasures of life.

Buddhist householders were also to follow the same principle, but in a little relaxed way. Buddhism never sanctions production, ownership or enjoyment of great wealth. There are hundreds of stories in Buddhist literature where a person abandons his wealth, wife, children, home and political power; becomes a monk and is greatly appreciated by Buddha.

With this vision, Buddhism too implies the economic philosophy of Hindu Minimalism with all its attendant problems such as poverty, military weakness, danger of getting subjugated by aggressors, poverty-generated moral degradation etc as discussed under Hindu economic philosophy.

## Chapter 6 -- Buddhism

### Sub-chapter 6C

#### Falsehood of Buddhism

Since Buddhism tried to avoid philosophical questions, it hoped that it would escape the philosophical problems. But it is impossible to avoid these problems.

Buddhism has its own problems and falsehoods. Following are the false beliefs of Buddhism:

1. No World-view is required to follow moral and spiritual norms
2. Universe originated from water. Human greed caused appearance of Sun and Moon and all other animals, plants etc
3. Human life has only suffering
4. To explain rebirth and doctrine of karma, no soul is required
5. Premature death, disease, ugliness, poverty etc are caused by bad karma in the previous life
6. Solar and lunar eclipses are caused by demons

Let me discuss these points one by one.

#### 1. No World-view is required to follow moral and spiritual norms

Prescription of any moral and spiritual principle presupposes certain beliefs about the nature of the world, man, self and happiness.

For example, when Buddha says that suffering can be removed only if one attains tranquility of mind by going into a state of deep meditation (*samma samadhi*), several questions arise:

How and why would suffering end on attainment of a particular state of mind? What is mind? Is it the same as self? Where did mind or I-consciousness arise from? How did mind or I-consciousness fall into ignorance? Does stillness of mind eliminate all desires? If all desires vanish on attainment of tranquility of mind – including the desire to breathe and eat -- how would one live after enlightenment? Even after attaining enlightenment, I would still be vulnerable to hunger, poverty, violence, terrorism, harassment by criminals and authorities, disease, old age and death. So, how would I be free from suffering?

These questions are very natural for anyone seeking seriously the cessation of suffering. If Buddha answers these questions, he will logically end up in giving a world-view, a philosophy.

Understanding these issue is not merely an intellectual exercise. Understanding issues of this sort is absolutely necessary if we are to undertake the long journey leading to ‘enlightenment’. The only other option is to blindly trust what Buddha said. But now that Buddha is no more, who would guide us to resolve our day-to-day problems which always demand right action with reference to our ultimate goals and correct understanding of how the world operates? If we do not understand the process which leads to enlightenment, we cannot undertake this life-time journey.

Is it possible to make an airplane without understanding hundreds of laws of nature pertaining to gravity, aero-dynamics, material science, electricity, air-conditioning, economics of civil aviation and so on? So, how is it possible to attain enlightenment without understanding what it is, what are the processes involved, how is it related with body, desires, food, sex, work, society etc.?

Buddha’s silence on philosophical questions could not and did not lead to an end to the discussion, but on the contrary, led to the emergence of numerous schools of Buddhist philosophy such as Sarvastivadin Realism, Sautrantikas, Theravada, Pragyanparmita, Madhyamika, Tathagatgarbha, Yogachara, Tibetan Buddhism, Chinese Buddhism etc.

In fact, the need to fall back on a philosophy to explain a moral or spiritual principle is so fundamental that Buddha himself had to do it again and again despite his declared aversion to philosophy. Whether he liked it or not, he had to declare his views about the origin of the universe, nature of rebirth, doctrine of karma, cause of poverty, nature of caste system etc during his discourses. So, he ended up propounding an incomplete and incoherent world-view.

In fact, this is the human predicament: we do not have a choice between having a philosophy and no philosophy; but only between a good, complete and logically coherent philosophy or bad, incomplete and an incoherent philosophy. Buddha chose the latter. We will discuss some of his half-baked philosophical views in a moment.

So, his doctrine that a philosophy is not required to follow moral and spiritual norms is completely false.

## **2. Universe originated from water. Human greed caused appearance of Sun and Moon and all other animals, plants etc**

As discussed above, Buddha initially tried not to discuss anything about the origin of the universe. But this question is bound to haunt anyone who reflects on solving any problem of life. Unless we understand our origin, we cannot understand our nature and hence cannot solve any fundamental problem of life. So, we must have some tentative view of the origin of the universe and human life.

So, Buddha too had to develop a doctrine of the origin of the universe.

He said that everything originated from water; Earth then spread itself on water; Sun and Moon

appeared when some ‘greedy beings’ tasted the flavor of Earth, lost their self-luminance because of their greed and due to this loss of their self-luminance, Sun and Moon had to appear to spread luminance! This sort of explanation is not only scientifically false, but completely illogical and absurd.

Buddha believed that things originated in the following order:

Water – Earth – Moon and Sun – fungus – creepers – rice – males and females with sex organs – division of labor among Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaisyas and Sudras

This is what Buddha said on the origin of Earth, Sun and Moon:

Digha Nikaya (Agganna Sutta)

27.11. *At that period, Vasettha, there was just one mass of water, and all was darkness, blinding darkness. Neither Moon nor Sun appeared, no constellations or stars appeared, night and day were not distinguished, nor months and fortnights, nor years or seasons, and no male and female, beings being reckoned just as beings. And sooner or later, after a very long period of time, savory Earth spread itself over the waters where those beings were. It looked just like the skin that forms itself over hot milk as it cools. It was endowed with color, smell and taste. It was the color of fine ghee or butter, and it was very sweet, like pure wild honey.*

27.12. *Then some being of a greedy nature said: "I say, what this can be?" and tasted the savory Earth on its finger. In so doing, it became taken with the favour, and craving arose in it. Then other beings, taking their cue from that one, also tasted the stuff with their fingers. They too were taken with the favour, and craving arose in them. So they set to taste it with their hands, breaking off pieces of the stuff in order to eat it.*

*And the result of this was that their self-luminance disappeared. And as a result of the disappearance of their self-luminance, the Moon and the Sun appeared, night and day were distinguished, months and fortnights appeared, and the year and its seasons. To that extent the world re-evolved.*

Subsequent passages of this chapter tells us similar absurd stories about the origin of fungus, creepers, rice, male and female couples, caste etc due to human ‘greed and wickedness’. He never explains how human being appeared on Earth and ‘tasted the favour of Earth’ in the first place. All this proves that Buddha’s world-view was completely casual, incoherent and based on wild speculation.

Buddha’s beliefs are thus directly against the Big Bang theory and theory of evolution of the universe so well established in science.

As explained while discussing the falsehood of Abrahamic religions, Sun and Earth were born from a proto-planetary mass. Moon came into existence out of the debris produced by the collision of a massive body against Earth. So, Buddha’s doctrine that Sun and Moon came into existence to make up the

loss of luminance in humans is absurd.

### **3. Human life has only suffering**

Buddhism holds that human life has nothing but suffering. But the fact is that most people are happy most of the time. Fulfillment of our desires makes us happy. Most of the people are able to satisfy most of their primary desires, such as food, clothes, shelter, sex, etc. So, they are happy. One day, with more scientific knowledge, technological skills and social engineering, humans can overcome even all diseases, poverty, conflicts, violence and old age. A day may come when everyone can enjoy a luxurious life, live for 1000 years, satisfy most of his desires and so on. Could we then say that life is full of suffering? No. Buddha is completely wrong in condemning entire life as full of suffering.

However, Buddha would still say: no matter how long and super comfortable life you may lead, you would still be suffering from spiritual vacuum, old age and death. This is suffering.

But it is possible to create a society in which whoever wants to undertake spiritual journey could be institutionally assisted right in the midst of the luxury without his becoming a monk. There could be well-equipped air-conditioned meditation centers around the world where experts would be guiding and leading a spiritual seeker to the stage of Nirvana using the latest gadgets to facilitate quieting the mind. So, even spiritual void can be eliminated from the world with the help of social engineering and technology. There would be then no need for asceticism and practicing meditation for years.

Old age and death could be postponed for a very long time so much so that people would start choosing voluntary death just for new excitement.

Can life then still be reasonably called full of suffering?

Moreover, at present, life has both suffering and blessings. Without the former, the value of the latter cannot be appreciated. In fact, the possibility of suffering keeps us alert and excited. It is the success achieved despite odds, which makes us happy. If life had no challenges, we would not be happy either.

Imagine a football match in which one team consists of the best adult male players of the world and the other team consists of amateur 10 year old girls of a local school with no previous experience. Can we enjoy such a match? The happiness in life comes not by achieving a goal, but more importantly by how hard we have to struggle to achieve the goal. This goal may be anything -- material objects, love, knowledge, situations, stillness of mind and so forth. But success only on the face of challenges makes us happier. This is our fundamental nature. This is how the universe works.

Buddha got so much obsessed with suffering because he was denied the normal life which presents both happiness and suffering. He was brought up completely protected from experiencing any suffering by his father-king. It is this faulty way of upbringing which made Buddha's view of life distorted and one-sided.

#### **4. To explain rebirth and doctrine of karma, no soul is required**

I have already explained the falsehood of the doctrines of rebirth and karma in sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism]. The same arguments apply to Buddhism too. [Here](#) and [here](#) are the links.

In fact, with no belief in a soul, it is far more difficult for Buddhism to explain rebirth and doctrine of karma.

If there is no soul or any such permanent self, who enters the sperm/ovum and becomes a baby? An aggregate of energy, thoughts or emotions cannot on their own, after death, search for the right sperm/ovum, as they do not have the ability to perceive, think and decide. So, saying that these aggregates are reborn is meaningless.

In the absence of any conscious being, even doctrine of karma would be meaningless. Who is reaping the fruits of past deeds, if there is nobody behind it?

#### **5. Premature death, disease, ugliness, poverty etc are caused by bad karma in the previous life**

Buddha was a strong believer in the doctrine of karma extending to the previous lives. He propounds a strange doctrine of cause and effect.

He says that killing in previous life makes one short-lived in the present life; a short-tempered person in the previous life is born ugly in this life; a stingy person in the previous life is born poor in this life; if a person does not ask moral or spiritual question to a monk in the previous life, he would be born stupid in this life and so on.

This is obviously false.

Take the example of poverty. Buddha is saying that by not giving charities in the previous life, one becomes poor in the present life:

Chula-Kammavibhanga Sutta [The Shorter Exposition of Deeds] (Majjhima Nikaya 135)

*13. ... some woman or man is not a giver of food, drink, cloth, sandals, garlands, perfumes, unguents, bed, roof and lighting to monks or Brahmins. Due to having performed and completed such kamma (deed), on the dissolution of the body, after death, he reappears in a state of deprivation... If instead he comes to the human state, he is poor wherever he is reborn. This is the way that leads to poverty ....*

But what about those who were born poor but have become rich in this very life either by personal effort or by economic policy of the government or by a combination of both? If they were bad in the previous life, why did they become rich in the present life? How do we explain rags-to-riches success stories of countless persons on this planet? What if a poor man gets a lottery or wins a quiz test with

heavy prizes?

Buddha failed to understand that one's poverty is linked to the economic system of the society and one's choice of appropriate economic activities, rather than moral or religious activities of the previous life.

## 6. Solar and lunar eclipses are caused by demons

Today, even a middle school student knows how a solar or lunar eclipse takes place. But Buddha did not know this. He, like common people of his time, believed that these events take place due to attack of demon Rahu on Sun and Moon.

His views on solar eclipse has been described in the following story:

Sutta Pitaka, Sutta Nikaya 2.10

Suriya Sutta: The Sun Deity's Prayer for Protection

*Thus have I heard:*

*On one occasion the Blessed One was living near Savatthi at Jetavana at Anathapindika's monastery. At that time Suriya, the Sun deity, was seized by Rahu, Lord of Asuras. Thereupon calling to mind the Blessed One, Suriya, the Sun deity, recited this stanza:*

*"O Buddha, the Hero, you are wholly free from all evil. My adoration to you. I have fallen into distress. Be you my refuge."*

*Thereupon the Blessed One addressed a stanza to Rahu, Lord of Asuras, on behalf of Suriya thus:*

*"O Rahu, Suriya has gone for refuge to the Tathagata, the Consummate One. Release Suriya. The Buddhas radiate compassion on the world (of beings).*

*"O Rahu, swallow not the dispeller of darkness, the shining one, the radiant and effulgent traveller through the sky. Rahu, release Suriya, my son."*

*Thereupon Rahu, Lord of Asuras, released Suriya, and immediately came to the presence of Vepacitta, Lord of Asuras, and stood beside him trembling with fear and with hair standing on end. Then Vepacitta addressed Rahu in this stanza:*

*"Rahu, why did you suddenly release Suriya? Why have you come trembling, and why are you standing here terrified?"*

*"I have been spoken to by the Buddha in a stanza (requesting me to release Suriya). If I had not released Suriya, my head would have split into seven pieces. While yet I live, I should have had no happiness. (Therefore I released Suriya)."*

A similar absurd story has been fabricated about lunar eclipse in Sutta Pitaka, Sutta Nikaya 2.9.

These passages clearly prove that even Buddha believed that solar and lunar eclipses are caused by demons and that he had the capacity to free Sun and Moon from demons! This is not only false but absurd.

Thus, Buddhism gives a completely false world-view.

## Chapter 6 -- Buddhism

### Sub-chapter 6D

#### Harmful effects of Buddhism

Like Upanishadic Hinduism, Buddhism too holds that due to ignorance, we get attached to desires which makes us cling to things and persons which brings suffering. So, Buddhism too is as anti-life, anti-wealth, anti-pleasures as Upanishadic Hinduism. In fact, the ascetic current of Upanishadic Hinduism reached its peak in Buddhism and Jainism.

Buddhism too believes in the doctrine of rebirth and karma, according to which our present life is the consequence of our past life.

So, the harmful effects of Hinduism as discussed in sub-chapter 5E [**Harmful Effects of Hinduism** from point 1 to 7 applies to Buddhism as well. You have to just substitute the word 'Hinduism' with Buddhism and the word 'liberation' with Nirvana.

The next 5 points discussed as harmful effects of Hinduism however do not apply to Buddhism, as Buddhism does not believe in idol worship, incarnation of Bhagwan, cycle of 4 Yugas, caste system and spiritual inferiority of women.

However, there is one more doctrine of Buddhism which proved to be extremely harmful for the society as well as for Buddhism itself. This is unique to Buddhism -- it did not apply to Hinduism. This is as follows:

**Buddhist belief that violence should not be overcome by violence but by love proved to be suicidal for its followers as well as for Buddhism itself.**

From Upanishadic Hinduism onwards, non-violence (non-injury to all sentient beings in thought, word and deed) became a central doctrine in India. Its practice was considered absolutely necessary to attain liberation. However, Hinduism was not averse to fighting for self-defense at individual level or to punishing criminals by the state or to killing state enemies. In fact, the concept of Kshatriya under the caste system and the concept of incarnations of Bhagwan were intended to punish and kill evil-doers.

But Buddhism gave too much importance of non-violence. Buddha repeatedly emphasized that hatred, aggression and violence should not be responded with hatred, aggression and violence. Rather, it should always be responded with love and compassion. Recall what he said:

Majjhima Nikaya, Chapter 28 (Maha-hatthipadopama Sutta)

*Monks, even if bandits were to carve you up savagely, limb by limb, with a two-handled saw, he*

among you who let his heart get angered even at that would not be doing my bidding.

But this is a suicidal doctrine.

If Nirvana is to be achieved, the physical body has to be preserved. If the body is to be preserved, it has to be defended from an aggressor who wishes to harm or kill the body to serve his material or ideological interests. But for defending the body, one has to fight against the aggressor, as non-violent requests for humane behavior may not always succeed against a ruthless aggressor. Fighting is violence – it invokes the feeling of hatred and anger. But fighting is required for self-preservation.

When Buddha holds that one should never be aggressive or violent, he is asking his follower to submit or surrender before the aggressor. But submission before the aggressor amounts to letting oneself be killed or harmed.

So, Buddhism's doctrine of non-violence is not conducive even for attainment of Nirvana. It is simply suicidal, self-destructive and self-hurting. It amounts to devaluating one's own dignity and self-worth. It is against the natural instinct of self-preservation and self-defense. All living beings try to defend themselves from predators and aggressors. Buddhist doctrine of non-violence is thus unnatural and self-destructive. It is thus logically indefensible.

It is illogical to say that I love 'A' but I do not want to fight someone who is bent on harming 'A'. If I love my wife, I must be prepared to fight a rapist who tries to molest her. Otherwise, the claim to love is hollow. Love for a value implies hatred for the opposite of that value. If I like fairness in the society, I must dislike unfairness. If I want to struggle to achieve fairness in the society, I must logically fight wherever I find unfairness. I should never then take the plea that fighting involves anger or violence, so I would not fight.

Love and hatred are thus logically bound to each other. If I am willing to give my heart and soul to achieve 'A', I must logically be prepared to fight any obstacle which tries to stop me from achieving 'A'.

So, Buddhist (as well as Christian and Jainism's) teaching that one should not resist evil or one should never fight anybody even if that somebody is violent is illogical, suicidal and extremely dangerous for the society. It is against even our aspiration for Nirvana. If I do not survive the attack of the aggressor, how would I attain the state of Nirvana?

In the context of rising tide of Islamic terrorism, this sort of morality would be even more disastrous. It would be in fact suicidal. Non-resistance to evil and complete surrender to whatever it dictates would be very inviting to the terrorists, as they can easily impose their Sharia and Jizya tax on such Buddhist population.

If a robber knows that his potential victim is not going to resist, it would be even more tempting for him to rob the victim. In a way, the victim is inviting the robber by following such foolish policy. So,

Buddhism too has facilitated the spread of terrorism.

### **Obsession with non-violence contributed to the decline of Buddhism in India**

It is this illogical doctrine which was one of the main causes of decline of Buddhism in India. When Muslim marauders invaded India, they started destroying temples and monasteries, because they believed that these institutions are against the teachings of Islam. They even built mosques in place of these temples / monasteries.

Buddhism flourished mainly in monasteries, as millions of monks lived and meditated there. Since they were supposed to be non-violent, they were without arms and fighting skills. With no resistance from the monks, Muslim marauders easily massacred them.

For example, in around 1200 CE, Bakhtiyar Khilji plundered, massacred thousands of monks, teachers and students and destroyed the huge library of the Buddhist monastery/learning center in Nalanda, Bihar [as noted by Persian Muslim historian Minhaj-i-Siraj in his famous book *Tabaqat-i-Nasiri*].

The other great Buddhist monasteries at Vikramashila, Udayapur and others also met with similar tragic ends at the hands of Islamic barbarians.

With monks gone, Buddhism too declined in India. Indian Buddhist monks had to flee to far off places like China, Japan, Thailand etc where they were safe from Islamic aggression. This is how Buddhism spread in the rest of Asia.

When communists took over China in 1949, Buddhism declined in China too. Tibet, which was a mainly Buddhist country, was forcibly annexed by China and converted into a communist province. Since communism is an authoritarian materialist philosophy, it destroyed freedom of all religious institutions of Tibet and forcibly imposed its own set of rules. The non-violence propounded by Buddhism and actively propagated by the present Dalai Lama, who fled from Tibet in 1959 and now lives in India, has not liberated Tibet from the Chinese control even after 65 years. And it will never be able to do so. Force will always win over non-violence.

The intolerant and violent behavior of Muslim invaders and rulers have been chronicled by Muslim historians themselves, as for example, in the book titled "*The history of India as told by its own historians*" compiled by HM Elliot; "*Baburnama*" written by Babur; "*Ta'rikh al-Hind*" written by Al Beruni, etc. In these books, Muslim writers have praised Islamic rulers for following Islam and killing infidels, plundering their wealth, imposing Jizya tax and destroying their temples, monasteries etc.

Physical defeat of Buddhism at the hands of Islam and communism in India and China respectively conclusively proves that doctrine of Buddhist non-violence is completely useless in face of a brutal and savage enemy.

The harmful effects of Buddhism as discussed above made Buddhists anti-life, anti-wealth, anti-reforms and anti-celebration. So, naturally Buddhist lay persons and monks remained poor, weak, unorganized and defenseless against ruthless enemies.

Bihar, a state in India, was the epicenter of Buddhism, as Buddha preached mainly in this state. It had thousands of monasteries called *Vihara* in Sanskrit/Pali. So, the very name of the state comes from this word *Vihara*. Bihar is still one of the most economically backward states of India. There is direct connection between its backwardness and Buddhism. The repeated condemnation of desires and wealth by Buddhism naturally resulted in anti-wealth attitude of Buddhists and other lay persons causing the society to remain poor.

But it is difficult to sustain self-created deprivation for long. So, monks and nuns in Buddhist monasteries gradually started enjoying material and sensual pleasures. That alienated Buddhist laymen from monasteries. With the charismatic personality of Buddha gone, there was nothing for the masses to hang on. This too led to the decline of Buddhism in India.

Besides, masses are never interested in Nirvana and they also cannot follow an ascetic life – they rather want material favors from gods. Since Buddhism had no material goodies to offer, Buddhist laymen too started returning to Hinduism which had plenty of gods who were believed to have powers to grant favors.

The self-hurting doctrine of non-violence was the worst of all. It weakened the immune system of the society. So, Indians became easy prey to foreign aggressors.

All these factors made people miserable. So, Buddhism lost its charm in India and gradually almost disappeared from there.

## Chapter 6 – Buddhism

### Sub-chapter 6E

#### Summary of Buddhism

The prediction at the time of birth of Buddha by a Hindu saint that the boy will be either an emperor or a sanyasin (monk) was a crucial factor in development of Buddhism. In order to prevent Buddha from becoming a sanyasin, his father kept him in super luxury and kept him away from any sight of suffering such as sickness, old age, death etc. He was also married and had a son.

But eventually, Buddha did come across sights of suffering. This shocked him so much that he decided he must find a cure of suffering – sickness, old age and death. So, he left home at the age of 29 and became a sanyasin. After intense meditation, he became enlightened at the age of 35.

The sudden exposure to suffering after the first 29 years of super luxury could unsettle anybody. So, Buddha became obsessed with suffering. The shock of the sight of suffering was so deep that even after enlightenment, he did not even try to develop a coherent comprehensive world-view. He just confined himself to explaining the cause and solution of suffering.

But he failed miserably. Life is an integrated whole. You cannot understand one aspect of life fully without understanding how it is related to other aspects and its place in the overall big picture.

The way human mind has biologically evolved, it wants to understand events in terms of more and more basic theories. This approach gives him ability to explain more and more events with fewer and fewer theories, which in turn makes it easier to manipulate the world to his advantage.

Buddha failed to satisfy this human urge. He could not even explain the cause of suffering. He said it was due to ignorance. But he could not explain the cause of ignorance. He also failed to explain why one can live a very happy life despite attachments with objects and persons of the world; or how could one become even enlightened despite having attachments with the things which make life comfortable. Why can one not do meditation in his super luxurious home? How can attachment with food, clothes and home prevent one from being enlightened? Enlightenment is simply attaining a particular state of consciousness through meditation. So, it should be very much possible even while living luxuriously.

So, his entire theory of causal connection of ignorance-attachment-defilement-suffering is false.

His theory of non-violence is worse. It is poisonous for the whole society. It is the surest path to suicide. Not resisting evil only gives free license to the aggressor to perpetrate his atrocities. If everyone follows this doctrine, the world would soon be ruled by Islamic jihadists, communists, barbarians and

criminals whose first victims would be those very Buddhist preachers.

In this respect, Buddhism and Christianity are on the same page. Both preach surrender to evildoers. Both are therefore extremely dangerous for the well-being of the society.

## Chapter 7

### Jainism

#### An Introduction

Jainism is based on Mahavira's teachings compiled in Agams, primary books of Jaina teachings.

#### **Who was Mahavira?**

Mahavira (599-527 BCE) was born in a royal family in Bihar, an eastern state of India, but left the comfort of the palace at the age of 30, went to forest, survived by begging, did severe penance and meditation and became enlightened at the age of 43. Thereafter, he kept on wandering and preaching till his death.

#### **Who wrote Agams?**

Teachings of Mahavira were initially memorized by his close disciples and passed on to the next generation of disciples. However, in order to save them from being lost, they were compiled and put to writing after about 1000 years of his death.

There are two types of Agams:

Primary compilation of Jaina literature done by Mahavira's enlightened disciples [known as 11 Anga-Pravisht Agams (Core Agams)]

Other compilations known as Anga-Bahya Agams (Peripheral Agams) and their number varies from 21 to 34 depending on the sect of Jainism.

Acharanga Sutra and Sutrakritanga Sutra are the two most well-known Core Agams. There is also Tattvarth Sutra, compiled by Umaswati, which gathers all the seminal ideas of Jainism at one place and is regarded as the most authentic introduction of Jainism by all sects.

#### **Jainism from the point of view of a Jaina**

Devout Jains believe that Jainism was for the first time propounded by Rishabh Dev, the first Tirthankar (enlightened Master) long back. After him, 23 Tirthankars followed, the last of whom was Mahavira. But practically, Jainism is based on the teachings of Mahavira.

Jains believe that there are 6 eternal, co-existing, fundamental substances in this universe – Jiva (soul), Pudgal (matter), Akash (space), Kal (time), Dharma (Medium of Motion) and Adharma (Medium of Rest).

It is their combination or disintegration which makes or unmakes this universe. Hence, there is no creator or destroyer God. All souls are thickly covered with matter in the beginning. To the extent souls manage to get rid of this matter, their inherent purity and wisdom shines forth. Different levels of consciousness in plants, animals and humans are due to different levels of thickness of matter around souls. In liberated humans, there is no matter around their soul – hence they are always full of bliss, power and knowledge.

All human actions either attract or dispel matter.

So, the goal of human life should be to attain liberation which can be attained by stopping the influx of matter to the soul and by exhausting the remaining matter around the soul. Only these two types of deeds are desirable – everything else is undesirable.

Jainism has developed a big list of do's and don'ts accordingly.

### **Sects of Jainism**

Jainism is the most ascetic religion of the world. Mahavira himself had renounced everything including his clothes to attain liberation. Jainism was extremely ascetic and severe in the beginning. Jains who still believe in such extreme asceticism are called Digambers (monks wearing no clothes). This was the first sect of Jainism.

However, under the influence of Hinduism and Buddhism, Jains became less severe in asceticism and started wearing white clothes. These Jains are called Svetambers (monks wearing white clothes). This was the second sect of Jainism.

Other differences between Digamber and Svetamber sects are as follows:

Digambers believe that women cannot get liberation unless they take birth as men in the next rebirth, while Svetambers do not think so.

Digambers believe that once a person attains liberation, he does not need food. Svetambers disagree.

Digambers believe that all Jain Agam literature have been lost, while Svetambers believe that Core and Peripheral Agams are still there and reliable.

Digamber monks are allowed to possess only 2 items – a broom and a bowl, while Svetamber monks are allowed to possess 14 items such as loin cloth, shoulder cloth, bowl, broom etc.

### **Demographics**

There are about 6 million Jains in the world, 99% of whom live in India.

## Chapter 7 – Jainism

### Sub-chapter 7A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Jainism

6<sup>th</sup> century BCE in India was the time when Upanishadic Hinduism had pervaded the upper echelons of the society. Concepts of liberation, detachment, renunciation and asceticism was everywhere in the air. Buddha and Mahavira were born during this time. Hence, both are driven by the same goal – end of suffering and attainment of bliss by turning attention to self-realization or liberation.

However, while Buddha did not develop, or at least express, any coherent world-view to explain his venture and considered philosophical questions useless, Mahavira was very different. He realized that meditational experiences cannot be understood and effectively communicated to people without having a coherent world-view.

The world-view Mahavira developed, known as Jainism, does not have any concept of God. Mahavira rejected the concept of God because he thought that the fundamental components of the universe – soul, matter, space, time and mediums of rest and motion – are eternal. These elements, according to him, are neither created nor destroyed. All the events of the world can be explained solely in terms of combination and disintegration of these elements. So, even bondage and liberation of souls can be explained in the same way.

This must be an extraordinarily bold doctrine at the time of Mahavira.

Out of all the 7 religions, Jainism is the only religion which boldly rejects the existence of a God who, in other religions, creates, operates, helps humans and destroys the universe. Buddhism too rejects the need to believe in God, but it does not come out with a complete atheist world-view.

For Mahavira, process of attaining liberation was a natural process which did not need any supernatural intervention. Doing certain things are bound to result in liberation, just as heating water is bound to evaporate it. God, even if He is there, cannot stop or accelerate this process. Hence, God was irrelevant.

So, Jainism is nothing but a sincere attempt to understand the processes of the universe including those of bondage and liberation of souls.

The core beliefs of Jainism may be summarized under the following heads:

**1. Rejection of Vedic Hinduism and metaphysical concepts of Upanishadic Hinduism**

**2. The universe is eternal**

### **3. Belief in rebirth and doctrine of karma**

### **4. Cyclical nature of time**

### **5. Moksha – the only goal worth pursuing**

### **6. Ascetic and minimalist life-style**

### **7. Non-violence for all living beings**

### **8. Vegetarianism**

Let me discuss them one by one.

## **1. Rejection of Vedic Hinduism and metaphysical concepts of Upanishadic Hinduism**

Vedic Hinduism consisted mainly of prayer, worship and offering food to gods to gain material favors. It also sanctioned killing of animals to offer their meat to gods as special food. Mahavira completely rejected these practices. He said there is no god; hence prayer or killing animals for sacrifice was completely useless.

Mahavira also rejected Upanishadic concepts of an immutable reality called Brahman or Atman. So, he cut the root of all concepts of Classical Hinduism dependent on Brahman/Atman such as a personalized Bhagwan, idol worship, incarnation of Bhagwan and caste system.

## **2. The universe is eternal**

Jainism does not believe that the universe was created one day by some creator and it will be destroyed by him some day in future. It believes that the world is eternal – it is never created or destroyed.

Jainism also rejects any belief in a God who rewards or punishes humans in this life or after death on the basis of their karma. So, no God – of the type believed by Abrahamic religions, Hinduism or Sikhism -- is accepted by Jainism.

The most eloquent refutation of the creationist theory is provided by a Jain thinker Acharya Jinasena in Mahapurana as thus –

*Some foolish men declare that creator made the world. The doctrine that the world was created is ill advised and should be rejected.*

*If he is ever perfect and complete, how could the will to create have arisen in him? If, on the other hand, he is not perfect, he could no more create the universe than a potter could.*

*If he is formless, actionless and all-embracing, how could he have created the world? Such a soul, devoid of all modality, would have no desire to create anything.*

*If you say that he created to no purpose because it was his nature to do so, then God is pointless.*

*If he created in some kind of sport, it was the sport of a foolish child, leading to trouble.*

*If he created because of the karma of embodied beings [acquired in a previous creation], He is not the Almighty Lord, but subordinate to something else.*

*If out of love for living beings and need of them he made the world, why did he not make creation wholly blissful free from misfortune?*

Thus, Jainism completely rejects all arguments put forth by other religions to prove the existence of God.

Jainism believes that there are 6 eternal, co-existing, fundamental substances in this universe – Jiva (soul), Pudgal (matter), Akash (space), Kal (time), Dharma (Medium of Motion) and Adharma (Medium of Rest).

Souls and Matter -- Out of these, only souls are conscious. All the composite things of this universe are made of combinations of soul and matter. Matter occupies space, has a form and has the property of color, taste, smell, etc. Very small units of matter get attached to souls and are called Karmic matter.

There are infinite number of souls and they are all eternal. Since very beginning, souls are attached to matter. Due to this attachment, souls are unable to manifest their inherent essence of infinite consciousness, vision, energy and bliss. Souls can realize their potential only to the extent that they are able to remove matter covering them just as a mirror covered with dust is useful only to the extent dust has been removed from its surface. Due to different density of matter attached to souls, there are different levels of living beings.

Souls which have been able to remove all matter from themselves become the highest level of souls and are called liberated or siddha souls. Mahavira and many other humans have attained that highest level of state. These souls have realized their full potential of infinite knowledge, infinite bliss, infinite vision and infinite energy.

Next below them are souls of gods, humans, animals, birds, insects, plants and some objects (such as fire, water and wind) in that descending order. As we go down the hierarchy, the number of senses possessed by them get less (from 5 to 1). This is because matter attached to the souls becomes denser as we go down the hierarchy and therefore the potential to know the world through senses gets reduced thus diminishing the number of senses down the line.

Differences in regard to intelligence, knowledge and morality among humans is also due to different density of matter attached to their souls. Differences in such density of matter in turn is due to their karma.

Space and Time -- Space and time exist independently of soul and matter. Space and time are eternal and infinite. They are the outer limitations within which matter and souls operate. Space is made of infinite space-points. It accommodates souls, matter, Medium of Motion and Medium of Rest.

Medium of Motion and Medium of Rest -- Medium of Motion provides medium to souls and matter to move from one place to another, while Medium of Rest prevents matter and souls from moving. They pervade the whole universe.

Structure of the universe – According to Jainism, the universe is very broad at the bottom, narrow in the middle and again broad at the top. Thus, its shape is similar to a man standing with legs apart and hands resting on the waist. From the point of view of location of souls of different levels, the universe is divided into 3 parts – top, middle and bottom. Top part consists of liberated and pious souls in heaven; middle part consists of humans, animals and plants living on Earth, and the bottom part consists of sinful souls living in hell.

Jainism, like all other religions of their time, could not understand how days and nights happen while Earth looks flat. They believed that Earth is too big and Sun and Moon are not bright enough. So they imagined that there are two Suns and two Moons revolving around Meru Mountain, which is supposed to be in the middle of the Indian subcontinent (Jambudweep) which in turn was believed to be in the middle of the flat Earth. The diameter of Jambudweep was believed to be 800,000 miles and the height of Meru Mountain was also believed to be 800,000 miles!

### **3. Belief in rebirth and doctrine of karma**

According to Jainism, bad karma causes more matter to be attached to souls, while good karma causes less or no matter to flow towards souls. There are some karmas which even remove the already accumulated matter. Our past karma have made what we are in the present and our present karma will make what we will be in future.

Depending on karma, souls of all living beings, on death, are reborn at different levels. The cycle of birth and death goes on till a soul achieves the state of liberation.

Every human soul is completely free to choose good or bad karma, but it has no control over the good or bad consequences of those karma, as they are causally linked. This is the law of karma.

### **4. Cyclical nature of time**

According to Jainism, time moves cyclically in the context of well-being of humans – ascending and descending periods occurring continuously after each other. Ascending time is a period of progressive increase of human religiosity, morality, health, height, longevity and happiness for most souls whereas descending time is a period of progressive decrease of these qualities.

Ascending and descending time period is further divided into 3 parts or eras each. The best time is treated as 1<sup>st</sup> era and the worst time as 6<sup>th</sup> era. Once the worst time is over, time will start getting in ascending mode and then everything – religiosity, morality etc. - will start improving.

According to Jainism, in the 1<sup>st</sup> era, average height of people was 6 miles, in the 4<sup>th</sup> era, it was

1500 meters, in the 5<sup>th</sup> era (present time) it is 6 feet, while in the 6<sup>th</sup> era (the worst period), it would be one feet!

Jainism believes that in every half cycle, 24 Tirthankaras (Prophets) are born to propound and propagate its religion. In the latest cycle, the first Tirthankara— Rishabhdev - was born in the 3<sup>rd</sup> era. The last 23 Tirthankaras of Jainism including the last one, Mahavira, were born in the 4<sup>th</sup> era.

We are currently in 5<sup>th</sup> era, just one step behind the worst time. This 5<sup>th</sup> era lasts for 21000 years, out of which about 2500 years have already passed. In this era, nobody can attain liberation. Even Jainism will disappear by the end of this era, though it will appear again in the 1<sup>st</sup> era.

This cycle of time is not managed or created by any God or humans, but it is part of the universal law. Transition from one period to the next is smooth and without any apocalyptic event.

## **5. Moksha – the only goal worth pursuing**

According to Jainism, the goal of human life should be to attain the state of liberation (Moksha), which is a state of absolute bliss, power and knowledge obtained after eliminating all the dust of karmic matter surrounding the soul. Moksha is the ultimate goal of the entire process of evolution in nature. The journey which started with evolution of one sense culminates in the attainment of the state of Moksha.

Till that state is achieved, one's life would remain miserable.

Liberation can be achieved by first stopping any further attachment of matter to the soul and then by eliminating already attached matter to the soul. Once soul eliminates all matter from around itself, it would stand liberated.

## **6. Ascetic and minimalist life-style**

The way of life prescribed by Jainism to attain Moksha is extremely ascetic and minimalistic. Compared to all the 4 Indian religions, Jainism is most severe in asceticism.

According to Jainism, for stopping further attachment of matter to the soul, one should refrain from violence, lies, stealing, sensuality and accumulation of wealth. The more strictly these rules are followed, the less attachment of matter would there be. Monks and nuns, who renounce worldly life are supposed to follow them very strictly – they should avoid violence to all living beings, never lie, never steal, never have sex and should not possess or be attached to anything.

Elimination of past accumulated karmic matter can be done by performing austerities. They include fasting, eating less, limiting the number of food and other items of consumption, not eating tasty food, giving pain to body such as walking barefoot in severe hot or cold weather or pulling out one's hair, giving up all pleasures of senses and mind, repentance for violation of right conduct, humility, rendering selfless service to monks and nuns, studying/ listening to religious texts/discourses, meditation and giving up the body voluntarily.

See some passages of Jaina Agams where Mahavira is preaching monks and nuns to follow some of these rules and austerities:

Acharang Sutra:

1.2.2

*Some, following wrong instruction, turn away (from control). They are dull, wrapped in delusion. While they imitate the life of monks, (saying), 'We shall be free from attachment,' they enjoy the pleasures that offer themselves. Through wrong instruction the (would-be) sages trouble themselves (for pleasures); thus they sink deeper and deeper in delusion, (and cannot get) to this, nor to the opposite shore. Those who are freed (from attachment to the world and its pleasures), reach the opposite shore.*

Sutrakritang Sutra:

1.1.1.2 *He who owns even a small property in living or lifeless things, or consents to others holding it, will not be delivered from misery.*

1.3.4.17 *Those who have given up intercourse with women and have left off adorning themselves, are well established in control, because they have renounced everything.*

1.3.1.4 *When during the winter they suffer from cold and draughts, the weak become disheartened like Kshattriyas who have lost their kingdom.*

1.3.1.5 *When they suffer from the heat of summer, sad and thirsty, the weak become disheartened like fish in shallow water.*

1.3.1.8 *Perchance a snarling dog will bite a hungry monk; in that case the weak will become disheartened like animals burnt by fire.*

1.3.1.10 *Some call them names, as 'naked, lowest of beggars, baldhead, scabby, filthy, nasty.'*

1.3.1.12 *When bitten by flies and gnats, and unable (to bear) the pricking of grass, (they will begin to doubt), 'I have not seen the next world, all may end with death.*

1.3.1.17 *All these hardships are difficult to bear; the weak return to their house (when they cannot bear them), like elephants covered with arrows break down.*

These passages show that Mahavira was aware of the extreme hardships to which monks and nuns were exposed, but still he encouraged them to follow that path of hardship under the belief that it would help them attain liberation.

## 7. Non-violence for all living beings

Jainism makes non-violence the foundation of ethical and spiritual conduct. Non-violence is avoiding harm to any living being by thought, word or deed. This principle follows from the Jaina world-

view that every soul is on its journey to liberation. So, as far as possible, no obstruction should be made on its spiritual path by harming it.

Acharanga Sutra 1.4.1 says:

*The Arhats and Bhagavats of the past, present, and future, all say thus, speak thus, declare thus, explain thus: all breathing, existing, living, sentient creatures should not be slain, nor treated with violence, nor abused, nor tormented, nor driven away.*

Jainism, like Buddhism, forbids even to harm someone who is deliberately trying to injure others to serve his interests. So, there is no concept of retaliatory/defensive violence even against injustice. Jainism believes that if X is hurting Y without Y's fault in the present life, it must be due to Y's fault in the previous life. So, the best option for Y is to bear the pain with equanimity so that his past bad deeds are nullified and he is purified enough to proceed further on the path of liberation!

Some of the logical implications of this doctrine of non-violence are: strict vegetarianism (so that animals are not killed for eating meat); covering mouth with a cloth while speaking (so that no insects are killed in the mouth due to friction of air); sweeping the ground before moving (so that small insects are not trodden upon and killed) and so on.

## 8. Vegetarianism

Jainism is for 100% vegetarianism. There is absolutely no question about it. Killing an animal for food, cloth etc is completely prohibited. Violence against any living being in thought, word or deed is the basic principle of Jaina ethics.

Jaina scriptures clearly state this position:

Acharanga Sutra

*42-43. Some slay animals for sacrificial purposes, some kill for the sake of their skin, some kill for the sake of their flesh, ... He who injures these animals, does not comprehend and renounce sinful acts. ... a wise man should not act sinfully towards animals.....*

Sutrakritang Sutra

*1.1.1.3 If a man kills living beings, or causes other men to kill them, or consents to their killing them, his iniquity will go on increasing.*

Hence, Jainism is vegetarian in the strictest possible sense.

## **Chapter 7 – Jainism**

### **Sub-chapter 7B**

#### **Political and Economic Implications of Jainism**

Jainism, like Buddhism, does not believe in God. Both are ascetic and consider Nirvana/Moksha as the goal of human life. Both condemn wealth. So, political and economic philosophies of both are similar. Hence, I need not discuss Jainism's political and economic philosophy separately. It may be considered the same as that of Buddhism.

## Chapter 7 – Jainism

### Sub-chapter 7C

#### Falsehood of Jainism

Most of the beliefs held by Jainism are scientifically false. These false beliefs are summarized below:

1. **Souls go on taking rebirth till they are liberated**

2. **The present life-situation is the result of past karmas and the future life-situation would be the result of present karmas**

3. **Souls are inherently covered by karma particles right from beginning**

4. **Progression from one-sensed to five-sensed organisms is due to progressive reduction of the density of karmic matter on souls**

5. **Matter is eternal and has forms and qualities like color**

6. **Space and time are eternal**

7. **The universe has a definite shape similar to a man standing with legs apart and hands on the waist**

8. **Two Suns and two Moons revolve around Meru Mountain which is in the middle of the Indian subcontinent, which in turn is in the middle of the Earth**

9. **Mountain Meru is 800,000 miles high and the diameter of Indian sub-continent is also 800,000 miles**

10. **During the 1<sup>st</sup> era of the latest round of time cycle, the height of people used to be 6 miles and in the 4<sup>th</sup> era, the height of people used to be 1500 meter**

Let me discuss them one by one.

The first two points are common with Hinduism and they have already been discussed in sub-chapter 5C [Falsehood of Hinduism]. You may read it by clicking the link [here](#) and [here](#).

So, let us discuss the remaining points here.

3. **Souls are inherently covered by karma particles right from beginning**

Jainism believes that all souls are naturally bound by karma particles. This is their original state in the beginning. Their journey starts from this state. Gradually, they make progress towards liberation.

But if that is so, a time would come when all souls would stand liberated and no bound soul would be left bound. Then all the processes of the universe would come to a stop.

So, the nature of the universe propounded by Jainism is unstable, asymmetrical and unsustainable. Going by our past experience and expectation of natural symmetry, this cannot be true.

#### **4. Progression from one-sensed to five-sensed organisms is due to progressive reduction of the density of karmic matter on souls**

According to Jainism, the intensity of manifestation of consciousness or knowing ability of souls is inversely proportional to the density of matter surrounding souls.

Liberated souls have developed full consciousness because they have fully removed all the matter surrounding them. Humans are just below them, because they have maximum number of senses (5) and they can also think.

According to Jainism, following types of souls exist in the descending order:

5-sensed (touch + taste + smell + sight + sound) – humans, mammals, birds etc

4-sensed – (touch + taste + smell + sight) – flies, bees, mosquitoes etc

3-sensed – (touch + taste + smell) – ants, bugs etc

2-sensed – (touch + taste) – Earth-worms, leaches etc

1-sensed – (touch) – shells, corals, plants, water, fire, wind etc

At the lowest level are the souls of one-sensed beings. Since their souls have densest matter surrounding them, their manifestation of consciousness, i.e., their knowing capability is the lowest resulting in having only one sense – that of touch. At the highest level are liberated souls.

So, according to Jainism, the progression from the lower level to higher level of souls is due to decrease in the density of matter surrounding the souls.

Now, according to Jainism, human souls can achieve the state of liberated souls only through minimization of desires, detachment and austerities. So, the same principle should apply for progression from one-sensed organisms to 2-sensed organisms, from 2-sensed organisms to 3-sensed organisms and so on.

However, it is observed that all living organisms – from one-sensed to 5 sensed – follow the same pattern of living.

They eat and mate; they nurse their babies; they either kill their prey for food or directly absorb nutrients from the environment. None of them follows the Jain principle of minimization of eating or mating. Organisms kill their prey, steal food hunted by others, camouflage to make sudden attack on prey, infect their prey in order to kill and so on. Wherever they can, organisms also store their food as much as

possible for difficult times (ants, bees, squirrels etc). They also store extra energy as fat. None of them try to become less violent.

In a large number of species, a dominant male keeps a harem of females in order to pass on his genes to maximum offspring at the cost of weaker males. Several species of animals indulge in sex for pleasure. Animals have been found to masturbate and have homosexual relations as well.

Yet, in accordance with the scientific theory of biological evolution, even with adopting such violent and immoral methods, storage of excess food and indulgence in sex, organisms have still evolved from simple to complex, from less intelligent to more intelligent simply by adapting to the changed environmental conditions.

Thus, the theory of biological evolution falsifies Jain belief that evolution takes place by reducing one's desires or by becoming less violent.

Jains may argue that at animal level, evolution from one-sensed to higher-sensed organisms is instinctive and happens automatically.

But if this is so, they should also believe that evolution from human level to siddha (liberated soul) level would also be automatic – so there should be no need to make special efforts such as avoiding violence or not accumulating anything to attain liberation.

So, no matter how they argue, the fact of evolution from simple to complex organisms falsifies Jain's belief that evolution is the result of minimization of one's desires and self-denials. This implies that their metaphysical belief that evolution becomes possible by reduction in the density of matter around souls is also false.

## **5. Matter is eternal and has forms and qualities like color**

Jainism says that matter is eternal, has form, occupies space and has qualities like color, touch, smell, taste, etc. In other words, matter as it appears is what matter really is.

According to the Big Bang theory, matter in the form of energy came into existence 13.8 billion years ago. So, matter is proved to be not eternal. Besides, energy does not have any form or qualities like color, touch, smell etc. Even this energy originates either directly from nothingness or from something which in turn may be arising from out of nothingness. So, matter or even energy cannot be considered eternal.

The energy produced by the Big Bang gradually gave rise to quarks, leptons and bosons, which in turn gave rise to atoms and molecules which do have the property of color, touch, smell etc. But these properties are not just out there subsisting on matter – they are the products of the interaction between human brain (along with senses) and 'something out there'. The color that is seen is different under different conditions. So color cannot be treated as absolute and subsisting in matter objectively. The same

holds true for other properties like touch, smell etc.

Thus, the belief of Jainism about eternity of matter and real existence of its qualities is completely false.

## **6. Space and time are eternal**

Jainism believes that space and time are fundamental content of this universe and are eternal and infinite.

But the Big Bang theory of the origin of the universe says that space and time themselves were non-existent before Big Bang. It is the Big Bang which created space and time. Since we and the universe we perceive are products of the fundamental contents evolved in space-time, we are all trapped biologically with space-time limitations. Human mind cannot think without space and time – but that does not mean that they must also be “out there eternally”.

For example, a fish may not be able to imagine that the universe can be without water, because it is born in water and dies in water. But humans can imagine this universe without water. The same is true for space and time. They need not be eternal and infinite.

## **7. The universe has a shape similar to a man standing with legs apart and hands on the waist**

According to the latest scientific research, the universe is flat. In other words, space as a whole is not curved circular, semi-circular or in any other shape. Though space may be locally curved where massive bodies like galactic center or stars are, overall it is flat. So, there is no question of the universe being the shape of a man standing with legs apart and hands on the waist, as imagined in Jainism.

Secondly, the universe is expanding. So the edge of the universe is changing its shape all the time. So, the Jain belief that the universe has an eternally fixed shape is completely imaginary and false.

Jains may argue that the upper and lower parts of the universe are non-physical, hence they cannot be discovered by science. But, if that is so, Jains too cannot know it. So, on what basis they would claim that non-physical parts of the universe have such-and-such shapes?

Moreover, how can non-physical entities have any shape? Only physical things can have a shape.

## **8. Two Suns and two Moons revolve around Meru Mountain which is in the middle of the Indian subcontinent, which in turn is in the middle of the Earth**

Today even a school student knows that there is only one Sun and one Moon; that Earth is round – not flat; that it spins on its axis and also revolves around the Sun. The Moon also moves on its axis and revolves around the Earth. Since the Earth is round like a ball, it is meaningless to say that a place – Indian subcontinent -- is in the middle of the Earth.

## **9. Mountain Meru is 800,000 miles high and the diameter of Indian sub-continent is also**

## 800,000 miles

As all of us know today, the highest mountain on Earth is Mount Everest, which is only 8848 meter or 5.5 miles high. The maximum north-south distance of Indian sub-continent is not more than 2000 miles. So, geographical measurements given by Jainism are completely off the mark. Their belief is based on nothing except wild speculation.

**10. During the 1<sup>st</sup> era of the latest round of time cycle, the height of people used to be 6 miles and in the 4<sup>th</sup> era, the height of people used to be 1 mile**

Archaeologists have discovered thousands of fossils of human skeletons. But not a single human fossil has been found which is 6 miles or even 1 mile. This shows that the description of the size of humans given by Jainism is nothing but pure speculation.

Thus we find that the world-view proposed by Jainism is completely false.

## Chapter 7 – Jainism

### Sub-chapter 7D

#### Harmful effects of Jainism

It is clear that though the world-view of Jainism is different from that of Hinduism, there is striking similarities between the two religions in so far as the their beliefs in the supreme human goal and the means to achieve it are concerned. Both religions believe that attainment of liberation should be the goal of every person and minimization of desires for wealth and sex should be the starting point to move towards that goal.

Hence, the harmful effects of Hinduism, as discussed in the sub chapter 5E [Harmful Effects of Hinduism] from point 1 to 7 applies to Jainism as well.

Jainism shares its belief about non-violence with Buddhism in that both teach that aggression should not be responded by aggression. Hence, the harmful effect of not fighting back aggression, as discussed in the sub chapter 6D [Harmful effects of Buddhism] applies to Jainism as well.

These harmful effects explain why Jainism could never become a popular religion in India. Too much asceticism, too much emphasis on non-possession, celibacy, non-violence and harsh self-torturing practices such as pulling out one's hair or committing suicide for religious reasons must have put off the masses.

Secondly, Islamic invaders destroyed thousands of Jain temples, plundered their wealth, burnt their books and killed Jaina monks. Jainism, being defenseless and believing in non-violence, became easy targets for these foreign aggressors.

Due to these two reasons, Jainism could not become popular in India, nor could it spread out in other countries.

## **Chapter 7 – Jainism**

### **Sub Chapter 7E**

#### **Summary of Jainism**

Jainism was propounded by Mahavira during 6<sup>th</sup> century BCE in the same part of India where Buddha preached his whole life.

Jainism rejects the need to hypothesize God. It believes in the eternity of matter and soul in addition to space, time and medium of rest and motion. Since these 6 substances always exist, there is, according to Jainism, no need to hypothesize any God to explain creation or destruction of the world. Since Jainism does not believe in God, it also rejects the Vedic rituals and sacrifices to appease gods as useless. It also rejects caste system.

Souls are believed to be infinite in number and inherently conscious. However, they are originally covered with karmic matter due to which they are completely unconscious and ignorant. As the soul removes its karmic matter, it becomes purer and more conscious. The liberated souls are those souls who have been able to remove the karmic matter completely. Souls residing in humans, animals and plants come next below these liberated souls in respect of purity in that order.

Humans are believed to be capable of attaining the state of liberation by first stopping further inflow of karmic matter into their souls and then by removing the existing matter from the soul.

The former process requires strict observance of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, celibacy and minimum possessions.

The latter process requires deliberate suffering of pain. For example, it asks its monks to pull out the hair of the head, walk barefoot in severe hot or cold weather, fast frequently, clean the path before walking, not to eat in the night, take vows to reduce needs as much as possible, fast to death in old age and so forth.

Scientifically, all the beliefs of Jainism are false. So, Jains are torturing themselves due to ignorance. They do not know that it would lead them nowhere, not even to liberation.

Jainism is the ultimate denial of self under the delusion of attaining liberation. It is an extreme form of asceticism. Though it is not harmful for non-Jains, it is extremely harmful for its followers, particularly its monks and nuns. The sooner it is discarded, the better for these misguided though sincere followers.

## Chapter 8

### Sikhism

#### An Introduction

10 Gurus (Spiritual Masters) who lived in and around Punjab during 15<sup>th</sup> to 18<sup>th</sup> century preached a devotional form of Hinduism with some unique features. Their teachings were compiled in a book called Shri Guru Granth Sahib. These teachings eventually came to be called Sikhism.

#### Who were these 10 Gurus?

Sikhism started with the preaching of Guru Nanak (1469-1539) who was born in a Hindu family in Punjab region of India. His ideas were subsequently nurtured by 9 successive gurus -- Guru Angad, Guru Amar Das, Guru Rama Das, Guru Arjan, Guru Har Govind, Guru Har Rai, Guru Har Krishan, Guru Teg Bahadur and the last Guru Govind Singh (1666 – 1708).

Guru Govind Singh made the most sacred scripture of Sikhism – Shri Guru Granth Sahib (SGGS) -- as the last Guru of Sikhism.

SGGS was first compiled by the 5<sup>th</sup> Guru – Guru Arjan. His compilation included the teachings of the first 5 Gurus. The next 3 Gurus did not contribute anything to SGGS. In the end, the last living Guru – Guru Govind Singh made the final compilation incorporating some verses of the 9<sup>th</sup> Guru and one verse of his own.

Teachings of some other Hindu saints of Bhakti Movement such as Kabir, Namdev, Ravidas, Jaidev, Beni etc were also included in this book.

#### Sikhism from the point of view of a Sikh

A devout Sikh believes that God directly revealed His wisdom and message for the entire humanity to all the 10 Sikh Gurus. Hence, their teachings can never be false.

The goal of human life, according to Sikhism, is to realize oneness of self and God (called 'Waheguru' meaning "The Wonderful Teacher"). Main features of Sikhism are:

Rejection of Hindu concepts of asceticism, caste system, idol worship and incarnation of Bhagwan

Rejection of Islamic concepts of violent jihad, inferior status of women, veiling of women and polygamy

Belief in the oneness of the God of Hinduism and Islam

Abandoning pursuits of wealth, status and sexual pleasures

Working to satisfy one's basic needs only

Meditation on the Holy Name of Waheguru

Earning livelihood by honest means

Living a married family life; having sex only for procreation

Treating every person equally, irrespective of his/her caste, religion, sex, place of birth or social status

Doing selfless service to the community and society in general and

Giving charity

## **History of Sikhism**

Sikhism developed its distinctive warrior-saint and working-saint concepts in the background of the oppressive Islamic Mughal rule in India during 1526-1707. Babar defeated the sultan of Delhi in 1526 and laid the foundation of the Mughal rule, which dominated the political life in India till death of Aurangzeb in 1707.

From Guru Arjan onwards, fights of Sikh Gurus continued off and on with Muslim rulers of India, as Sikhism was bound to clash with Islamic hatred of unbelievers. This continued fight forced Sikhism to sanction fighting with oppressors and transformed Sikhs into saint-soldiers. This urgency to fight made Sikhs less ascetic and more practical.

## **Demographics**

Today, Sikhism is the fifth largest religion of the world with about 30 million followers. Most of the followers live in Punjab, India.

## Chapter 8 -- Sikhism

### Sub-chapter 8A

#### Scientific explanation of the origin of Sikhism

##### **Doctrine of divine origin of Sikhism is unacceptable**

All the devout Sikhs believe that God chose their 10 Gurus to reveal His messages for guidance of entire mankind. They say that Sikhism is the latest religion and hence the most relevant message of God for humanity.

But if this claim were true, there would not have been any false statement in their scripture Shri Guru Granth Sahib (SGGS). But, as I will show in the sub chapter 8C, there are several false statements made in that book.

So, how else do we explain the origin and development of Sikhism?

The fundamental beliefs of Sikhism as expressed in SGGS are the same as that of Upanishadic/Classical Hinduism. In fact, SGGS contains several verses of Hindu saints of Bhakti Movement.

The emphasis on devotion to God in SGGS can also be traced to the devotion to God as expressed in Ramayana, Mahabharata and Bhagwat Purana.

In fact, SGGS is not at all different from any typical Hindu devotional poetry of Bhakti Movement.

##### **So, why did Sikhism originate?**

Sikhism started as a Hindu devotional philosophy when the first Guru of Sikhism – Guru Nanak, who was born in a Hindu family, started preaching to the Hindu audience. All the Gurus before Guru Govind Singh followed the same tradition of Guru Nanak. All of them emphasized the worthlessness of worldly pursuits of wealth and sex. All of them praised the nobleness of the ideal of liberation or oneness with God. All of them, like other Hindu saints of medieval period, condemned caste system and idol worship.

But this tradition of peace and devotion to God was dramatically changed by the 10<sup>th</sup> Guru – Guru Govind Singh.

The reasons for this change were historical events shaping India at that time. The oppressive Islamic Mughal rule in India during 1526-1707 was the main cause of the rise of Sikhism as a distinct religion.

Consider the following historical facts:

Guru Nanak was imprisoned by the first Mughal ruler – Babar for a short period, when Babar invaded Syedpur (now in Pakistan), slaughtered and made captives. Guru Nanak was staying there at that time; hence he too was imprisoned with others. However, after a brief period, he was released.

Guru Arjan was tortured and driven to death by Mughal king Jahangir for refusing to remove references to Islamic God from SGGS.

Guru Tegh Bahadur was tortured and beheaded by Mughal emperor Aurangzeb for his refusal to convert to Islam.

2 young sons of Guru Govind Singh were executed by one Wazir Khan, governor of Sirhind for refusing to accept Islam.

Guru Govind Singh was stabbed in an assassination attempt by a Muslim, hired by Wazir Khan. Later, he yielded to the injury and died.

So, out of the 10 Gurus, 4 became the victims of Islam.

These incidents changed the path of Sikhism. From Guru Arjan onwards, fighting of Sikh Gurus with the Muslim rulers started off and on.

When the 9<sup>th</sup> Guru and his father Guru Teg Bahadur was killed by Mughal emperor Aurangzeb for refusal to convert to Islam, Guru Govind Singh vowed to end the oppressive rule of Muslim rulers. He championed the need to fight a just war – a war not to oppress anyone, but to resist and punish the evil doers.

Classical Hinduism too had approved fighting by a king, where necessary, to provide security and justice to his subjects. But this task was assigned to Kshatriya caste only. Bhagwan Krishna asking Arjuna to fight Kauravas to end their unjust rule is a classic example of this doctrine of just war.

However, due to constant preaching of minimization of desires, detachment, asceticism, non-violence and compassion for all living beings by Classical Hinduism and later Bhakti Movement, the desire to fight even for justice had gone in the background. Bhagwat Purana is full of examples, where several kings left their kingdoms to become ascetics in order to attain self-realization. The doctrine of non-violence taught by Buddhism and Jainism had also blunted the concept of just war.

Due to all these factors, the spirit of fighting in Hinduism had got very diluted.

It is in this background that Guru Govind Singh decided to raise an army of dedicated saint-soldiers who would be ready to sacrifice their life to protect the honor of Hindus/Sikhs from the oppression of Muslim rulers. He named this new institution ‘Khalsa’, which means ‘pure’. This was in the year 1699.

This was the beginning of the new religion of Sikhism.

To give a distinct identity to Khalsa members (baptized Sikhs), Guru Govind Singh introduced a set of rules known as 52 Edicts. Some of the rules, not found in Hinduism or any other Indian religions, are as follows:

All Sikhs must wear 5 K's: Kesh (uncut hair to be covered by a turban), Kangha (comb), Katar (a strapped curved dagger), Kara (a metal bracelet) and Kachera (a tightly fitted cotton undergarment). The sole purpose to have these 5 accessories was to protect a Sikh when he was attacked.

Turban and long hair tied on the head protected him from physical attacks on head.

One's natural tendency is to protect his face/body by hand and bracelet would take some brunt, if attacked by a rod or sword.

Dagger could be used to scare the enemy and when necessary, to kill him.

Comb was used to keep the hair clean and tidy.

The undergarment was a tightly fitted cloth to cover genitals. This was believed to promote celibacy, which was thought to preserve one's vitality and zest for fighting.

So, all the five K's were essentially tools of fighting or defending oneself during a fight.

All male Sikhs must have 'Singh' (lion) as their surnames and all the female Sikhs must have 'Kaur' (princess) as their surnames. This was done to eliminate caste distinctions because different castes had different surnames. These surnames added dignity and uniformity in the names of Sikhs giving them a sense of unity.

Sikhs were encouraged to learn horse riding, weaponry, athletics, body building, wrestling, politics etc so that they could keep themselves fit to fight.

They were advised to conquer enemy by any means – diplomacy, bribery, division or fighting.

Contribution of 10% of income was made mandatory for each adult Sikh household. This income was used to fund religious and military operations against enemies.

Strict observance of monogamy and prohibition of pre-marital or extra-marital sex was to be followed in order to give equality and dignity to women, making family the center of a Sikh's life and channelizing his sexual energy for protecting the religion and the nation.

Marriage only within Sikh community was permitted to keep their identity distinct.

Sikhs were encouraged to provide help to the poor and the needy.

It is obvious that these rules were made to make Sikhs capable of fighting with the enemy. In face of the Muslim oppressors, fighting had become absolutely necessary to protect one's honor and religion. This is what made Sikhs different from Hindus.

**So, Sikhism is different from Hinduism in the following respects:**

While Hindus had assigned the task of fighting only to a particular caste – Kshatriyas, in Sikhism, every Sikh was supposed to be ready to fight. Sikhism completely rejected the caste system of Hinduism.

Hinduism had also shifted the responsibility of killing powerful evil persons to Bhagwan, as expressed in various mythological stories of Ramayana, Mahabharata and Puranas. They believed that humans cannot handle very powerful wicked persons/demons and Bhagwan must be born in human or animal form to kill them. But Sikhism rejects this belief in incarnation of Bhagwan. It says that men themselves should take responsibility of defeating the evil.

Unlike Hinduism, Sikhism did not promote asceticism. So, the energy of Sikhs became available for improving material life of the family and the society. This is the reason why Sikhs in general are more hard-working, enterprising and rich.

Hinduism condemned women as embodiment of Maya or evil who trap men for sex. But Sikhism accords equal status to men and women. It holds that both of them may be equally good or bad, depending on how devoted they are to the spiritual goal of life. SGGS says:

Page 473

*From woman, man is born; within woman, man is conceived; to woman he is engaged and married. Woman becomes his friend; through woman, the future generations come. When his woman dies, he seeks another woman; to woman he is bound. So why call her bad? From her, kings are born. From woman, woman is born; without woman, there would be no one at all. O Nanak, only the True Lord is without a woman.*

This is why Sikhism condemned sati system of Hinduism. Women were offered equal opportunity in all religious activities. Sikh Gurus preached and followed only monogamy.

**Sikhism is also different from Islam in the following respects:**

Sikhism rejects the belief of Islam that Quran is the final book of God and Muhammad is his last messenger. It also rejects the Islamic belief that women must be kept under veil. Polygamy, animal sacrifice to celebrate religious occasions and circumcision advocated by Islam are also rejected.

With this background, let us discuss the beliefs of Sikhism:

- 1. Cyclical origin and dissolution of the universe**
- 2. Doctrine of karma and rebirth**
- 3. Four ages of declining religiosity moving in a cycle**
- 4. Liberation should be the goal of human life**
- 5. Devotion is the way to attain liberation**
- 6. Pursuit of wealth, status and sexual pleasure is not conducive to attainment of liberation**

## **7. Vegetarianism**

Let me discuss them one by one.

### **1. Cyclical origin and dissolution of the universe**

According to Sikhism, the universe was created by Waheguru (God) from within Himself. The universe comes out of Waheguru and is dissolved back in Him cyclically. He becomes the world and yet He also remains detached. So, He Himself is enjoyer, experiencer, thinker, doer etc. He Himself traps Himself in bondage and He Himself gets liberated. The world is just a play for Him.

SGGS, Page 1035

*For endless ages, there was only utter darkness. There was no Earth or sky; there was only His Command. There was no day or night, no Moon or Sun; God sat in primal and profound meditative position. .... There were no Vedas, Korans or Bibles, no Smritis or Shastras. .... When He so willed, He created the world. Without any supporting power, He sustained the Universe.*

SGGS, Page 1385

*You established all the worlds from within Yourself, and extended them outward. You are All-pervading amongst all, and yet You Yourself remain detached.*

SGGS, Page 276

*So many times, He has expanded His expansion. Forever and ever, He is the One, the One Universal Creator. Many millions are created in various forms. From God they emanate, and into God they merge once again.*

SGGS, Page 1035

*He Himself is the Creator, and He Himself is the Enjoyer. He Himself is satisfied, and He Himself is liberated. The Lord of liberation Himself grants liberation.....*

SGGS, Page 138

*He placed the soul in the body which He had fashioned.*

But when exactly was the world created? Sikhism says that this cannot be known by humans:

SGGS, Page 4

*What was that season, and what was that month, when the Universe was created? The Creator who created this creation -- only He Himself knows. How can we speak of Him?"*

As to the order of creation, Sikhism believes that God first created air, then water, then everything else.

SGGS, Page 19

*From the True Lord came the air, and from the air came water. From water, He created the three worlds;*

## **2. Doctrine of karma and rebirth**

Like all other Indian religions, Sikhism too believes in the doctrine of rebirth and karma. This point has already been explained in detail under the sub-chapter 5A [[Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism](#)]. Sikhism too emphasizes the misery of rebirth though 8.4 million species due to bad karma and strongly urges humans to work for liberation:

SGGS, Page 176

*In so many incarnations, you were a worm and an insect; in so many incarnations, you were an elephant, a fish and a deer. In so many incarnations, you were a bird and a snake. In so many incarnations, you were yoked as an ox and a horse. Meet the Lord of the Universe - now is the time to meet Him. After so very long, this human body was fashioned for you. ... You wandered through 8.4 million incarnations.*

## **3. Four ages of declining religiosity moving in a cycle**

Like Hinduism, Sikhism too believes that there are four ages of varying religiosity, morality, health, happiness and conducive environment. It moves from the best to the worst in a cycle.

SGGS, Page 880

*In the Golden Age of Sat Yuga, everyone spoke the Truth. In each and every home, devotional worship was performed by the people, according to the Guru's Teachings. In that Golden Age, Dharma had four feet. How rare are those people who, as Gurmukh, contemplate this and understand. ...*

*In the Silver Age of Treta Yuga, one leg was removed. Hypocrisy became prevalent, and people thought that the Lord was far away. The Gurmukhs still understood and realized; the Naam abided deep within them, and they were at peace. ...*

*In the Brass Age of Dwaapar Yuga, duality and double-mindedness arose. Deluded by doubt, they knew duality. In this Brass Age, Dharma was left with only two feet. ...*

*In the Iron Age of Kali Yuga, Dharma was left with only one power. It walks on just one foot; love and emotional attachment to Maya have increased. Love and emotional attachment to Maya bring total darkness...*

*Throughout all the ages, the Naam is the ultimate, the most sublime. How rare are those, who as Gurmukh, understand this. One who meditates on the Lord's Name is a humble devotee. O Nanak, in each and every age, the Naam is glory and greatness.*

## **4. Liberation should be the goal of human life**

Sikhism, like all other Indian religions, believes that man, due to ignorance, thinks that real happiness comes by fulfilling maximum desires. He runs after wealth, status and sex. But even if he succeeds in getting these things, they can give him only momentary pleasures. Worse, indulgence in sexual pleasures makes him sick. The real happiness comes by merging the soul with Waheguru, who is within all of us. So, the worldly life is not worth living.

Till merger of soul with Waheguru happens, soul will have to take birth, according to its past karma, in various life forms in the cycle of birth and death.

The ultimate goal of human life should therefore be to get rid of this cycle of birth and death. The birth as human is a great opportunity to achieve this noblest task.

### **5. Devotion is the only way to attain liberation**

Sikhism emphasizes devotion to Waheguru, chanting His name and ultimately merging with Him as the only means to attain liberation from the cycle of birth and death. It urges humans to abandon sinful passions like anger, greed, sexuality, pride etc and focus mainly on name chanting of Waheguru with full devotion.

SGGS, Page 882

*One who chants the Praises of the Lord is the greatest of the great; the Gurmukh keeps the Lord clasped to his heart. If one is blessed with high destiny, he meditates on the Lord, who carries him across the terrifying world-ocean.*

SGGS, Page 24

*The Grace of the Master is bestowed upon those who meditate on Him alone. They are pleasing to His Heart.*

### **6. Pursuit of wealth, and sexual pleasure is not conducive to attainment of liberation**

Like all other Indian religions, Sikhism too condemns pursuit of wealth and sexual pleasure as impediments in the way to liberation. See some of the quotes from SGGS:

Page 24

*Says Nanak, you will have to walk on the Path of Death, so why do you bother to collect wealth and property?*

Page 41

*O Siblings of Destiny, God is my Friend and Companion. Emotional attachment to children and spouse is poison; in the end, no one will go along with you as your helper.*

Page 42

*People are entangled in the enjoyment of fine clothes, but gold and silver are only dust. They*

acquire beautiful horses and elephants, and ornate carriages of many kinds. They think of nothing else, and they forget all their relatives.

Page 1034

|| 5 || Pure is the body, and immaculate is the swan-soul; within it is the immaculate essence of the Naam. Such a being drinks in all his pains like Ambrosial Nectar; he never suffers sorrow again. || 6 || For his excessive indulgences, he receives only pain; from his enjoyments, he contracts diseases, and in the end, he wastes away. His pleasure can never erase his pain; without accepting the Lord's Will, he wanders lost and confused. || 7 ||

Page 1249

In hope, there is very great pain; the self-willed manmukh focuses his consciousness on it. The Gurmukhs become desireless and attain supreme peace. In the midst of their household, they remain detached; they are lovingly attuned to the Detached Lord. Sorrow and separation do not cling to them at all. They are pleased with the Lord's Will.

Page 1256

..... Forgetting his Lord and Master, the mortal enjoys sensual pleasures; then, disease rises up in his body. The blind mortal receives his punishment. O foolish doctor, don't give me medicine.

Page 1287

... Worldly possessions are obtained by pain and suffering; when they are gone, they leave pain and suffering. O Nanak, without the True Name, hunger is never satisfied. Beauty does not satisfy hunger; when the man sees beauty, he hungers even more. As many as are the pleasures of the body, so many are the pains which afflict it.

## 7. Vegetarianism

Sikhism treats the entire world as divine -- as manifestation of the same God. If I am a manifestation of God and a goat is also a manifestation of God, how can I kill a goat for my food?

So, from this standpoint of Sikhism, compassion for all beings naturally follows. This is why there is not a single verse in SGGS which sanctions killing animals for food. On the contrary, there are several verses in SGGS which condemn meat-eating. For example:

Page 723

The world eats dead carcasses, living by neglect and greed. Like a goblin, or a beast, they kill and eat the forbidden carcasses of meat. So control your urges, or else you will be seized by the Lord, and thrown into the tortures of hell.

Page 1376

*Kabir, to use force is tyranny, even if you call it legal. When your account is called for in the Court of the Lord, what will your condition be then? Kabir, the dinner of beans and rice is excellent, if it is flavored with salt. Who would cut his throat, to have meat with his bread?*

Page 1104

*You kill living beings, and call it a righteous action. Tell me, brother, what would you call an unrighteous action? You call yourself the most excellent sage; then who would you call a butcher?*

Page 1352

*You say that the One Lord is in all, so why do you kill chickens? O Mullah, tell me: is this God's Justice? The doubts of your mind have not been dispelled.*

The implications of these verses are clear: one should not eat meat as it involves cruelty and disrespect to God. Vegetarian food, therefore, should be the natural diet of all devotees to God.

## Chapter 8 -- Sikhism

### Sub-chapter 8B

#### Political & Economic Implications of Sikhism

##### Political implications of Sikhism -- Theocracy

SGGS does not give any clear views about the nature, origin and development of a kingdom/state. It only says that God is the king of kings; that God makes and unmakes everything including a king:

Page 6

*He created the world, with its various colors, species of beings, and the variety of Maya. Having created the creation, He watches over it Himself, by His Greatness. He does whatever He pleases. No order can be issued to Him. He is the King, the King of kings, the Supreme Lord and Master of kings. Nanak remains subject to His Will.*

In fact, SGGS repeatedly says that it is God who does everything and man cannot do anything:

Page 1427

*Whatever God does, accept that as good; leave behind all other judgements. He shall cast His Glance of Grace, and attach you to Himself. Instruct yourself with the Teachings, and doubt will depart from within. Everyone does that which is pre-ordained by destiny. Everything is under His control; there is no other place at all. Nanak is in peace and bliss, accepting the Will of God.*

Page 418

*The battle raged between the Mughals and the Pat'haans, and the swords clashed on the battlefield. They took aim and fired their guns, and they attacked with their elephants. Those men whose letters were torn in the Lord's Court, were destined to die, O Siblings of Destiny. || 5 || The Hindu women, the Muslim women, the Bhatis and the Rajputs — some had their robes torn away, from head to foot, while others came to dwell in the cremation ground. Their husbands did not return home — how did they pass their night? || 6 || The Creator Himself acts, and causes others to act. Unto whom should we complain? Pleasure and pain come by Your Will; unto whom should we go and cry? The Commander issues His Command, and is pleased. O Nanak, we receive what is written in our destiny. || 7 || 12 ||*

This sort of reasoning of SGGS implies that if someone is killed in a battle, nothing can be done about it, as it is God's will. Obviously such views are incompatible with any political initiative to improve the pitiable condition of the people.

However, this typical pacific, helpless attitude gradually started changing as oppression of Muslim

rulers to Hindu subjects went on increasing.

From Guru Arjan onwards, fights of Sikh Gurus started off and on with Muslim rulers of India.

The strategy of Sikhism was dramatically changed by Guru Govind Singh. He took matters in his own hand, organized his followers and established Khalsa to fight the injustices perpetrated by Muslim rulers. It was he who strongly emphasized the need to fight a just war – a war not to oppress anyone, but to resist and punish the evil doers. This new philosophy transformed Sikhs into saint-soldiers.

It was because of this initiative that Sikhs started fighting with Muslim rulers and replacing their rule with their own.

This effort culminated in the Sikh empire of Maharaja Ranjit Singh (ruled 1801- 1839). He conquered all small autonomous Sikh territories and established an empire which extended from Tibetan border on China in north to Multan in south including Jammu and Kashmir, and western parts of modern Pakistan. He abolished Jizya tax imposed by Muslim rulers and treated people of all religions equally. Majority of his subjects were Muslims but he did not discriminate against them. He also modernized his army.

Thus Sikhism, after Guru Govind Singh, propounded a benevolent monarchy with secular character which administered justice and security to all its subjects irrespective of caste or religion.

### **Economic philosophy of Sikhism**

According to Sikhism, the purpose of human life is to attain unification with God through devotion. This goal can be achieved by minimization of desires for wealth and sexual pleasure and channelizing one's efforts mainly towards devotion to God. Thus, Sikhism too implies the same economic philosophy – **Minimalism**, which is implied by Hinduism, Buddhism and Jainism. This has already been discussed and hence need not be repeated here.

As explained earlier, Minimalism implies condemnation of the rich, which in turn implies subsistence economy.

However, the effect of Minimalism was much less on Sikh society because of the following reasons:

Sikhism condemned asceticism and begging for food

It taught the dignity of labor and earning of livelihood by honest means

It encouraged family life

It was constantly fighting to establish a just and secular society; so it needed wealth to fund its military operations

It made it mandatory for every Sikh to donate 10% of his income

## It taught to help the poor

These measures promoted a healthy desire to attain a decent standard of living, because without it, nobody could maintain a family life and donate 10% of the income. Military operations required massive fund for recruitment of new fighters, training and weapons. So, Sikhs could not afford to be poor. Free food for the poor in the Langar (community kitchen) 24 hours a day, seven days a week, too required huge fund.

So, these measures made Sikhs aspire for more and more wealth. It made them more enterprising and hard working. Gradually, this became their habit. This explains why the Sikhs are one of the richest communities in India today and why a lot of them have ventured out and flourished abroad too.

It is this respect for wealth in Sikhism which has made it averse to taxing the rich too much. It has also promoted the idea of voluntary donation for the needs of the society.

So, Minimalism of Sikhism is closer to capitalism than socialism.

## **Chapter 8 -- Sikhism**

### **Sub-chapter 8C**

#### **Falsehood of Sikhism**

Most of the beliefs championed by Sikhism are false. These false beliefs are summarized below:

- 1. The universe is created and destroyed cyclically by an omniscient and omnipotent power called Waheguru.**
- 2. The exact time when this universe was created cannot be known by human mind.**
- 3. First air was created; then from air, water was created; then from water, everything else was created.**
- 4. Souls go on taking rebirth till they are liberated.**
- 5. The present life-situation is the result of past karmas and the future life-situation would be the result of present karmas.**
- 6. Spiritual evolution takes place by doing good karma**
- 7. Four successive periods with descending degree of morality and spirituality move cyclically for humans.**

All these beliefs of Sikhism have already been discussed in sub-chapter 5C under the head **Falsehood of Hinduism**, where it has already been proved that these beliefs are false.

## Chapter 8 -- Sikhism

### Sub-chapter 8D

#### Harmful effects of Sikhism

Since the basic world-view of Sikhism is the same as that of Hinduism, the harmful effects of Hinduism as mentioned in sub-chapter 5E [Harmful effects of Hinduism] from point 1 to 7 applies to Sikhism as well.

Though Hinduism and Sikhism are similar in several respects, Sikhism is much more rational than Hinduism.

First of all, by rejecting asceticism of Upanishadic Hinduism and emphasizing the importance of a house holder and dignity of labor for earning one's livelihood, Sikhism became much more practical and grounded. By rejecting the 1<sup>st</sup>, 3<sup>rd</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> Ashram (Brahmacharya, Vanprastha and Sanyas) of Hinduism and making the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ashram (Grihstha) as the only acceptable Ashram of life, Sikhism cut the very root of lethargy and corruption of Hindu monastic life, which later developed.

It is this doctrine which made Sikhs much more work-oriented and extrovert. This is why they are one of the richest communities in India. This also explains why a number of them ventured out abroad to live a comfortable householder's life. It is because of this reason that there are no Sikh beggars, monks or nuns.

Secondly, by rejecting beliefs in idol worship and incarnation of Bhagwan, they made Sikhs independent of the mercy of Bhagwan for solution of day to day problems and for protection from the wicked. This is why they could prepare themselves for a just war. Hinduism had conveniently shifted the responsibility of fighting the evil to Bhagwan. Sikhs took back the responsibility of fighting on themselves. This is why they could protect Sikhs as well as Hindus from the savagery of Muslim rulers.

Thirdly, by rejecting caste system, Sikhism wiped out all the artificial barriers among people. All Sikhs became equal. In Langar (community kitchen attached to Gurudwara), everyone could eat together without any discrimination. All barriers of dining and marrying were eliminated. This was a big improvement upon Hinduism.

Fourthly, Sikhism gave equal status to women. They were, unlike in Islam, not required to be in veil. They could participate in all walks of life including religious affairs with equal dignity. They strongly condemned sati system prevalent in Hinduism. Polygamy advocated by Islam was also condemned. Monogamy was supported and followed strictly by all Sikh Gurus.

So, Sikhism made significant improvements on Hinduism.

## **However, Sikhism is not free from shortcomings:**

Like all the other 3 Indian religions, Sikhism too continued to condemn acquisition of wealth and project it as an impediment on the path of liberation. But, as demonstrated while discussing the harmful effects of Hinduism, acquisition of wealth and meditation can go together. There is no contradiction between the two.

Similarly, condemnation of sex as the cause of disease and pre-mature death also was unscientific, as shown while discussing the harmful effects of Hinduism.

The five external symbols to be carried by all adult male Sikhs all the time – uncut hair, comb, metal bracelet, dagger and a tightly fitted cotton undergarment – were relevant at the time Guru Govind Singh introduced them into the religion. But now, they are no longer relevant because Sikhs do not have to be in the fighting mode all the time any more. However, Sikhs are still carrying these symbolic items. This is not justified at all.

**To sum up:**

**Sikhism is better than all the other 3 Indian religions, though it is not perfect.**

## **Chapter 8 – Sikhism**

### **Sub-chapter 8E**

#### **Summary of Sikhism**

Sikhism started as an offshoot of Bhakti Movement of Hinduism in medieval India at a time when Hinduism was clashing with Islam. However, gradually it developed its own distinct identity.

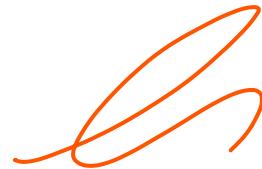
Sikhism differed from Hinduism in its condemnation of asceticism, caste system, idol worship and belief in incarnation of Bhagwan. It differed from Islam by rejecting the Islamic claim that Muhammad was the last messenger of God. Sikhism also condemned Islamic aggression, intolerance, polygamy, veiling of women, animal sacrifice and practice of circumcision.

Due to various acts of Islamic aggression against Sikh Gurus, Guru Govind Singh transformed Sikhism into a religion which was willing to fight back oppressive Muslim rulers. This gave rise to the concept of saint-soldiers. So, Sikhism combines devotion to God with active fighting against the evil forces.

Sikhism was an improvement upon Hinduism in the sense that it tried to combine spirituality with practical life of a householder. By condemning Hindu asceticism and dependence of ascetics on the alms, Sikhism tried to make a synthesis of 3 distinct pursuits – earning wealth, fighting for protection of one's religion & dignity and striving for liberation. These changes made Sikhs more extrovert, enterprising and rich, while still keeping them spiritual.

However, Sikhs are still carrying external symbols such as uncut hair with turban, bracelet in hand etc. These symbols are no longer relevant and hence sticking to them is unjustified.

## CHAPTER 9



### Have religions done no good?

So far, I have discussed why religions arose and how they are false and harmful.

But you may be wondering: have religions done no good?

All the religions discussed here are primarily world-views based on common sense observation and reasoning. A world-view is not developed for its good or bad consequences. Consequences simply logically follow from a world-view. A belief developed to satisfy a desire is not a belief, but a story.

So, the question can be rephrased as: what good consequences have followed from religions, if any?

Followers of religions generally cite the following beneficial consequences: **hope, morality and compassion.**

Let me briefly explain the 'beneficial' effects of each religion as believed by their followers:

#### **Judaism –**

Jews believe that Judaism gave hope to Israelites that one day they would avenge Assyrian and Babylonian humiliation by becoming a super power of the world by subjugating all other religions and political powers with the help of a future Messiah under the guidance of God. This hope gave them strength to face the adversities.

Judaism developed a moral code in the form of Ten Commandments and others, which formed the basis of Rule of Law and a judicial structure. The fear of God ensured strict observance of moral code.

Judaism introduced compassion to humanity by prescribing liberal treatment and charities for the poor and even for a stranger.

#### **Christianity –**

Jesus believed that he was the Son of God. He gave hope to his fellow Israelites by offering them Kingdom of God, where there would be peace, prosperity, love and equality for all. He also assured them heaven, where one can live forever under the loving care of God. This hope gave strength to Jews to face adversities such as subjugation under Romans, poverty and disease.

Christians believe that the teaching of Jesus -- "love your neighbor as yourself" -- contains the seed of an entire moral code necessary for forming a peaceful and harmonious society.

No religion has emphasized compassionate deeds, especially for the poor, as much as by Jesus.

## **Islam –**

Islam has given Muslims the hope of establishing Allah's rule in the entire world by jihadi campaigns and Paradise after death. This hope has given strength to Muslims to sacrifice their life for the sake of Islam. Muhammad also gave them hope of enjoying wealth and sex in the present life, as they were considered the bounty of Allah.

Islam has two sets of moral codes – one for Muslims and other for non-Muslims. For example, it is immoral for a Muslim to kill another Muslim, but moral to kill a non-Muslim for the sake of expansion of Islam. The fear of God ensured strict observance of this dual moral code.

Islam is compassionate for all Muslims – it prescribes charity for the poor, orphaned and widows. Pressurizing non-Muslims to convert to Islam by imposing Jizya or terrorism, Muslims believe, is a compassionate deed because it is pressurizing non-Muslims to choose the right path of Islam. By prescribing killing of a non-Muslim who refuses to convert to Islam, Islam again claims to be compassionate because that way, it is helping the world getting rid of an evil person and hence making the world a less sinful place.

## **Indian religions –**

All Indian religions believe that a normal life of eating and mating is worthless and true bliss is in liberation of soul from the cycle of birth and death. So, they give hope for real bliss to anyone who is willing to strive for liberation.

All Indian religions preach non-violence for all beings. A moral code can therefore be easily constructed on that premise. Fear of undergoing suffering through the endless cycle of birth and death ensured compliance of the moral code.

All Indian religions glorify compassion for all living beings, donation and charity, especially to monks and nuns.

## **Now, let me evaluate these claims of 'beneficial' effects of religions on the society.**

It is true that all the religions have developed world-views from which hope for a brighter future follows. Hope does give strength to face adversities. It does give a powerful reference-point for choosing one's values of life. But this benefit is very temporary and comes at a very high cost.

As I have demonstrated, all religions are false. So, all their ideals are false. Hope based on a false value may give a temporary relief, but sooner or later, hard realities of life are going to shatter those imaginary ideals and false beliefs. Once that happens, one is going to be devastated. Sooner or later, people are going to get disillusioned from their religions. Then they would realize their life has been wasted for nothing. Sometimes, it may be just too late to start living afresh.

As to building up a moral code, we do not need any religion or God for that. Morality can be and

should be based on rational understanding of the needs of the society. For example, if humans have to survive, they must live in a society where it is the norm to speak truth, not lies. If everyone spoke lies, nobody would trust anyone and hence no economic transaction can take place and hence nobody would survive. The same holds true for other moral conduct such as non-stealing, non-killing etc.

Morality based on religions is on very shaky grounds. Religions give conflicting moral norms. Christianity, Buddhism and Jainism preach non-violence, while Judaism and Islam sanction killing/humiliating of the followers of other religions, if they cannot be converted. So, which morality is to be followed?

As to being compassionate, by making it a religious obligation, its entire beauty is destroyed. It is human nature to share anything we have in surplus. If a person has more wealth than he needs, it would be a joy for him to offer financial help to the needy. Sharing whatever we have in surplus – wealth, knowledge, energy, time – is one of the noblest joys humans are capable of experiencing. But asking people to do it because God has mandated it or because one would get into heaven takes out all the joys from the process. The very concept of doing something because it is mandated by some authority or because it is beneficial in terms of future gains is ugly and demotivating.

Besides, too much emphasis on helping the poor, especially by Christianity, has resulted in a democratic consensus in Christian countries which mandates heavy subsidization of the poor and heavy taxation rates for the successful. This welfarist/populist/socialistic policies have impeded the economic growth and ended up harming everyone including the poor. Because of colonialism and dominating economic influence of Christian countries of Europe and America, the rest of the world too is trying to follow the same harmful economic policies.

**So, in my view, religions, especially Abrahamic religions, have done no good, but tremendous harm to the whole world.**

However, I must acknowledge one great positive discovery by Indian religions – the discovery of a new dimension of consciousness. This elevated or heightened state of consciousness was called the state of liberation, nirvana, Moksha, oneness with reality, enlightenment or self-realization by them. This state was described as indescribably blissful and even the process of attaining that state though meditation was equally blissful. In India, countless people have claimed to attain that state.

They say that this state can be realized in this very life, if it is pursued vigorously. So, this is a claim which can be verified scientifically in principle. If scientific research is done on this inner process, and it is confirmed to be true, a new understanding of who we are and why we are here may emerge. That would confirm the discovery made by Indian sages. This would be one of the most profound discoveries of mankind and it would open up a new way of living if we scientifically understand the processes involved in this spiritual attainment.

It is quite possible that the spiritual state Indian sages claim to have discovered may be real, but perhaps they could not understand the processes involved. They tried to explain their experience in terms of a soul getting attached with the mind-body and again getting detached from the mind-body system. But, this explanation may not be true.

We may perhaps explain this inner elevated state of consciousness in terms of a particular state of brain stimulated by absorption of thought-energy channelized through meditation or some such biochemical processes. It may be an experience of core subjectivity, not something non-physical or supernatural. So, it needs further scientific examination and experimentation.

Nevertheless, I do accept this contribution of Indian religions as very profound.

## Chapter 10

### **Differences among religions are fundamental**

By now, it is clear that Abrahamic and Indian religions are fundamentally different from each other. Again, even among Abrahamic religions, there are big differences among Judaism, Christianity and Islam. There are also differences among Hinduism, Buddhism, Jainism and Sikhism.

Let me describe the differences among all the seven religions at a glance on 4 major fundamental issues – 1. Origin of the universe, 2. Place of humans in the universe & ideal human conduct, 3. Life after death and 4. End of the universe.

#### **Issue 1: How and why the universe came into existence**

##### **Judaism, Christianity and Islam:**

Some superhuman, omnipotent, omniscient entity created the world first and last time a few thousand years ago in order to glorify Himself and share His glory with humans.

##### **Hinduism and Sikhism:**

Creation of the world is done by the fundamental reality by directly transforming Himself into the world, while also maintaining an unmanifested form. The process of creation and destruction goes on cyclically. There is no purpose behind this cycle of creation and destruction – it is just for play.

##### **Jainism:**

The world is eternal and uncreated. Souls and matter have been existing eternally – only their combinations in various proportions appear and disappear. The process of evolution from a fully bonded soul to the fully liberated soul goes on forever.

##### **Buddhism:**

The questions on creation of the universe, its destruction, existence of God or soul etc are useless and beyond human mental comprehension.

#### **Issue 2: Place of humans in the universe and ideal human conduct**

##### **Judaism:**

Man has fallen from his original glorified state of proximity with God due to original sin committed by Adam and Eve. So, man has to make special efforts to rise from the present miserable state and regain his original blissful life of heaven.

If Jews follow the Commandments (including the Ten Commandments of Moses) revealed by God,

all of their material needs for homeland, security and prosperity would be fulfilled. They would also get a Messiah who would make Judaism the supreme religion of the world and Israel the only super power of the world. Ultimately, all devout Jews will return to heaven from where they had been driven out due to commitment of sin.

### **Christianity:**

Man has fallen from his original glorified state of proximity with God due to original sin committed by Adam and Eve. So, man has to make special efforts to rise from the present miserable state and regain his original blissful life.

If one believed in God and sacrifices of Jesus, repented for the original sin, yearned for going back to God's kingdom, lived a modest life and helped the poor, he would regain the original blissful state of existence in heaven after death.

### **Islam:**

Man has fallen from his original glorified state of proximity with God due to original sin committed by Adam and Eve. So, man has to make special efforts to rise from the present miserable state and regain his original blissful life.

If one believed in Allah, Muhammad as His last messenger, prayed 5 times, fasted for a month during day time once in a year, helped the poor, did pilgrimage to Makkah at least once and strived to convert unbelievers of the world to Islam by persuasion, if possible and by force, if necessary, one will regain the original blissful state of paradise after death. In paradise, one will also enjoy plenty of drinking water, food, wine, good clothes, virgins etc.

### **Hinduism and Sikhism:**

The ultimate reality has voluntarily 'fallen' from its original blissful state to miserable human state (as well as miserable state of animal and plant life). Though the ultimate reality is ever pure existence-consciousness-bliss and beyond space and time, it creates space and time along with matter at the beginning of each creation and somehow enters into the matter to limit itself. All this limitation is done for fun by the ultimate reality.

In this limited state of consciousness, this reality becomes unaware of its true nature and identifies itself with the body it inhabits. Then it starts running after the needs of the body-mind. With only a few out of hundreds of desires fulfilled, humans remain ever unsatisfied. This is the basic misery of human life.

One cannot come out of this misery, no matter how super comfortable life one lives, unless one realizes true nature of self or its oneness with the ultimate reality. This self-realization is achievable only by practicing moral code of conduct (non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, etc), celibacy, detachment from pleasure and pain, meditation, devotion etc.

### **Jainism:**

Souls and matter are entangled with each other eternally. So, human souls are already in the 'fallen' state, though not as 'fallen' as other creatures. With efforts, human souls can purge themselves from the enveloping matter completely.

Unless humans stop absorbing more matter and exhaust the existing matter through special efforts, they cannot become fully pure and blissful. Special efforts would include strict observance of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, celibacy, detachment from pleasure and pain and meditation as well as regular fasting, living in extreme frugality, willingly suffering pain etc.

### **Buddhism:**

Human life is full of suffering. We do not need to know why and how this suffering began. We must focus only on the cause and cessation of suffering.

All suffering is caused by ignorance, which is embedded in human nature itself. This ignorance leads to false beliefs, which in turn leads to craving for external objects, which leads to suffering because all cravings cannot be satisfied and even if a few are satisfied, they are too momentary.

So, human miserable state can be overcome only by removing ignorance through non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, celibacy, detachment and meditation.

### **Issue 3: Death and after-life**

#### **Judaism:**

Devout Jews will go to heaven and all others will go to hell after death. There is no rebirth of souls.

#### **Christianity:**

Followers of Jesus will go to heaven after death, while all others including Jews and Muslims will go to hell. In heaven, every soul will be embodied with a glorious, non-ageing body and everyone will enjoy an eternally blissful state in the comforts of heaven under the loving proximity and care of God. Those who have been sent to hell will suffer torture of the hell fire forever. There is no rebirth of souls.

#### **Islam:**

Followers of Prophet Muhammad will go to paradise, and all others including Jews and Christians will go to hell. In paradise, there is unlimited supply of drinking water, delicious food, fruits, wine and there are plenty of virgins for entertainment. In hell, souls will be tortured forever. There is no rebirth of souls.

#### **Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism and Sikhism:**

A soul does not die on death. It is reborn in the body of a human, animal or plant depending on how

good or bad was the conduct of the creature in the previous life. However, there may be a brief sojourn to heaven or hell for a soul before taking rebirth. The cycle of birth and death continues till a soul attains liberation (Moksha, nirvana or self-realization).

## **Issue 4 – How the world will end**

### **Judaism:**

The last Messiah will appear sometime in the future. He will establish the supremacy of Judaic God in the world and the whole world will accept Judaism as true religion not by force but by understanding the truth of Judaism. Then the whole world will accept the sovereignty of Israel and will bow down before Israeli leadership. All the Jews from across the world will come back to Israel. Nations opposing Israel will be completely destroyed by God. Thereafter, world peace will be established. Israel will become the richest, most populous and most powerful country, and a grand sanctuary of God will be constructed in Jerusalem. Violence and sin will disappear from the world. Even wild animals will stop preying and start eating grass.

With people living in this sort of just and divine Judaic kingdom, they will become good and virtuous by nature. Then they will deserve the kingdom of God in heaven. Besides them, all the righteous Jews who had died before this golden period would be resurrected by God and they would also be entitled to regain the Garden of Eden. The bad dead Jews would be sent to Gahanna, but if they repent, they too would be sent to the Garden of Eden. Therefore, finally almost all Jews will return to the Garden of Eden in heaven from where Adam and Eve started their journey. Thus the world will end from where it began.

### **Christianity:**

Just before the last days, Earth will have terrible famines, pestilences, earthquakes, wars and various other upheavals. Jesus will come again and rule the Earth for a long time ensuring complete peace and justice. All the evil men will be destroyed by his angels.

On the day of final judgement, all devout Christians would be placed in heaven while all others will be cast into hell forever.

Then God will create a new heaven and a new Earth. A New Jerusalem will descend from heaven. God will then start ruling the Earth and living with the people. Everybody will then be happy and will never die. Satan will be destroyed and there will be no more sin, suffering, corruption or death. So, the world will end as being happy and joyous in the company of God as in the beginning.

### **Islam:**

During the last phase of the world, a false Messiah called Masih ad-Dajjal will appear and will try to mislead people away from Islam. Then Jesus, son of Mary will appear as a Muslim. He will kill

Dajjal. He will marry, have children and rule the Earth according to Islamic principles till his death. Finally, the Day of Judgement will come when all the dead will be resurrected. Allah will then judge the deeds of all people. Devout Muslims will be sent to enjoy paradise, while all others will be sent to hell for eternity. Paradise is the place of super luxury with delicious food, water, wine, virgins, clothes, rivers etc. Hell is the place where everyone is tortured without break.

### **Hinduism and Sikhism:**

After every 4.32 billion human years, the world is destroyed. Then the world remains in dissolved state for equal period of time. Then, the world is created again. This cycle goes on.

During each period of creation, there are 1000 cycles of best-and-worst times, each of which lasts for 4.32 million years. Each such cycle starts with the best time when humans are most religious, moral, healthy, long-living and contented. Then the decline starts after some time till it reaches the worst time when humans are most irreligious, immoral, wicked, sick, short-lived and unhappy. After this worst period is over, the best period begins again.

### **Jainism:**

The association of souls with matter is without beginning. Time too is beginningless. The world is never destroyed or dissolved.

In its journey towards liberation, the soul is faced with two cycles of time – ascending and descending periods occurring continuously after each other. Ascending time is a period of progressive increase of human religiosity, morality and happiness for most souls whereas descending time is a period of progressive decrease of human religiosity, morality and happiness for most souls.

### **Buddhism:**

The question of beginning or end of the world is of no relevance for cessation of human suffering. Hence, they are irrelevant and hence should be ignored.

### **To sum up**

There are fundamental differences among religions, which cannot be reconciled.

Does it mean that they cannot co-exist peacefully? This will be examined in the next chapter.

## Chapter 11

### Is peaceful co-existence of religions possible?

Peaceful co-existence of religious communities may be defined as the state under which followers of all religions are free to believe and practice their religions, subject to the condition that none of their religious belief or practice sanctions discrimination or harm to others solely on the ground that they belong to other religions.

All religions offer a world-view and a way of life logically dependent on that world-view. Only one world-view can be true. So, logically, all religions have to denounce their rival religions as false and also prescribe the punishment which is going to be inflicted on the followers of other religions. This punishment could be hell after death (as in Judaism, Christianity and Islam) or suffering through endless cycle of birth and death (as in Hinduism, Buddhism, Jainism and Sikhism).

However, such adverse views entertained by each religion about the followers of other religions would not create any problem in their peaceful co-existence, so long as none of them prescribes discrimination or physical harm against the followers of other religions. The harm may include killing, hurting, terrorizing, seizing the property/income or otherwise obstructing in the practice of anyone else's religion.

Therefore, in order to decide whether a religion can co-exist peacefully with other religions, we have to judge it on the basis of the following two questions:

1. Does a religion prescribe killing, injuring, seizing the property/income of the followers of other religions or obstructing in the practice/propagation of other religions?
2. Do followers of that religion actually practice such prescription?

If the answer of a religion to both these questions is 'yes', that religion cannot co-exist peacefully with other religions.

If the answer to the first question is 'yes', but that of the second question is 'no'; then too, the followers of that religion may live peacefully with followers of other religions.

If the answer to both questions is 'no', the followers of that religion may very well live peacefully with those of other religions.

So, now let us start this analysis in respect of each religion one by one:

#### **Judaism –**

It prescribes death for all those who worship any God other than the Judaic God – Yahweh. Judaic

God Himself says that He is very jealous if anyone worships any other God and He wants to punish such persons immediately:

Leviticus 24.15-16

*Assault and blasphemy*

*Tell the Israelites: Anyone who curses God will be liable to punishment. And anyone who blasphemes the LORD's name must be executed. The whole community will stone that person.*

*Immigrant and citizen alike: whenever someone blasphemes the Lord's name, that person will be executed.*

Deuteronomy 13.1-5

*False prophets and false gods*

*You must follow the LORD your God alone! ...Cling to him - no other! That prophet or dream interpreter must be executed because he encouraged you to turn away from the LORD your God who brought you out of Egypt...*

Deuteronomy 13.6-11

*False prophets and false gods*

*Stone them until they are dead because they desired to lead you away from the LORD your God, the one who brought you out of Egypt, out of the house of slavery.*

This hostility against people worshipping other Gods is further confirmed by the Judaic concept of a golden future when all nations will have to follow Judaism and accept Israel as the political and economic super power and leader of the world. Any nation opposing Judaic God will be completely destroyed by Yahweh.

It is thus clear that in principle, Judaism cannot live peacefully with any other religion. It must make others submit to its own God – Yahweh. It must conquer the world with the help of the divine power and make Judaism its official religion. Peaceful co-existence with other religions is therefore totally unacceptable to Judaism.

So, the answer of Judaism to our first question is: yes.

What about the second question?

Majority of today's Jews do not believe in Judaism. This is why Israel is a secular country. This is why Jews, irrespective of their place of residence across the world, live peacefully. No Jew, anywhere in the world, explodes himself in any suicide bombing activity or kills followers of other religions in order to terrorize them to submission in order to impose Judaism on them.

So, the answer to the second question is: No.

This means Jews can very well live peacefully with the followers of other religions.

### **Christianity –**

Though Jesus was born and brought up as a Jew, he and his followers propounded Christianity, which is very different from Judaism in so far as interaction with other persons is concerned.

As mentioned in the chapter on Christianity, universal love even for enemies is a unique feature of the teachings of Jesus. For easy reference, this is what Gospels say:

Matthew 22.35-40

*One of them, an expert in the law, tested him with this question “Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?”*

*Jesus replied: “Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is : Love your neighbor as yourself. All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments.”*

Luke 6.35-36

*But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be children of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.*

With such attitude of universal love for entire mankind, Christianity obviously cannot ill-treat any person including a non-Christian. They are not supposed to fight even in self-defense, because even enemies are to be loved.

Christians have therefore no religious sanction to kill, injure or seize other people's properties. On the contrary, they are supposed to love everyone.

So, the answer of Christianity to our first question of peaceful co-existence is: No.

If there is no religious sanction for killing etc, the question of its practicing by Christians does not arise. Hence, the answer to the second question for peaceful co-existence is also: No.

Hence, Christians can very well live peacefully with followers of all other religions.

### **Islam –**

Quran and Hadith extensively describe how non-Muslims should be treated by Muslims. They prescribe two types of treatment to non-Muslims: aggressive fighting in order to convert them to Islam and defensive fighting, in case non-Muslims prevent them from following Islam.

For the purpose of examining whether Islam can co-exist peacefully with other religions, it is the aggressive fighting prescribed by Quran and Hadith which are relevant.

As I have demonstrated in my chapter on Islam, 'Allah' clearly prescribes Muslims to fight against non-Muslims in order to force them to accept Islam as their religion.

**Let me repeat here some of the verses from Quran and Hadith:**

9.29 Fight against those who (1) believe not in Allah, (2) nor in the Last Day, (3) nor forbid that which has been forbidden by Allah and His Messenger (4) and those who acknowledge not the religion of truth (i.e. Islam) among the people of the Scripture (Jews and Christians), until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.

This line of action is further confirmed by Hadith of Sahih Muslim (19.4294):

..... the Messenger of Allah would say: When you meet your enemies who are polytheists, invite them to three courses of action. If they respond to any one of these, you also accept it and withhold yourself from doing them any harm. Invite them to (accept) Islam; if they respond to you, accept it from them and desist from fighting against them. .. If they refuse to accept Islam, demand from them the Jizya. If they agree to pay, accept it from them and hold off your hands. If they refuse to pay the tax, seek Allah's help and fight them.

See some other verses of Quran:

8.12 (Remember) when your Lord inspired the angels, "Verily, I am with you, so keep firm those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes."

9.73. O Prophet! Strive hard against the disbelievers and the hypocrites, and be harsh against them, their abode is Hell, - and worst indeed is that destination.

Sahi Bukhari Volume 1, Book 2, Number 24

*Narrated Ibn 'Umar:*

Allah's Apostle said: "I have been ordered (by Allah) to fight against the people until they testify that none has the right to be worshipped but Allah and that Muhammad is Allah's Apostle, and offer the prayers perfectly and give the obligatory charity, so if they perform that, then they save their lives and property from me except for Islamic laws and then their reckoning (accounts) will be done by Allah."

It is clear from these passages that Muhammad justified killing, terrorizing, enslaving and taxing non-Muslims.

So, the answer of Islam to the first question of peaceful co-existence is: Yes.

**Thus, Islam cannot in principle co-exist peacefully with any other religion.**

Now, let us see the answer to the second question: do Muslims actually practice the violence

prescribed in Quran and Hadith?

**The answer to this question too is: Yes.**

Here are the facts:

#### A. Violent history of Islam

Muhammad himself launched no less than 86 jihadi attacks on Jews, Christians and Pagans in which thousands were massacred. At the time of death of Muhammad in 632 CE, Muslims ruled only in Arabia.

Soon thereafter, they launched Jihad on the rest of the world, and wherever they succeeded in conquering a country, they forcibly imposed Islam there and destroyed local culture and religion; as for example, on Palestine (635-636), Syria (638-640), Egypt (639-642), Iraq (635-637), Persia (637-642), Sudan and North Africa (640-711), Spain and Portugal (711-1492), Sicily in Italy (812 -1571), western Chinese border area (650 -751), Central Asia (650-1050), Armenia and Georgia (1071 to 1920), India including Pakistan and Bangladesh (638 - 1857), Eastern Europe (1444 -1699), Greece (1450 -1853), parts of Ukraine and Southern Russia (1444 – 1918) and so forth.

Population of all these countries were mainly Christian, Zoroastrian, Hindu, Buddhist or Animist, but they were forced to accept Islam under threat of death or exorbitant taxes (Jizya) and in case of refusal to do either, they were slaughtered mercilessly.

This jihadi aggression on non-Muslims has continued throughout the history of Islam. A list of these attacks from 1980 onwards may be seen at

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List\\_of\\_Islamist\\_terrorist\\_attacks](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Islamist_terrorist_attacks).

#### B. Persecution of minorities by Islamic regimes

Once a non-Muslim territory came under Islamic regimes as a result of jihadi aggression, persecution of the local population inevitably started. This is proved by the fact that the population of non-Muslims has kept on declining under these regimes. This is why in almost all Islamic nations, the population of Muslims today is above 90%. Saudi Arabia, Iran, Iraq, Afghanistan, Morocco, etc have almost 99.99% Muslim population.

How would have this happened? This must have happened due to daily harassment and persecution of non-Muslims by jihadists, while the government looked the other way. Fed up of the persecution, non-Muslims had no alternative except to convert to Islam.

This savagery is still going on in countries like Pakistan, Bangladesh, Indonesia, Malaysia, Nigeria, Somalia etc.

Islamic apologists may argue that conversion of non-Muslims to Islam happened by their consent due to greatness of Islam, not because of persecution. But if Islam is so great, why did Europe, America, China, Russia, India, Japan etc not voluntarily convert to Islam? As I have demonstrated earlier, Islam is

full of falsehood and contradictions. So, the only way it can spread is by force, not by the strength of its ‘truth’!

### C. Overwhelming support for Sharia

Sharia is the Islamic law which covers all aspects of life of Muslims. It is derived from Quran and Hadith. Sharia is presently implemented in varying degrees by Muslim-majority countries. Saudi Arabia, Iran, Iraq, Yemen, Brunei, Qatar, UAE, Pakistan, Afghanistan, Sudan and Mauritania apply Sharia entirely or predominantly.

Various research surveys prove that an overwhelming percentage of Muslims in Southeast Asia, South Asia, Middle East and North Africa believe that Sharia encodes divine law and hence must be implemented in their countries.

Now, what does Sharia say about the treatment of non-Muslims and Muslims leaving Islam?

According to Sharia, Non-Muslims are not equal to Muslims and must pay Jizya tax if they want protection from persecution. They are forbidden to recite their own religious scriptures, or openly celebrate their religious holidays or funerals. They are forbidden from building new buildings of worship or making them higher than mosques. A non-Muslim is no longer protected if he leads a Muslim away from Islam. Non-Muslims cannot curse a Muslim, say anything derogatory about Allah, the Prophet or Islam.

Sharia prescribes death to Muslims leaving Islam. In fact, apostasy is punishable by death in several Islamic countries – Saudi Arabia, UAE, Qatar, Afghanistan, Sudan, Brunei, Mauritania etc.

Sharia also prescribes savage and brutal punishment for crimes such as theft, adultery, homosexuality and atheism.

Thus Sharia fully reflects the hatred of and aggression against non-Muslims expressed in Quran and Hadith. It also supports intolerance against any other religion as is obvious by its prescription of death for a Muslim leaving Islam.

Since Sharia is supported by majority of Muslims, it is obvious that the intolerance, hatred and jihadi aggression taught by Quran and Hadith are being practiced by most Muslims of the world.

This refutes the Islamic apologist’s propaganda that only very few Muslims support aggression or terrorism. Even if we assume that 60% Muslims of the world on average want implementation of Sharia in their country, it comes to about 1 billion Muslims, out of the total 1.6 billion Muslim population of the world.

Hatred of non-Muslims sanctioned by Sharia is bound to lead to aggression against non-Muslims which in turn would get expressed through acts of terrorism. So, we can safely conclude that at least 1 billion Muslims support terrorism, directly or indirectly.

#### D. Proliferation of jihadi terrorist organizations

Hatred and aggression against other religions taught by Quran and Hadith have resulted in mushrooming of thousands of jihadi terrorist organizations across the world. We keep on hearing news about some of them – IS (Islamic State), Al Qaeda, Taliban, Boko Haram, Al Nusra, Hamas, Hezbollah, Laskar-e-Taiba, Muslim Brotherhood and so forth. Their savagery and brutality is well known.

It has been calculated that on average, 5 terrorist acts have been committed every day since 9/11/2001 by these and other jihadis.

Terrorists who actually commit violence and murder may be few, but behind every act of terrorism, there are millions of supportive Muslims who provide them fund and infrastructural, religious and moral support. So, apparently it looks as if only a tiny percentage of Muslim population is engaged in terrorism. But the fact is that the acts of terrorists are directly or indirectly supported by the entire Islamic infrastructure: its beliefs, values, institutions, states, Sharia, schools, mosques, political establishments, terror economy (production and distribution of terror weaponry), supportive Muslims and so forth.

Hence, it is now clear that the ideology of Islam drives a large number of Muslims to support terrorism, knowingly or unknowingly.

If every religion and modern Western civilization had followed the same aggressiveness which Islam prescribes, there would have been several world wars by now, probably wiping out humans from the face of Earth long ago. It is only because others have been too compassionate and tolerant, Islam has managed to survive so long. However, Muslims see the tolerance of other religions as a sign of their weakness. So, they are even more tempted to launch violent jihad against them. In a way, the teaching of love, compassion and non-violence by Christianity and Indian religions has exacerbated the jihadi motivation and made it even more ferocious.

Since answer to both the questions in respect of Islam is ‘yes’, it is proved that Islam cannot live peacefully with followers of any other religion.

#### **Hinduism –**

As I have discussed in the chapter on Hinduism, there were 3 phases of Hinduism – Vedic, Upanishadic and Classical.

The view of Hinduism about the treatment of the followers of other religions have been changing during these 3 phases.

Let us briefly examine each phase to look for the factors which could disturb peaceful co-existence of Hinduism with other religions.

#### Vedic Hinduism

Vedic Hinduism did believe and practice intolerance and discrimination against the followers of

other religions.

Just for easy reference, let me quote just 2 verses from Rig Veda where Hindus are praying for destruction of the followers of other religions and also expressing desires for possession of their wealth:

Rig Veda 1.176.4

*Slay everyone who pours no gift; who, hard to reach, does not delight you.*

*Bestow on us what wealth he has; this is what the worshipper wants.*

Rig Veda 10.84.2

*Flashing like fire, O conquering Manu; O Victor, our army's leader!*

*Slay our foes, distribute their possessions; show forth your vigor, and scatter those who hate us.*

We can see some similarities between Vedic Hinduism and Islam here. Both wished to destroy their rivals with the help of gods/God and wanted to appropriate enemy's wealth (booty, Jizya).

But there are important differences:

In Vedic Hinduism, there are only prayers to gods to kill the enemies and transfer booty; while in Islam, 'Allah' commands Muslims themselves to kill non-Muslims and take the booty.

Vedic prayer is against the local inhabitants with whom there was conflict of interests over land, forest, river, cattle etc. It is not against all non-Vedic people of the world. But Islam prescribes fighting with all non-Muslims.

### Upanishadic Hinduism

As discussed in the chapter of Hinduism, Upanishadic Hinduism was completely different, rather opposite, of Vedic Hinduism. Upanishads declare that the entire universe is the manifestation of the same reality and this can be experienced directly by just being one's core self in totality. So, the distinction between self and others gets eliminated in Upanishadic vision.

So, instead of hatred and conflict with locals over trivial material issues (as was the case during early Vedic period), Upanishads taught universal love and non-violence:

Isha Upanishad

*6. He who perceives all beings in the Self alone, and the Self in all beings, does not entertain any hatred on account of that perception.*

With such higher vision, Upanishadic Hinduism is obviously not in conflict with any fellow human being, irrespective of his beliefs and values.

In fact, during Upanishadic period of Hinduism, a number of different religions and ideologies emerged, such as Buddhism, Jainism, Charvakism (materialism). But no one attacked the other physically.

Buddha, Mahavira and Charvakas kept on criticizing Vedic/Upanishadic Hinduism, but they were not killed or even attacked physically. In fact, there was a tradition of very civilized debate among scholars of various ideologies. This was called Shastrartha (religious discussion). Such discussions ended not in violence, but voluntary conversion of the person who lost the debate to the views of his opponent.

### Classical Hinduism

Torn between two opposite directions – fulfilment of material desires through worship of gods propounded by Vedic Hinduism and seeking spiritual upliftment by meditation propounded by Upanishadic Hinduism, Aryans started searching some sort of synthesis after the Upanishadic period. This gave rise to Classical Hinduism.

Classical Hinduism had to answer the question: how to treat the local inhabitants (Shudras), who had a different religion. Vedic Hinduism had fought with Shudras. Upanishadic Hinduism had declared that one should not hate and fight with anyone. So how to deal with Shudras?

Classical Hinduism resolved this issue by developing the concept of caste system aligned with its doctrine of karma and 3 Gunas. For details, see the sub-chapter 5A [“Scientific explanation of the origin of Hinduism”].

According to the caste system, Shudras had to abandon their worship of nature and animals and become a part of Hinduism at the lowest rung. They were not allowed access to Vedic ‘knowledge’/Upanishadic vision, which was considered too sacred and too complex for them. They were also not allowed to take up the profession of other 3 Varnas, just as those 3 Varnas were not allowed to take up the profession of Shudras. Punishment for the same crime was different for different Varnas under the Hindu law.

It is thus obvious that Classical Hinduism could not interact peacefully and respectfully with the first alien religion it came across – that of Shudras.

There was a fifth class of people called Mlecchas, Chandalas or Yavans (barbarians). They were those people who had rejected Hinduism completely. So, they were considered worse than even Shudras. Shudras at least agreed in the end to be a part of Hinduism. But Mlecchas were those who had completely rejected Hinduism and in no mood to be integrated in Hinduism. Mlecchas could be living within India. All those who lived outside India were necessarily called Mlecchas by Hindus.

Mlecchas were severely condemned because they had rejected Hinduism, would kill animals to eat meat, especially the meat of cows. Though Classical Hinduism never sanctioned killing of Mlecchas, they were always looked down upon and socially boycotted.

### **Classical Hinduism – how it viewed the followers of Christianity and Islam --**

A glimpse of what Classical Hinduism thought about the religions of Mlecchas such as Christianity

and Islam is found in **Bhavishya Purana** allegedly written by Veda Vyasa.

The author of this book is certainly not Veda Vyasa, as claimed by Hindus, because this book gives account of Chandragupta Maurya, Ashoka, Sakas, Jesus, Muhammad, Nanak, Kabir, Prithviraj Chauhan, Shivaji, Aurangzeb and even Queen Victoria.

The original Bhavishya Purana might have been written during the period of Classical Hinduism, as Padma Purana mentions its name. But, later more and more historical events must have been added to it and cunningly described in future tense so that these events appear to have been predicted long ago.

The anonymous fake editor of this book, who called himself Veda Vyasa to gain acceptability and inserted later events, must have written it sometime during the mid-19<sup>th</sup> century during the British rule in India, as Queen Victoria's reign (mentioned in the book as Queen Victavati) was between 1837 and 1901 CE.

Why do I say that references to the Islamic and British period were inserted after the events in question happened?

First of all, no human has the power to predict the future, not even what is going to happen tomorrow, let alone the events going to happen after 1000 or 2000 years.

Secondly, if this entire book had been really written 3000 years ago and predicted all major events of the future, as some Hindus claim, all the bad things which happened to Hindus at the hands of the Muslims and the British would have been known to every Hindu king beforehand and they would have prepared themselves better against those tragic events.

Thirdly, several of these so-called description of future events are completely false, as I am going to prove in a minute. If the author was so wise and far-sighted, why did his description turn out to be false?

Fourthly, there are at least 4 editions of Bhavishya Purana, each with different number of verses. So, which is the authentic version?

Though the editor of Bhavishya Purana was fake, his description of Christianity and Islam, even though it is not a prediction, represents the view point of Classical Hinduism about Christianity and Islam and hence relevant for our discussion about how Hinduism perceived these religions.

### **Bhavishya Purana on Jesus:**

The description that is taken to be of Jesus is found in verses 17-32 in the 19<sup>th</sup> chapter of the Chaturyuga Khanda, 2<sup>nd</sup> Section. The relevant portion is as under:

*Ruling over the Aryans was a king called Shalivahana, the grandson of Vikramaditya, who occupied the throne of his father. He defeated the Shamas who were very difficult to subdue, the Cinas [Chinese], and the people from Tittiri and Bahikaus who could assume any form at will. He also*

defeated the people from Rome and the descendants of Khuru, who were deceitful and wicked....

Once upon a time, the subduer of the Sakas went towards Himatunga and in the middle of the Huna country (Hunadesh - the area near Manasa Sarovara or Kailash Mountain in Western Tibet), the powerful king saw an auspicious man who was living on a mountain. The man's complexion was golden and his clothes were white.

The king asked, 'Who are you, sir?'

'You should know that I am Isha Putra, the Son of God', he replied blissfully, and 'am born of a virgin. I am the expounder of the religion of the Mlecchas and I strictly adhere to the Absolute Truth.'

Hearing this, the king enquired, 'What are the religious principles according to your opinion?'

Hearing this question of Shalivahana, Isha putra said, "O king, when the destruction of the truth occurred, I, Masiha the prophet, came to the country of degraded people where there are no rules and regulations. Finding that fearful irreligious condition of the barbarians spreading from Mleccha-Desha, I have taken to prophet hood.

Please hear, Oh king, the religious principles I have established among the Mlecchas. The living entity is subject to good and bad contaminations. The mind should be purified by taking recourse of proper conduct and performance of japa [meditation on the chanting of the holy names of God]. By chanting the holy names one attains the highest purity.... Thus by following rules, speaking truthful words, by mental harmony and by meditation, Oh descendant of Manu, one should worship that immovable Lord.

Having placed the eternally pure and auspicious form of the Supreme Lord in my heart, O protector of the Earth planet, I preached these principles through the Mlecchas' own faith and thus my name became 'Isha-masiha'”.

After hearing these words and paying obeisance to that person who is worshiped by the wicked, the king humbly requested him to stay there in the dreadful land of Mlecchas.

### **Analysis of this description:**

Satvahana Empire ruled a major part of south and central India for about 450 years from 230 BCE to 200 CE. Shalivahana, who was also known as Gautamiputra Satakarni, was one of the kings of this Empire. He ruled from 78 CE to 102 CE.

First of all, the claim that Shalivahana defeated Romans is completely false, as Romans never invaded India nor is there any historical record that Shalivahana raided Romans and defeated them in their homeland.

Secondly, Jesus lived between c. 6 BCE and c. 30 CE. So, there is no way Shalivahana and Jesus would have met. Jesus had died long before Shalivahana rose to power in 78 CE and ruled till 102 CE.

Thirdly, there is no historical record including New Testament in which Jesus himself had said that he was born of a virgin mother. The belief about virgin motherhood was never a part of early Christianity. It developed much later as a philosophical need.

These facts prove beyond any doubt that this content of Bhavishya Purana is totally fabricated. But this fabrication gives us an insight into what Hindus were thinking about Christianity at that time.

According to the above description, Hindus believed that Jesus had established Hinduism (belief in one ultimate reality and purification of mind through moral conduct and meditation/chanting the name of God) among barbarian Israelites.

But meditation and chanting the name of God to purify the mind has not been mentioned anywhere in the entire Bible – Old or New Testament. This is a purely Indian concept. As pointed out in the previous chapter, Christianity is completely different from Hinduism.

This shows the pathetic condition of the level of understanding of other religions by Hindus.

Moreover, there is an underlying condemnation here of all non-Hindus, who were considered uncivilized barbarians. There is a wish on part of the editor of Bhavisya Purana here to teach Hinduism to all such ‘uncivilized’ people through an ‘enlightened’ person Jesus was believed to be.

However, Classical Hinduism is not prescribing any violence against Mlecchas -- imagined ‘uncivilized’ Israelites -- in order to bring them to the right path. It only wishes to teach them morality and meditation. So, nothing wrong in that.

### **Bhavishya Purana on Muhammad:**

Bhavishya Purana (Parva 3, Khand 3, Adhya 3) refers to someone called Mahamada (literally meaning ‘one who is extremely arrogant’) in a very derogatory way. Here is the English translation of the relevant portion:

*Suta Goswami said: After hearing the king's prayers, Lord Shiva said: "O king Bhojaraja, ... There was a mystic demon named Tripura (Tripurasura), whom I have already burnt to ashes, he has come again by the order of Bali. He has no origin but he achieved a benediction from me. His name is Mahamada (Muhammad) and his deeds are like that of a ghost. Therefore, O king, you should not go to this land of the evil ghost."*

*Hearing this the king came back to his country and Mahamada (Muhammad) came with them to the bank of the river Sindhu. He was expert in expanding illusion, so he said to the king very pleasingly: "O great king, your god has become my servant. Just see, as he eats my remnants, so I will show you."*

*The king became surprised when he saw this just before them. Then in anger, Kalidasa rebuked Mahamada (Muhammad) "O rascal, you have created an illusion to bewilder the king, I will kill*

you..."

Having a form of a ghost (Bhuta), the expert illusionist Mahamada (Muhammad) appeared at night in front of king Bhojaraja and said: "O king, your religion is of course known as the best religion among all. Still I am going to establish a terrible and demoniac religion by the order of the Lord. The symptoms of my followers will be that they first of all will cut their genitals, have no shikha (a tuft of hair on the crown of head), but having beard, be wicked, make noise loudly and eat everything. They would eat animals without performing any rituals. .. They will perform purificatory act with the musala or a pestle as you purify your things with kusha. Therefore, they will be known as musalman, the corrupters of religion. Thus the demoniac religion will be founded by me."

After having heard all this the king came back to his palace and that ghost (Muhammad) went back to his place.

### **Analysis of this description:**

First of all, let us examine the historical period which this passage refers to.

Muhammad lived from 570 CE to 632 CE.

As to King Bhoj and Kalidas referred to in this passage, there have been several persons known as King Bhoj and Kalidas in Indian history. The most famous Kalidas, who wrote Meghdoot and Abhigyan Sakuntalam was one of the 9 jewels in the court of Chandra Gupta II (also known as Vikramaditya) during the Gupta Empire who ruled from 380 to 413 CE. So, this Kalidas could not have been referred to here.

There was another Kalidas during the time of Parmar dynasty whose most famous king was Bhoja I (1010-1055 CE) who ruled central India from a place called Dhar. Most probably, this is the king who has been referred to here. Kalidas must be the name of one of his courtiers.

If this is so, they could not have met Muhammad who had died about 400 years ago.

Thus, the event narrated here is obviously false.

But even though it is a story, it gives us the perception of Hindus of the medieval period about Islam and its founder Muhammad.

This passage may be summarized as follows: the demon Tripurasur, who had once been killed by Bhagwan Shiva, is reborn as Muhammad in a barbarian country; Muhammad's deeds are as savage and illusory as those of a ghost; once Muhammad tried to show off some illusory magical practices and tried to insult Hindu gods to king Bhoj, but Kalidas rebuked him for such audacity; Muhammad admitted that Hinduism was the best religion; he nevertheless wanted to establish a demoniac religion for the people of his barbarian country; this savage religion is followed by Muslims.

This passage perfectly fits with the Hindu mind set which treated anything non-Hindu as belonging to barbarians or savages (Mlecchas). This is why in this story, Muhammad is described as someone

admitting that Hinduism was the best religion and that he was propounding a demoniac religion for barbarians.

I wonder why there would be any need to establish a demoniac religion, if people are already considered demoniac!

This passage also highlights the Hindu tendency to interpret all alien religions in terms of their own religious concepts.

Since Hindus found Muslims resorting to proselytization of Hindus under threat of violence/Jizya tax, so in this book, they interpreted Islam as a demoniac religion founded by a demon Tripurasur born as Muhammad in a savage country!

Nevertheless, despite the violent behavior of Muslim rulers in India, Classical Hinduism never sanctioned violent retaliation against them. The above passage of Bhavishya Purana indicates that Muslims were believed to be Mlecchas, i.e., uncivilized to such an extent that they deserved only a demoniac religion like Islam!

To conclude, Classical Hinduism looks down upon Shudras and Mlecchas, sanctions discrimination against Shudras, wants to have no interaction with Mlecchas and wishes to spiritualize them through moral purity and meditation. It does not however sanction killing, injuring or seizing their properties or obstructing in the practice of their religion. The only exception to this is some verses of Manu Smriti, where certain restrictions on acquiring wealth have been imposed on Shudras.

So, in principle, Classical Hinduism is hostile to Shudras and Mlecchas. Caste discrimination was a part of this hostility. However, it does not sanction any physical violence against them.

#### A peculiar stance during and after Bhakti Movement towards other religions

Right from Bhakti Movement onwards, a philosophical stance appeared in India among poet-saints – they declared that the entire universe is the manifestation of one reality – Bhagwan; that there should be no discrimination between man and man on any grounds; and that caste system was unethical.

But a peculiar doctrine was developed by Hindus during and after Bhakti Movement. In their effort to unify mankind, eliminate all discriminations and promote love among people of different religions, they went to the other extreme. They declared that the God of Hinduism and Christianity/Islam is the same; that there are no essential differences between Hinduism and Christianity/Islam and their differences are only in matters of peripheral importance.

The same trend continued with modern Hinduism too and it exists to this day.

Almost all Hindu leaders of the Modern period (except Dayanand Saraswati) have been proudly declaring that Hinduism is the only religion which respects all other religions. They say that this is because Hinduism believes that all religions aim at the same Self-realization (or God-realization or

proximity with God) through different paths. They look different simply because they were propounded under different circumstances in different places. This feature of Hinduism is proudly highlighted by today's Hindu leaders across the world to explain the 'happy and peaceful co-existence' of Hinduism with other religions in India for the last 2000 years. They claim that Hinduism is the most tolerant, most liberal, most inclusive and most cosmopolitan religion of the world; that Hinduism provides a model how all religions can co-exist peacefully.

This idea became very popular because it appeared to be a panacea in a pluralistic society like India where so many religions co-exist and at times fight with each other.

Let me give some examples of this claim by some of the most famed modern Hindu thinkers:

Swami Vivekananda [The Complete Works of Swami Vivekananda / Volume 1 / Address at 'The Parliament of Religions']:

*To the Hindu, then, the whole world of religions is only a travelling, a coming up, of different men and women, through various conditions and circumstances, to the same goal. Every religion is only evolving a God out of the material man, and the same God is the inspirer of all of them. Why, then, are there so many contradictions? They are only apparent, says the Hindu. The contradictions come from the same truth adapting itself to the varying circumstances of different natures.*

MAHATMA GANDHI (Young India: January 19, 1928):

*I came to the conclusion long ago ... that all religions were true and also that all had some error in them, and whilst I hold by my own, I should hold others as dear as Hinduism. So we can only pray, if we are Hindus, not that a Christian should become a Hindu ... But our innermost prayer should be a Hindu should be a better Hindu, a Muslim a better Muslim, a Christian a better Christian.*

BHAKTIVEDANTA SWAMI PRABHUPAD (Founder of ISKCON; Lectures on Bhagavad-Gita, 25/03/1966):

*According to the climate, according to the population, according to the country, there are different books of knowledge. Just like in India the books of knowledge are accepted as the Vedas, Vedic knowledge. In your European, American countries the accepted books of knowledge are the Old Testament and the New Testament. Similarly, the book of knowledge amongst the Muslims, (which) they have accepted, is the Qur'an. Actually, they are all books of knowledge; undoubtedly. There is no doubt about it. But what are these books of knowledge? Religious scriptures! Religious scriptures are meant for training you to (understand) the conception of life that you are a pure soul, nothing more. They restrict your bodily activities under certain conditions. That is called morality.*

Sri Sri Ravi Shankar [one of the most well-known Hindu preachers; taken from his official web site - <http://www.artofliving.org/wisdom-q-a-2-july-2012-qa-6>]

All religions point out to one thing – Love and brotherhood, existence of a supreme power and prayer to that power, confidence in humanness and confidence in the goodness of human beings. However, people have left the spiritual aspect of religion and are holding on to the outer shell, and so they are all fighting....

*What I would say is that we have to rise above our religious identity and recognize spirituality. Spirituality is experience. Once you have the experience of peace, tranquility, love and quietness deep within you, you will find that the same knowledge is said in all the religious scriptures.*

These quotes clearly prove that modern Hindu thinkers sincerely believe that all religions are true and essentially the same.

Modern Hindu thinkers even keep on quoting the following Rig Vedic verse to justify their belief in oneness of all religions:

Rig Veda 1.164.46

*They call him Indra, Mitra, Varuna, Agni, and he is heavenly nobly-winged Garutmān. To what is One, sages give many a title - they call it Agni, Yama, Mātariśvan.*

But this verse has been misinterpreted.

This verse is not about any religion at all. It could not be, because at the time of composition of Rig Veda, none of the other religions existed. This verse is a statement about the essential oneness of various Vedic gods. It states that though Vedic people worship so many gods – Indra, Mitra, Varuna, Agni etc, these gods are really the various forms of only one ultimate reality, later called Purusha by the Vedas. Just as different organs of the body do not exist independently, but expression of the same person; in the same way, one God is worshipped in different ways.

Hindu thinkers have almost always misused this verse to justify their false belief that all religions are the same.

But, as I have shown in this book and again in this chapter, all religions – especially Indian and Abrahamic religions – are completely and fundamentally different from each other and even antagonistic to each other.

To say that all the religions aim at Self-realization and they are merely different paths to reach the same goal is not only factually false, but also an ultimate insult to other religions in the sense that even their independent existence and fundamentally different nature is not acknowledged by Hinduism. The simple fact that the very concept of self-realization, liberation, Moksha or Nirvana is completely alien to Abrahamic religions cannot be grasped by Hinduism.

All Abrahamic religions believe that God created the world and God is completely separate from the world. So, the relationship between man and God is only external, not internal. Hence, according to

Abrahamic religions, there is no way the soul of a man can ever become God. But Hinduism believes that Brahman / Bhagwan Himself has become the world (while still maintaining His unmanifested form) and hence man's soul can in principle realize its oneness with the unmanifested state of Brahman / Bhagwan. This is what they call the state of Moksha or self-realization or Bhagwan Darshan (union with God).

So, the very nature of the world-view of Abrahamic religions is such that the very concept of the realization of oneness of soul with God is impossible in the sense Hinduism understands it. In fact, it would be considered blasphemous in Abrahamic religions!

But Hinduism is so obsessed with self-realization that it cannot even think of a religion which can have a totally different paradigm where there is no concept of self-realization!

So, modern Hinduism, far from being a tolerant, respectful and accommodating religion, is an extremely narrow-minded religion so much so that it does not even acknowledge the independent existence of a fundamentally different religious world-view!

This refusal to accord an independent existence of other religions is solely due to lack of scholarly study of other religions. Hindus never seriously studied the religious books of Abrahamic religions. This lack of study itself may have been due to an arrogant attitude of 'ours-is-the-first-and-the-greatest-religion'. It is this ignorance or arrogance which must have motivated modern Hindu religious leaders to explain Abrahamic religions in terms of Hindu concepts.

Dayanand Saraswati was the only modern Hindu thinker who blasted all other religions (including Judaism, Christianity and Islam) and tried to prove that they are all false. We may or may not agree with his arguments, but at least he was scholarly enough to acknowledge the fundamental differences between Hinduism and other religions. But others – including Vivekananda and Mahatma Gandhi -- were too naïve and ignorant about other religions!

Attempts to promote harmony among religions on part of Hindu leaders by playing down differences among religions however did not and could not succeed. Since differences between Hinduism and Islam/Christianity are fundamental, no amount of rhetoric about pluralism, 'celebrating diversity' and the so-called composite culture of Hindus and Muslims/Christians can erase such fundamental differences. Treating fundamental differences as peripheral differences would not work.

This explains why with just one small trigger, communal riots flare up every now and then, especially between Hindus and Muslims. Two false views, even if artificially synthesized, cannot make the foundation of a truly harmonious world.

To conclude, the view of Hinduism about the status and treatment of the followers of other religions has been changing. It started with fighting and subjugating Shudras. But, due to Upanishadic vision, this discriminatory and intolerant attitude of Hinduism gradually got diluted. Classical Hinduism expressed this ambivalence. By the time of the modern period, its view went to the other extreme of declaring that

different religions are merely the different ways of reaching God and hence all must be respected.

Nevertheless, the latest version of Hinduism (modern Hinduism) is completely against all discriminations against any person on grounds of caste or religions.

So, Hinduism, in principle, can very well co-exist with other religions peacefully.

In practice too, Hindus are peace-loving. No Hindu kills followers of other religions or tries to impose Hinduism on others. They only believe in educating others about yoga, bhakti and meditation.

So, the answer to both questions in respect of modern day Hinduism is: No. hence, Hinduism can very well exist peacefully with other religions.

### **Buddhism –**

Buddhism has no philosophy or any world-view. It simply teaches an ethical and spiritual code of conduct, which is supposed to free one from suffering. So, it cannot have any clash with any religion. Clash takes place only when opposing world-views, wanting to guide everyone according to their own points of view, confront each other. Buddhism therefore cannot clash with any world-view.

Moreover, Buddhism teaches non-violence and compassion for all living beings. Out of its eight-fold ethico-spiritual path, the 4th is Right Action. This consists of abstaining from taking life, abstaining from stealing and abstaining from unchastity.

Here, abstaining from taking life means not injuring any person, animal or insect in thought, word and deed. It also consists in positively being helpful, kind and compassionate and desiring welfare for all.

Buddhism forbids even to fight in defense. It teaches forgiveness even if one is deliberately harmed.

Thus, Buddhism can never come into conflict with any other religion in principle.

Since Buddhism does not teach violence of any kind against anyone, in practice too, Buddhists are very peaceful.

So, on both counts, Buddhism can very well co-exist peacefully with other religions.

### **Jainism –**

Though Jainism does have its own philosophy, its ethico-spiritual code of conduct, like Buddhism, is based on non-violence and kindness for all sentient beings.

Non-violence is avoiding harm to any living being by thought, word or deed. This principle follows from the Jaina world-view that every soul is on its journey to liberation. So, as far as possible, no obstruction should be made on its spiritual path by harming it.

Jainism, like Buddhism, forbids even to harm someone who is deliberately trying to injure others to serve his interests. So, there is no concept of retaliatory/defensive violence even against injustice. Jainism believes that if X is hurting Y without Y's fault in the present life, it must be due to Y's fault in the

previous life. So, the best option for Y is to bear the pain with equanimity so that his past bad deeds are nullified and he is purified enough to proceed further on the path of liberation!

With such a philosophy, it is impossible for a Jaina to practice violence against followers of other religions.

Hence, on both counts, Jainism can live peacefully with all other religions.

### **Sikhism –**

Sikhism, which arose during Bhakti Movement as its offshoot, took the same stand as modern Hinduism: religions are only different ways of reaching God. See what Sri Guru Granth Sahib says:

Page 483

*Allah is hidden in every heart; reflect upon this in your mind. The One Lord is within both Hindu and Muslim; Kabir proclaims this out loud.*

Page 897

*The Muslim God Allah and the Hindu God Parabrahma are one and the same.*

Page 1136

*The One Lord, the Lord of the World, is my God Allah. He administers justice to both Hindus and Muslims. || 1 || Pause || I do not make pilgrimages to Makkah, nor do I worship at Hindu sacred shrines. I serve the One Lord, and not any other. || 2 || I do not perform Hindu worship services, nor do I offer the Muslim prayers. I have taken the One Formless Lord into my heart; I humbly worship Him there. || 3 || I am not a Hindu, nor am I a Muslim. My body and breath of life belong to Allah — to Ram — the God of both.*

Page 1349

*O Allah, O Ram, I live by Your Name. Please show mercy to me, O Master.*

But why did Sikh Gurus (and other Bhakti Movement poet-saints) emphasize the oneness of God of Hinduism, Sikhism and Islam?

This was because none of them had read Quran seriously. They were making superficial statements a) so as not to displease Muslim rulers, b) to promote communal harmony and c) they naively believed that the same God has guided all nations and people. But Muslim rulers, hardened by jihadi fervor, did not buy their arguments and continued with their jihadi campaigns in order to convert Hindus and Sikhs into Islam. They killed 3 Gurus of Sikhism – Guru Arjan, Guru Teg Bahadur and Guru Govind Singh.

Sikhism preaches non-violence and compassion for all sentient beings. But it supports fighting in self-defense. When Guru Govind Singh saw that Sikh Gurus and their followers are being tortured and killed by Muslim rulers to pressure them to convert to Islam, he decided to make Sikhism a powerful

religion ready to fight and punish the violent jihadis.

So, Sikhism is not aggressive. It teaches to fight only in defense.

Sikhs, in practice too, are very peaceful. They never try to impose their religion on others by force.

Hence, on both counts, Sikhism can very well co-exist peacefully with any other religion.

### **Classification of religions on the basis of their aggressiveness**

On the basis of the above discussion, we may classify the latest versions of the seven religions discussed above in terms of their aggressiveness in the following categories:

**1. Not at all aggressive; not even in self-defense** – Buddhism, Jainism and Christianity

**2. Not aggressive; but ready to fight in self-defense** – Hinduism and Sikhism

**3. Aggressive in principle; but aggression not practiced by the followers** – Judaism

**4. Extremely aggressive; fanatically followed by most followers** – Islam

Hence, peaceful co-existence of the followers of religions placed in category 1, 2 and 3 is very much possible. However, followers of the religion placed in category 4 cannot live peacefully with any other religion.

Category 4 is represented only by Islam. This is the only violent religion which is still being followed very seriously by most Muslims. As we have seen, Islam cannot and does not want to co-exist peacefully with other religions. It wants to be the only religion of the world by hook or by crook.

This is exemplified by the Islamic jihadis killing, kidnapping, raping, harassing, imposing Jizya tax or threatening non-Muslims across the world on almost daily basis. Islam is therefore 100% incompatible with peaceful co-existence of religions. It is genetically hostile to the modern values of freedom of thought and expression. It is therefore also incompatible with secularism and multi-culturism.

### **Conclusion:**

Islam is the only religion which is completely incompatible with the concept of peaceful co-existence of religions. Multi-culturism is possible only among non-Islamic religions. If Islam arrives in a multi-cultural society, conflicts are bound to arise.

Just as predators and prey cannot live together peacefully; just as one cannot enjoy music and noise together; just as cancerous cells and healthy cells cannot live together in a body for long; in the same way, peace is impossible so long as Islam is a part of a multi-cultural society. Those who claim to celebrate the diversity of a multi-cultural society with Islam as a component, simply do not understand how violent Islam is.

For similar reasons, Islam is incompatible with secularism.

Secularism is a policy of a state according to which the state will not support or suppress any religion; would not make any political or economic policy on the basis of any religion and the domain of religion would be open for free competition among religious and non-religious ideologies.

Secularism thus implies that the right to believing, criticizing, practicing and propagating any religious or non-religious ideology should be granted to all persons, provided no one preaches, resorts to or threatens any kind of physical violence against anyone else.

Since Islam does not grant freedom to anyone to criticize Muhammad or Allah or any of “His commands”, nor does it allow any Muslim to leave Islam, nor does it allow any non-Muslim to practice his religion within an Islamic regime without paying Jizya tax, obviously Islam is completely incompatible with principles of secularism.

So, Islam is incompatible with multi-culturism as well as secularism. All other religions are compatible with both multi-culturism and secularism.

## Chapter 12

### How to get rid of religions

As we have seen in the previous chapters, all the 7 religions examined in this book are false and harmful. We therefore must reject all of them.

#### So, how to get rid of them?

We have two types of religions –

- a) Religions which are not violently opposed to criticism (all non-Islamic religions) and**
- b) Islam, which is violently opposed to criticism.**

Let me work out the strategy for each of them separately.

#### Strategy for religions of category a)

All the religions discussed in this book except Islam come under this category. They are different from Islam in the sense that they, in principle, do not support the use of violence against critics (as in case of Christianity, Buddhism, Jainism and Sikhism) or even if they do somewhat support in principle, at least their present-day followers do not practice it on a significant scale (as in case of caste system of Hinduism and intolerance of Biblical God against other gods in Judaism). I have proved this point in the previous chapter (Is peaceful co-existence of religions possible?).

The strategy for this category of religions is therefore very simple: **Educate masses about the falsehood of their religions.**

The best way to get rid of falsehood and its harmful consequences is always to expose the falsehood. The followers of these religions would keep on following their religion until they are convinced that their religion is false. People by nature want to know truth. Search for truth is embedded in our very process of thinking. Followers of religions are trapped in their false beliefs because they do not know the truth. Once a belief is demonstrated to be false, people will stop believing in it.

Today, all educated people believe that Earth moves around Sun or all matter consists of some basic sub-atomic particles. Till 400 years ago, entire mankind was believing that Sun moves around Earth or water, air, fire etc are the fundamental elements of the universe. This is the power of truth.

So, what is needed is a vigorous educational campaign to expose the falsehood of these religions.

To come to specifics, we need to take the following measures:

- 1. Ensuring complete freedom of expression on all discussion platforms**

## **2. Massive educational campaigns**

### **3. Compulsory teaching of comparative religions in high schools**

Let me discuss each measure one by one in some details:

#### **1. Ensuring complete freedom of expression on all discussion platforms**

Unless the legal system of a country permits freedom of expression on all discussion platforms, such as internet media, mass media, print media or physical spaces, no educational campaign against any religion is possible. In regimes of North America, Europe, Australia, New Zealand, India, Japan etc, this freedom is already available in varying degrees. This needs to be further strengthened by law.

Freedom of expression is possible only under a secular and democratic regime.

But even in the secular and democratic regimes, private media sometimes compromises on freedom of expression due to various reasons – fear of religious backlash, having to toe government line, prejudice and having to follow major share-holders' line of thinking.

While operators of every discussion platform should be free to promote their own religious ideology, Government or those private operators should have no right to censor any opposing view, whether pro or anti any religion. Thus ban on any book, article, speech, movie, documentary, video etc or deletion of any comment on a newspaper column should be made illegal by all secular governments unless it promotes violence or is abusive or against the integrity or security of the country.

Unless there is free – absolutely free – competition among ideas, the best idea would never emerge. Hence, all regimes of secular and democratic countries must ensure that no media channel is censored either by government or by owners or operators of the media.

#### **2. Mass educational campaigns**

A high-voltage campaign needs to be launched against these religions to expose their falsehood and harmful effects.

This can be done through Internet media, mass media, print media and lectures/debates in educational and other institutions to be uploaded onto the Internet for wider viewership.

Internet campaign would consist of e-books, e-articles, social media posts, debates on discussion forums, educational videos and so on.

Mass media campaigns would include opening new TV channels dedicated to exposing the falsehood of religions, TV debates on existing channels, making infotainment serials with falsehood of religions as their central narrative, films, documentaries, and so on.

Print media would include physical books on falsehood of religions, articles in local newspapers/magazines, pamphlets and so on.

The fourth way to campaign is to organize lectures/debates on the falsehood of religions in educational institutions, clubs, hotels, corporate gatherings and so on. The video of these lectures/debates can be uploaded to the Internet for wider viewership.

### **3. Compulsory teaching of comparative religions in high schools**

We are teaching students lots of things, but fundamental world-views (religions) which have shaped the course of history and still playing a dominant role in our life are not taught to them in a comparative, scientific and critical way, just like a science subject. If the falsehood and harmfulness of religions is taught compulsorily in all schools, parents and religious leaders would not be able to poison the minds of innocent children by indoctrinating them into their own religions. This simple step would wipe out all religious delusions from the minds of future generations.

Would these strategies work?

Of course. They have already been succeeding.

This is proved by the fact that the number of people saying they do not believe in any religion is increasing faster than the number of followers of any religion. Break-up of world population in terms of religion/non-religion is as follows:

Christianity – 31%; Islam – 23%; **non-religious – 20%**; Hinduism – 15%; Buddhism – 7%; Animists – 6%; Judaism + Jainism + Sikhism and some other small organized religions – 1%.

The number of people not believing in any religion thus constitutes the third largest group and is increasing faster than those of any other religious group.

Today, there are at least 10 countries in the world where non-religious population is more than 50% and 33 countries where such population is more than 20%. These countries include Japan, Scandinavian countries, China, France, Russia, New Zealand, UK, Germany, Australia, USA, Switzerland etc.

Increase in the number of non-religious people in the world is increasing because of spread of knowledge of science among people. As scientific knowledge and temper increases, the hold of religions on the minds of people would decrease.

So, all that is needed is to continue exposing the falsehood of these religions and spreading scientific knowledge. The religions do not have the strength to withstand this massive onslaught of science and reasoning. They are already cracking and falling and soon they will collapse completely.

### **Strategy for religions coming under category b)**

Islam is the only religion which comes under this category. It is violently opposed to criticism and openly prescribes death to critics. Recall the following verses of Quran quoted in sub chapter 4A [Scientific explanation of the origin of Islam]:

*8.12 (Remember) when your Lord inspired the angels, "Verily, I am with you, so keep firm those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who have disbelieved, so strike them over the necks, and smite over all their fingers and toes."*

*9.73. O Prophet! Strive hard against the disbelievers and the hypocrites, and be harsh against them, their abode is Hell, - and worst indeed is that destination.*

So, Islam prescribes fighting even against neutral disbelievers. If the disbeliever is pro-actively criticizing Islam, then surely Islam would sanction that he be killed.

Islam is the only religion which sanctions death for anyone criticizing Allah, Muhammad or Islam. Islam is the only religion which punishes apostates to death. Islam is the only religion which treats all followers of other religions as its natural enemy.

So, obviously, we cannot hope to eliminate Islam just by educational campaigns, as the campaigners themselves are likely to be attacked by very devout Muslims.

So, we will have to develop a different strategy in respect of Islam.

This task can be divided into two parts:

## **1. Eliminating Islam from secular & democratic countries**

## **2. Eliminating Islam from Islamic countries**

Let me discuss each of them one by one.

### **1. Eliminating Islam from secular & democratic countries**

First of all, since a secular regime does not support or suppress any religion and grants equal freedom to each religion, the educational campaign launched against other religions can be launched against Islam too. This could change the views of many educated and liberal Muslims and they may realize the falsehood of Islam and therefore quit Islam voluntarily.

However, pre-emptive measures will have to be taken to neutralize violent Muslims.

These measures may include:

Intrusive background check before entry of new Muslims into a secular country

100% profiling of all adult male Muslims (as nobody knows who among them is the potential terrorist)

Identification of potential jihadi terrorists on the basis of profiling and suspicious behavior

Extensive gathering of intelligence to foil any terrorist plan

Intrusive monitoring of Islamic educational institutions and mosques to

**detect/prevent use of intolerant Quranic verses to instigate violence**

Installation of security cameras in all buildings, city roads and public places with constant monitoring of data by a national security grid system

Strictest possible anti-terrorist law and its vigorous implementation

Separate terrorist's courts and quick death penalties in proven cases

Uniform civil law for all Muslims as applicable to other citizens. No Muslim to be allowed to have more than one wife at a time. Women not to be compelled to wear veils. No minor Muslim girl to be married.

These pre-emptive steps may include any other measure necessary to neutralize all possible terrorist acts inspired by violent verses of Quran and Hadith.

## **2. Eliminating Islam from Islamic countries**

Islamic countries are those countries where Muslims are in majority and the regime is governed by Islamic law (Sharia). Naturally, they are following Quran while dealing with the issues of freedom of thought and expression – which is to censor and punish anyone criticizing Islam.

OIC (Organization of Islamic Co-operation), which is an alliance of all the 57 Muslim-majority countries, adopted a human rights declaration in Cairo in 1990. This declaration clearly makes freedom of thought and expression subject to the approval of Sharia. Article 22 of this declaration says:

(a) Everyone shall have the right to express his opinion freely in such manner as would not be contrary to the principles of the Shari'ah.

(b) Everyone shall have the right to advocate what is right, and propagate what is good, and warn against what is wrong and evil according to the norms of Islamic Shari'ah.

(c) Information is a vital necessity to society. It may not be exploited or misused in such a way as may violate sanctities and the dignity of Prophets, undermine moral and ethical values or disintegrate, corrupt or harm society or weaken its faith.

I will give just 2 examples of the constitutions of Islamic regimes –those of Pakistan and Iran -- to further illustrate Islamic sanction for the curtailment of freedom of thought and expression:

### **Constitution of Pakistan, Section 19 says:**

*Every citizen shall have the right to freedom of speech and expression, and there shall be freedom of the press, subject to any reasonable restrictions imposed by law in the interest of the glory of Islam ....*

### **Constitution of Iran, Section 24 says:**

*Publications and the press have freedom of expression except when it is detrimental to the*

## fundamental principles of Islam .....

So, Islamic governments would simply not allow our proposed campaigns within their jurisdiction. They would ban anything denouncing Islam. Books, articles, social media posts, videos, TV channels, personal lectures – anything criticizing Islam would be banned. It has in fact already been banned.

Thus, it is impossible for Muslims living in Islamic states to get exposed to the truth about Islam found out by the outside world.

### **How can then we help Muslims to get rid of Islam in Islamic regimes?**

Since Islamic countries, guided by Quran, are forcibly stopping freedom of thought and expression, the outside world has 3 options:

1. Persuade them to allow this freedom

2. Impose sanctions till they agree to allow this freedom

3. Forcibly secularize & democratize them so that freedom of thought and expression becomes available for all

Given the fanatical and conservative character of Islam, the first option is not going to work.

Sanctions too cannot work if it is imposed on all OIC countries at the same time. OIC covers 57 countries and a vast territory. So, enforcing sanctions at such a vast scale would be next to impossible. Besides, sanctions would hurt the outside world too, because they are also dependent on OIC countries for oil and other goods.

So, the only option left is to remove the Islamic regimes by force and replace them with secular and democratic governments.

But who can take this initiative and has the capability to fight and defeat Islamic regimes?

### **It is the West**

It is the West – not the Christian West, but the modern, humanist, scientific-minded, post-enlightenment, technologically powerful West.

This West is passionate about preserving all the modern values – individual freedom, freedom of thought & expression, democracy, secularism and free market economy. It is this West which values human rights and is ready to fight for it. It is this West which has no religious hangover in fighting a savage enemy to its logical end.

It is this West which has the necessary philosophical framework which can confront and defeat Islam. It is this West which has the advantage of science and technology to defeat any other force of the world.

### **So, what should this West do?**

## 1<sup>st</sup> step: Formation of an alliance

All the Western secular and democratic countries, passionate about defending human rights, must come together and form an alliance. This alliance may be called Human Rights Alliance (HRA).

HRA would be a political-military alliance with just one goal: **replace all Islamic regimes by secular and democratic regimes.**

I have already discussed the meaning of secularism at the end of the previous chapter in the context of its compatibility with Islam.

Secularism would mean that the right to believing, criticizing, practicing and propagating any religious or non-religious ideology would be granted to all persons, provided no one preaches, resorts to or threatens any kind of physical violence against anyone else.

Secularism implies that state will not support or suppress any religion. The domain or market of religion would be opened for free competition among religious and non-religious ideologies.

Secularism would also imply that no religion would be allowed to indoctrinate children in schools, because children as consumers have no capability to decide rationally which ideology is false or harmful for them.

Democracy would mean that any person or group of persons would have equal right to participate, propagate and on receiving mandate from the people, implement his ideas for better management of the society on common issues within the framework of human rights.

Secularism would give freedom to choose an ideology; democracy would give freedom to create conditions in the society to live according to the chosen ideology. Both are required to realize one's potential.

## 2<sup>nd</sup> step: Expansion of HRA and training

HRA should invite all other secular and democratic countries to join. Russia, Eastern European countries, Japan, India, Israel, South Korea, Singapore, Thailand, South Africa etc would like to join it, as they too have secular and democratic regimes.

HRA would then recruit and train thousands of personnel to enable them to put in place secular and democratic institutions in any new country, as and when required. They may be called HRA Executives (HRAE). Standardized democratic and secular constitutions, rules and procedures could be developed for the use of HRAE. Their training would also include management of public relations, finance, human resources and so forth.

At the end of the training, HRAE should be capable of providing efficient governance of a new country during the transition period – from taking over to conducting elections to putting in place rule of

law to getting it implemented.

### 3<sup>rd</sup> step: Topple Islamic regimes

HRA should select one Islamic regime first, starting with the most conservative, say, Saudi Arabia. It should first request the king heading the regime to step down and let secularism and democracy be installed in his country by peaceful means.

Once the king realizes that the most powerful nations of the world are determined to secularize and democratize all Islamic regimes, he may step down. If that happens, the task of HRA becomes very easy. It will hand over the country to HRAE who will then proceed to put in place secular and democratic institutions.

If the king refuses, the military machine of HRA would be activated and the Islamic country would be invaded with full force – from sky, seas and land. Their entire military structure would be bombed out of existence. Once that is accomplished, HRA army would take over the country. Any armed opposition by jihadists would be put down heavily.

Once the country stabilizes, HRAE can take over and start the process of secularization and democratization. That would mean first dismantling of all Islamic institutions – their constitution, judiciary, educational systems, Islamic elements in political, educational and policing structure etc. Thereafter, the process of setting up of secular and democratic institutions can be taken up.

Then, the next most conservative Islamic regime, say Pakistan or Iran may be selected. The same process as with Saudi Arabia would be repeated here too.

Once 2-3 most conservative Islamic states are overwhelmed by force, secularized and democratized, the rest of the Islamic world would be forced to revise their opinion about Islam. Their faith in Allah would be shaken and they would be forced to doubt the truthfulness of Muhammad and Allah. Most probably, they themselves would abandon Islam and come forward to secularize and democratize themselves. All moderate and enlightened Muslims would also be overjoyed and they would start pressurizing their regimes for secularization and democratization of their countries.

If this voluntary invitation for change does not happen, the process of replacing Islamic regimes by force would continue one by one as stated above till the last Islamic regime falls.

### 4<sup>th</sup> step: What happens to Islam?

Islam is incompatible with secularism and democracy.

Hence, all Islamic institutions – their constitutions, Sharia-based legal structures, jihad-indoctrinating Islamic schools, hatred-spewing mosques, Islamic clergy etc will be completely dismantled. They will be replaced by secular and democratic institutions.

Any violent protest by jihadis would be firmly put down and all the captured Islamic fighters would

be put to death through the legal process.

However, peaceful Muslim men, women and children would not be harmed in any way. Our fight is against Islam, not Muslims.

Muslims would be permitted to follow only the peaceful aspects of Islam – belief in Allah, prayer, fasting, charity, non-consumption of alcohol, doing hajj etc. They would not be allowed to preach hatred against non-Muslims or follow the violent aspects of Islam, such as violent jihad, punishment to apostates, censoring/killing of critics of Islam, giving savage punishments such as cutting off hands, stoning or lashing, marrying more than one wife at a time, forcing women to wear veil, beating of wives, marrying off minor girls, subjugation of minorities etc.

With secular structure well in place, the massive educational campaign mentioned in the beginning of this chapter can now be unleashed with full force against Islam too so that it could be erased from the minds and hearts of the remaining conservative Muslims. With this high voltage campaign, for the first time, lay Muslims would be exposed to the falsehood and poisonous nature of Islam. Now, they would be free to apply their mind to decide for themselves the truth or falsehood of Islam. Till now, they had no option to leave Islam, as they would be treated as an apostate and put to death by Islamic law – Sharia. Once they realize the falsehood of Islam, they themselves will abandon it.

#### 5<sup>th</sup> step: Handing over the regime to secularized and democratized Muslims

Once HRAE has put in place secular and democratic institutions, and the country has become stable and peaceful, and a substantial number of Muslims have abandoned Islam voluntarily, action would be taken to prepare and train local Muslims to take over their government in a democratic way.

With all democratic institutions and procedures already in place, HRAE would then conduct free and fair elections and elected Muslims would be handed over political power peacefully.

However, an outpost of HRA would permanently be there in each such country to oversee the governance process and to nip in bud any attempt to reinstall Islamic regimes.

In this way, Islam – the most intolerant religion of the world – can be eliminated with minimum violence. This would ensure end of all terrorism, persecution of all non-Muslims in Muslim-majority states, and subjugation of Muslim women.

The silent majority of Muslims, who really want peace, would thank HRA for freeing them from the tyranny of Islam in their own country. Muslim women too would be grateful to HRA for freeing them from the compulsion of having to wear veil and putting up with the physical abuse and polygamy of their husbands.

Peace and prosperity will once again return to these ex-Islamic states. Freedom of thought and expression will once again reign supreme there. The rest of the world would be free from the monster of

terrorism. The entire world would then start enjoying peace, freedom, prosperity and a scientific world-view.

## Chapter 13

### An alternative to religions

10,000 years ago, survival of man depended on his understanding of the nearest environment. Need for water, food, shelter, security and mate drove him to find better ways to fulfil those needs. His only advantage over wild animals, he was surrounded with, was his power of thinking and imagination. An understanding about his surroundings and the world was a survival tool for him, not merely an intellectual curiosity. In other words, he tried to find guiding principles which he hoped would help him navigate his daily life in such a way that he fulfilled his needs of survival and growth.

Man's first experience of creation came from parents. His experience of getting help and love also came from parents. So, when man started thinking about his surroundings and the world, he, on the analogy of parenthood, naturally started thinking that there should be a father or mother-like super entity who must have created the world (like his parents created him) and who must be loving and caring the world (as his parents do for him). This was the way the concept of God was born in human mind.

The hypothesis of God/gods became the first hypothesis of mankind to explain the origin, operation and purpose of the world. Man completely depended on this hypothesis for his survival and growth for thousands of years. He thought if he could keep God pleased by worshipping and offering Him food, God would favor him with cattle, prey, arable land, shelter, wife, children, security from wild animals and success in battles against enemies. This hypothesis gave rise to all polytheistic and later monotheistic religions of West Asia.

Indian religions also started on similar note in the form of Vedic Hinduism. But sudden burst of some mystical experiences in some individuals of Indo-Aryan race completely changed the course of intellectual and spiritual life in India. This is why Indian religions are so different from normal polytheistic/monotheistic religions of the rest of the world.

But, whatever the nature of religions, they were the first serious attempt of humans to develop a world-view. This is why their impression on human mind is so deep. This is why it is generally difficult for a person to get rid of his/her religion.

Now, science has proved that all religious world-views are false, as I have explained in previous chapters. There is no way any of the present religions is going to survive in future with their present content.

So, a philosophical vacuum has arisen in the mind-space of humanity.

Any modern world-view, to be of any use to mankind, has to be based on well-established scientific data, facts and theories. It should also be able to explain origin of consciousness, desires,

emotions and other para psychological experiences, if any, in addition to all the events of the external universe.

But sciences are developing so fast that it is difficult for a single person to keep track of all of them and try to develop a comprehensive world-view based on the latest scientific theories. The task becomes even more difficult if one is to integrate man's inner experiences too, such as consciousness, desires, emotions, meditational experiences, para-psychological experiences, experience of 'enlightenment' and the like.

This is why at present there are few philosophers or scientists in the world who have even attempted to develop such a comprehensive world-view. Most philosophers/scientists simply specialize in certain areas and have no clues what is going on in other fields of knowledge. Today everyone is overspecialized and nobody wants to or is capable of developing a general theory of the universe.

Today, in academia, even philosophy is taught as 'philosophy of science', or 'philosophy of religion' or 'philosophy of mind' and so on. This is an absurd level of specialization. Philosophy cannot be 'of something', because philosophy must give us the total big picture of the universe including the origin and evolution of human consciousness.

Ideally, a philosopher must know all the scientific facts and theories including the 'science of mind/consciousness'. He also must know the entire history of the universe including the history of mankind. Then, he must attempt to discover an underlying pattern in all the events of the universe and come out with a general theory which could explain all events and processes of the world in terms of the most fundamental content of the universe. This would be a super science and the ultimate guiding principle for mankind. Let me call it 'super theory'.

The so-called Unified Theory attempted by Einstein during his last days, if successful, would have been just one small segment of this super theory.

What would be the content of this super theory?

This super theory would be able to explain all scientific facts, all scientific theories and all natural rules governing the origin, growth, operation and death of matter, life and consciousness. It would also explain our desires and happiness and how to achieve it. From that knowledge, a rational ethics can be logically derived. All real spiritual experiences including enlightenment (if real) must also be explainable by this super theory. It must also attempt to fill up gaps of knowledge consistent with its basics. It should also be able to make verifiable predictions in all areas of human knowledge.

This is a difficult task. But, nevertheless, this attempt has to be made. I hope someone will come up with such a theory soon.

## Chapter - 14

### Conclusion

Religions were the first serious collective effort of mankind to understand the world during the pre-science period of human history. The attempt to understand the world was driven by the needs of survival and well-being.

The content of religions varied due to different historical circumstances and different personal qualities of the propounders of the religions.

At the time of the origin and development of religions, very limited scientific data was available, life was hard and ignorance about the world was pervasive. So, it was natural for the propounders of religions to hypothesize supernatural elements – God, soul, heaven, hell, liberation etc -- to explain the events happening around them and within themselves.

I have explained the origin and development of all the religions in terms of this framework.

For the last about 2000 years, religions have been the single most dominant force in guiding mankind by interpreting the world in a particular way and prescribing a code of conduct in the light of that interpretation. They tried to act like a compass in the sea of the world. They made a sense of the world which apparently looked like a series of unconnected events.

However, as our understanding of the universe got better through science, we started discovering falsehood and contradictions in religions. While examining the beliefs of religions in the light of latest scientific findings, I found that all beliefs of all religions are false.

But a false world-view is not only false, but also harmful. Falsehood leads to failure; truth leads to success. This is why all religions have proved to be extremely harmful. Most of the misery of the present world – terrorism, poverty, overpopulation, sexual repression & resultant crimes, subjugation of women, cruelty against animals, obstruction in scientific research in genetics – all that and many other problems can be traced back to some religion or the other.

I have demonstrated that all religions are fundamentally different from each other. Their similarities are very superficial.

However, some religions are less harmful, while some are extremely harmful. Out of all religions, Islam is the most harmful. It is pure poison. It is unimaginably violent and intolerant. It cannot co-exist peacefully with any religion or with any other ideology.

Multi-culturism or secularism is impossible with Islam, but very much possible without Islam. Ever since Islam has come into existence, it has declared war on the rest of the world in order to force the

whole world to submit to “Allah’s rule” so that mankind could be “saved from going to hell”. So, the intention of Islam as well as all other religions is noble; but their basic beliefs themselves are false.

Since all religions are pre-science primitive world-views, they must now go. Now, science has started giving us a better and truer world-view. So, we do not need any religion now. This is why no new religion has emerged during the last 300 years and no new religion will ever emerge in future.

In fact, the number of people not believing in any religion is increasing faster than the number of followers of any religion.

But how to get rid of religions?

Truth has the power to destroy falsehood. We are natural seekers of truth. This is why scientific facts and theories are accepted by all of us.

So, if we continue exposing the falsehood of religions through all modern channels of communications, gradually religions will wither away.

However, Islam is the only religion which is so intolerant that it would not allow any criticism and would try to forcibly silence all critics. All Islamic regimes are unanimous in suppressing freedom of thought and expression, if it is criticism of Islam. So, they are trying to prevent Muslims from coming into contact with the critique of Islam by the West.

Hence, it would be necessary for the civilized, democratic and secular nations of the world to form an alliance, topple all Islamic regimes by force, and secularize and democratize them. This is a civilizational war which is inevitable and must be fought as soon as possible. We are too compassionate to allow Muslims to continue to be the victim of Islam! Our fight is against Islam, not Muslims.

Sooner or later, Islam too will disappear along with all other religions. The progress of humanity cannot be stopped by these primitive forces.

However, the vacuum created by exit of religions needs to be filled up by a world-view based on science and humanism.

## **Feedback**

I would be happy to get your feedback about this book. Everything is welcome: appreciation, suggestions, criticism, sarcasm, abuses or even threats.

You may send an e-mail to me on the following address: [eba700169@gmail.com](mailto:eba700169@gmail.com).